

[08/05, 10:21] Ron: Diary ya kedi:the chozen one

Chapter 1

Insert....01

.

.

I woke up early in the morning around 6 i took my bath when i was done i wore a skirt and and t-shirts it was around 7h30 i took my bag and left i know its way too early but i wanted to leave before they woke up...when i arrived at the taxi rank it was around 8 and i went to sit under a tree on top of a rock waiting for thato..my phone rang it was a private number

Me:hello

Caller: hey wena you useless daughter of a whore where the hell are you huh who do u think is gonna do all this house chores when you busy whoring around with lord knows who

Me: you have daughters mos (i said it with a bit of attitude)

Stepma:what did u just say to me? (She was shouting and i kept quite)

Stepma:you ungrateful bastard is that how you talk to me now huh?

aag i dropped the call im tired of letting people abuse me nx..her and those useless kids of hers can go to hell nx...just as i was lost in my thoughts i heard someone clear their throat i looked up immediately and here stood a handsome tall man

Guy: are you ok?

Me :umm ye..yes im waiting for my friend

Guy:ok (he cleared his throat again) where are you and you friend going if you dont mind me asking

***aag whats wrong with this guy and how is it any of his business where me and thato are

going anyway let me answer him so he can leave***

Me: mabopane (thats all i say to him)

Guy: mmmmh ok just so u know the taxi to mabopane is about to get full just call your friend and tell him or her to hurry

***and then he walked away.ummm ok....as i was about to reach for my fone i heard her...Jesus she was screaming

Thato:(shouting) mtase oh my God you came...you made it..finally you leaving this hell hole

i stood up and ran to her with tears running down my cheeks and we hugged....Jeez i love this crazy bitch

Thato: chomi its ok no more crying u finally gonna be free from now on

Me:(sobbing) i.. i.. i cant believe it

Thato: believe it mtase lets go before u change

your mind (laughing)

Me: (wiping my tears)im leaving come rain,come sunshine im leaving this place (also laughing)

*** we got into the taxi and that handsome guy was driving and he was busy looking at me through the rearview mirror and smiling geez...soshanguve here i come damn im nervous and excited at the same time...i hope i wont regret my decision of running away from home***....

[08/05, 10:23] Ron: Diary ya kedi:the chozen one

Chapter 1

Inset....02

.

.

.

*** we finally arrived at mabopane station and i thanked the driver i dont even know why but i did maybe is because im nervous and excited at the same time or maybe is because hes handsome nje..we got into another taxi to shoshanguve***

Me: mtase you've been on that phone since we left centerview (i pouted my lips)

Thato: what? Are you jealous that im not giving you attention(she said that laughing)

Me: mxm nevermind (she laughed so hard)

Thato: im trying to find you a job mtase and guess what?

Me: what?

Thato:i got you one and you starting tomorrow morning..its nothing fancy but it will do for now(she said that looking all excited)

Me:what?ohh my God what have i done to deserve a sister like you (tears rolled down my

cheeks i was sobbing with my head on her shoulder)

Thato: its ok mtase remember we promised to always look after each other and to always have each other's backs no matter what

Me:(wiping my tears)yeah

Thato: you always looked after me in middle school and high school (i gave her the WTF look and she laughed)

Thato: ok ok ok we looked after each other but you were always there for me and you always took a fall me always and always had my back

Me: you always took many falls for me too and even today u still have my back

Thato: thats because we sisters we may not be blood related but loyalty,love and always i mean always having each others backs makes us related no matter what..

Me: i love you mtase

Thato: i love you too mtase

people be looking at us like WTF..mxm they can go jump at the nearest bridge cos i love this bitch shem im blessed to have her in my life

***here is the thing Thato's father used to rape her when we were in middle school until high school she fell pregnant when we were in grade 10 and she told her father and he said she must get rid of it he gave her money and she got rid of it after she healed he continued with his evil deed again thats when she said suggested we go to the clinic to take prevention pills or injection lucky for me step bro used protection when he forced himself on me until one day he came home and asked me what i was doing at a clinic he was ready to beat the crap out of me until i told him the truth and since then he stopped using protection...now back to Thato... one day she told me she cant take it anymore and she told me shes gonna do something about it by that i thought she was gonna tell her

mom or go to the police but no she poisoned him and he died in hospital (im saying she poisoned him cause i asked her id shes the one who did it and she said to me "ask no questions and i shall tell no lies")i left it at that cause i got my answer with that statement i wasn't even shocked or too surprised cause he deserved it(God forgive me but he deserved it) i wished i could do the same to step bro but hey im not hardcore like her and i dont have the liver to do it...anyway with his death many family secrets came out apparently thato's dad was a serial rapist to a point that he also raped his sister and that thato was a rape child and elders forced him to marry thato's mother ai its a complicated,long and painful story....the news hit thato really hard but as hee bestie i was there for here and plus shes strong and hardcore so she boined back stronger...yho shame it was chaos many family membees and strangers to the family were suspects but no

one never suspected thato cause she never told anyone about what he did to here and i kept my mouth shut...he was buried and the case went cold even today they haven't found his killer***

We arrived at her place it was an ordinary one room the was a double bed,a table with a two plate stove,fridge ,a small couch and a tv stand with a tv, dvd and small speakers it was nice and cosy...we had something to eat and went to bed i was dead tired and plus i had an early morning tomorrow. ..i didn't even ask thato what king of job or work I'll be doing tomorrow. ..ai il ask her in the morning i just closed my eyes whispered my night prayer and went to lala land

Step bro (sam's)....POV....

***i couldnt wait to arrive home (it was around 4 in the afternoon)ive been horny all day at work

craving kedi damn...ok look i know its wrong of me to even look at her that way but i cant help it she just drives me insane she has the tightest pussy ever...yes i know its an abomination but shes my uncles daughter me and her we dont share parents and since mom didnt say anything about me helping myself with her that means its ok shes an elder she knows better or is it because she hates her aag whatever im crazy over that tight pussy fuck everything else and plus i think im inlove with her....i know i have a funny way of showing it but i blame my mother and her stupid influence, me and my younger sisters we grew up hating her and her mother cause mom hated them...the worse part is i dont even know why i hate her..tonight i must make love to her the whole night no fucking tonight just making love.....I got home and opened the kitchen door and boom everything was a mess the house was dirty as hell nx (there were even dirty dishes in the sink

and table damn where the fuck is kedi...i hope mom didn't beat her to death eish...i went to the leaving room and mom and lil sisters were drinking coldrink

Me:and what happened to the house where's kedi?

Mom: mxm that whore ran away Mamokone said she saw her with a bag walking straight to the taxi rank nx

Lil sis(Amo):well i say good riddance to bad rubbish nx

Lil sis(katli):amen to that Amo

Me:voetsek shut the hell up (shouting)...ma wha...what do u mean she ran away and none of you stopped her (shouting)

Mom: first of all u will not talk to me or your sisters like that because of that whore

Me: dont call her that

Mom: shut up..(she roared)stop this nonsense

and just so im clear its high time you bring me a daughter in law i want grandchildren im not getting any younger and you better find a house helper this house is dirty my princesses cant be cleaning all this dirt

***i clicked my tongue and walked out i was mad as hell...damn no no no she cant run away no no no fuck no i went straight to her room and looked inside the box that she put her clothes in and it was empty. ..fuck i should have given her money after fucking her,i shouldn't have been rough with her during sex maybe she wouldn't have ran away damn how the hell im i gonna survive or cope without her tight pussy...no no no this cant be happening to me shit**

[08/05, 10:25] Ron: Chapter 1

Insert...03

.

.

.

I woke up it was around 6 in the morning and thato wasn't next to me as i was getting out of bed she walked in

Thato:thank God u awake i dont want you being late on your first day...do u knw how many strings i had to pull to get you that job..now up up and take a bath we have to go

Me:morning to you too mtase did you sleep well cause i did (yawning)

Thato:(laughing) mxm i slept well now get up

i got up took my bath after that i wore my jean and a simple shirt and tied my afro neatly and put on a lil bit of Vaseline on my lips and i was done...thato walked in

Thato:took you long enough

Me: mxm mtase

Thato:mmmm

Me:what kind of job did you find for me i forgot to ask u yesterday

Thato:ull be working at a pub/chisanyama ..my fuck buddy owns it

Me:a what and your what? (Yoh i was shocked and my facial expression said it all)

Thato:relax will u its a pub at night and chisanyama by day....o tlo ba shap sa wara (ull be fine dont worry) and the owner is my fuck buddy meaning we sleep together but we are not dating....i asked for a favour and he agreed to hire you and now i owe him

Me:(shocked)what nooo...hell no i don't want you to owe people favours because of me...fuck buddy or not tell him im not coming and he can take back his stupid favour (shouting)

i was hurt that thato would be indebted to someone because of me..not gonna happen)

Thato: kedi its ok we always owe each other favours so its not a big deal(she was smiling)

Me: thato how will i live with myself knowing for a fact that you owe someone a favour because of me (i was sobbing)

Thato: no man stop this kedi this is soshanguve not centerview you have to toughen up to survive no more crying and that job i got for u needs a tough cookie not a cry baby. .you need to take charge of your life kedi and stop with this crying business..we need to survive kedi and to do that we both need to toughen up ok (she was getting pissed)

Me:(wipping my tears)ok

Thato:good now lets go before you be late on your first day

*** we left thato said its not that far so we walked she said its so i familiarize myself with the hood..we finally arrived and the place was nice it was called SHORTLEFT MACNOSE CAFE

we walked in and some guy walked towards us and thato gave him a perk on the his lips and a hug and the guy grabbed her ass i cleared my throat and they let go of each other. ...mmmmh ok***

Thato: babe this is my lil sister kedi the one i told you about. ..kedi this my bae your new boss

Me :hi

Him:hi umm we have two shifts day and night...ull work day shift (6 to 6) during the week for four days (monday-to Thursday) and friday and saturday ull work night shift(6 to 6) and ul be off on sunday

Me:ummmh ok sir (yho i didnt wanna show it but i was beyond shocked)

Him: please call me mandla this sir shit is making me feel older than my age

Me:im sorry sir i mean mandla

Thato: hai suka mandla you making my sister

uncomfortable

Mandla:(he chuckled)ok ok now you can start by cleaning all over including the toilets

Thato: babe you cant be serious you cant be making my sister clean those dirty toilets (she was mad as hell)

Mandla:Tee look the only favour i did for you was to give her a job nothing else are we clear and you will not tell me how to treat my employees (he looked pissed)

yho

Me: its ok mtase ummmh mandla where are the cleaning things

mandla:in the storeroom go through that passage first door to your left ooh and we will talk about you pay when i came back(he kissed thato on a cheek and left)

Thato:im sorry mtase

Me:its ok remember you said i must toughen up

so this is me toughening up now go so i can work (i hugged her)

Me:i love u

Thato:i love you too see you late....

she left and i went to the storeroom and began cleaning

***its been four week since ive been here and working for mandla now i even help out behind the counter...my working relationship with mandla is bitter sweet cause when him and thato argue or fight he takes it out on me. ..he would shout at me left right center all day or night went i work night shift....i remember this other day thato said he was going out with him and she will be back the following day she even bought a new short tight dress and a pair of heels(she even looked nervous about the whole date thing), i was shocked cause she never wears heels ever so she came back the

following day it was a Saturday i was working night shift so she didnt say much but she looked troubled i went to work and yho mandla was angry the whole night and he took out all his anger on me he treated me like shit but i tolerated all of it despite hating being shouted at cause i need the job and the jerk didnt even apologize nx anyway tommorow is friday so this place is gonna be packed***....

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/05, 10:25] Ron: Chapter 1

Insert 04

.

.

A crop insert nyana...

Jason 's POV

Me: fuck jay i told you to handle that shit how are we gonna handle baba's anger towards us if it was dad i would relax a bit but baba will fuck us up you know him even dad is scared of him

Jay:look il fix it ok i made a mistake il find that bitch our best guys are working on finding her and when they do il burn her alive no one fucks with me and lives to tell the tale

Me:we need to find that bitch and fast before baba finds out

Jay : fuck that old man is gonna fuck us up big time

Me: i could punch you right now you mess up and i also get punished its not fair...i wasn't even there when you two were busy reaching climax now im gonna be punished for something i didn't do nx

(I was angry as hell)

Jay:ai suka we twins i mess up you also get punished and you mess up i also get punished.
..its how its always been,how it will always be and how it is now stop sulking il find that bitch and find those black diamonds she stole trust me

Me:voetsek (i stood up and went to my bedroom)

Jay : i love you bafo always remember that especially when granddad will be busy beating the living daylights out of us...remember you are me and i am you...we are one person,one soul (he was shouting so that i can hear him)

Me: (shouting) voetsek shut the hell up before i come there and fuck you up(he started laughing out loud)

Me:nx this fool (i said that to myself i couldnt help but smile)

***my name is Jason nkosi khumalo and our friends and enemies call me "kray" and this stupid ass is my identical twin brother Jayden nkosenye khumalo and our friends and enemies call him spilotro. .we are 32 years of age originally from durban (kzn) but me and my bro moved to Pretoria (waterkloof) after our graduation he studied IT and i studied law. ..we are the first born to Tyrell mandla khumalo and charlene zobuhle khumalo (dad is zulu and mom is coloured she was given a zulu name by her inlaws)she died while giving birth to our lil sister charlene zobuhle who is 13year old now (she was named after our mother for obvious reasons)...well she is also daddy's little princess he can and will kill for her and we also very protective towards her....she lives with our grandparents back in durban and they spoil her rotten well dad met someone(a coloured woman i guess he has a thing for coloured women) when zobuhle was 10year old and she

fell pregnant and now we have a lil bro his name is Brandon. ...well we hardly see him because of his mother yeses that woman is one crazy bitch and shes possessive... she doesn't like us and we dont give a fuck i think she only tolerates zobuhle cause she knows dad would put a bullet through her skull if she tries her bitchiness towards her and i dont think dad even loves her yes he may care about her but thats about it his heart will always belong to mom....he has never even once introduced her to his mother and father(grandparents) as nothing but the mother of his son***....

well back to the issue at hand my family is part of the south african mafia we deal with drugs, diamonds especially black diamonds, gun smuggling actually everything that that has to do with the black market thats us...we were born into it and now we live it

***i woke up to my phone ringing damn i must have dozed off while thinking of how we were

gonna tackle this issue at hand i looked at the screen and it was written "baba"

Me:shit (i let it ring and it finally stopped i got out of bed and went to the lounge and jay was sitting on the couch with his elbows on his knees and hands on his face

Me:bafo (he turned and looked at me)

Me:i got a call from him and i couldn't even answer it

Jay: he called me too i didn't have the guts to answer it too

***he called again we looked at each other and i answered ***

Me:ba..baba

Grandad:WAREHOUSE NOW! (He roared) and he dropped the call

Me:fuck we in deep shit

Jay :im sorry bafo (he buried his head in his

hands)

Me:we in this together and we will find that bitch and burn her alive along with those that helped her or paid her to drug you and steal from us....

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/05, 10:25] Ron: Chapter 01

Insert. ..05

.

.

.

KEDI'S POV

***it was Friday morning around 9 and i woke up to voices of people arguing outside i

listened carefully and i could tell it was thato and mandla...damn its gonna be one hell of a night shift cause i know il be shouted at for nothing the whole night since they are fighting nX***

Thato: i didnt have a choice i had to sleep with him or else he was gonna be suspicious and i had to drug him so i had to do it

Mandla : voetsek you acted like a whore and now you justifying it by saying"i didn't have a choice " bullshit (he sounded angry)

Thato:mandla please i had to do what i had to do to get those diamonds now whats the problem huh and plus you dont get to be jealous cause we not even dating we just fuck buddies

***i heard what sounded like a slap and thato screaming. .i got out of bed like a lightning and opened the door to find thato with her hand on her cheek with tears running down her cheeks

and i just lost it..for the first time in my life i actually lost it***

Me:you piece of shit who gave you the right to lay your filthy hands on my sister huh(i was fuming with anger i was even surprised at myself cause ive never raised my voice at anyone before let alone use swear words on anyone especially right in their face)

Thato:mtase its ok please dont get involved

Mandla:yeah you heard her now fuck off this doesn't concern you(shouting)

Me :it doesn't concern me did you just say it doesnt concern me?who the fuck do you think you are huh first of all your dont know me secondly dont you ever in your miserable life lay you hand on her trust me you dont wanna piss me off more than i already im nx lay those filthy and ugly hands on her again and I'll ... (he interrupted me)

Mandla:(walking towards me)you'll what

...you'll what little girl huh

thato got between me an mandla

Thato:mandla please stop she's sorry she didn't mean what she said shes just angry and only looking out for me...kedi please go back inside im ok please

i was breathing heavily i went back inside angry as hell even tears we running down my cheeks i was even breathing in and out just to calm myself down as i was busy doing that thato walked in

Thato:kedi what the hell was that since when do you swear do you evenk now who mandla is and what he can do to you for disrespecting him

Me:i dont care he has no right to slap you

Thato: stop it man im serious dont get involved kedi where mandla is concerned hes dangerous and you might loose your job and we both know

you need it

Me:but thato you expect me to just sit back and let him abuse you...remember you told me to toughen up this is me toughening up and having your back

Thato: and i appreciate it mtase but dont mess with him again kedi that man can be ruthless if he wants and i dont want you getting hurt please promise me

Me:ok fine but he better not lay his hand on you again

Thato (smiling)heeh i saw how you wanted to go all black belt on him since when do you swear and curse let alone raise your voice at people huh

Me (laughing)yho i just lost it i dont even know where all of that came from i was shockedmyself. ...mtase what where you fighting about?

Thato:dont worry about it I'll tell you some other time for now i need to take a nap im tired yho

Me:mmmmm

she took her nap and i went to make myself something to eat after that also took a little nap since il be doing night shift tonight i soo wish i can call in sick cause i dont wanna see that jerk mandla nx

i woke up around 4 in the after noon and thato was still sleeping yho this girl can sleep shem... took my bath after i was done i took my things and went to work when i got there thapelo his right hand man said mandla had other things to do so he wont be comming in yho shame i thanked God cause i honestly didn't have the strength to face him

JASE' POV***

we arrived at the warehouse and we were nervous as hell...here is the thing grandad is a cool down to earth person until you piss him off or make him angry he will fuck you up big time even his enemies tread carefully when it comes to him and his family no one messes with the khumalo's which makes me think whoever stole those diamonds are amateurs and that bastard in our squad that betrayed us knows who we are and he still went with his plan to betray us... nc nc nc when we find him we gonna burn him alive along with his family just to prove a point that no one messes with us...anyway shit is about to go down

***we were told by one of his bodyguards he is in the basement and hes angry as hell...shit....we went there and knocked and no one answered. ..we knocked again and no one answered again so we decided to let ourselves in...we went in and was just standing there wuth his hands in his pockets and his back against

the door, he was just staring at the wall***

Grandad :TALK! (we kept quiet)

Grandad :I SAID FUCKEN TALK (He roared)

Jay:i mess.... (i interrupted him)

Me:we messed up someone drugged jay and stole the diamonds

Grandad :How the hell did that happen (we kept quiet)

Grandad :I FUCKEN HATE REPEATING MYSELF (he roared again)

Me:we had a party at jays house and him and this girl went upstairs to do the deed and... (i nudged jay with an elbow and gave him the"continue making up this story"look)

Jay:(he cleared his throat)and we did the deed and she went down stairs to get us some drinks and after drinking i started feeling dizzy and the next thing i woke up in the afternoon with the safe wide opened and the diamonds were gone

and the girl was nowhere to be found and it looked like the safe was tampered with whoever opened that safe is an expert

Me: our boys are already on it we will find that bitch and those diamonds and plus it looks like we have a snitch or betrayer in our squad dont worry baba we on top of it.. (he was still not facing us)

Grandad :ON TOP OF IT?REALLY ON TOP OF IT...FOUR FUCKEN DAYS...FOUR FUCKEN DAYS AND YOU STILL HAVEN'T FOUND THOSE BLOODY DIAMONDS(he took a deep breath)you thought i wouldn't find out

Grandad :i dont know whether to fuck you up right now or to take you to the slaughter house and cut you fucken ball off or to just laugh at that rubbish both of you just vomited out of your mouths. ..first of all i know both of you are fucken lying about what really happened i raised you so i know both of you and i know you

have each others backs so i wont even bother myself with beating the truth out of both of you (he finally turned and faced us and yho i think we both nearly peed on our pants)

Grandad :listen here you two you have 48hours to find those diamonds and to bring me the head betrayer and that bitch and the person or people who send her ..YOU HEAR me or else I'll put bullets in both your skulls and cry at both your funeralsnow leave....

we left

Jay:at least he didn't take us to the slaughter house

Me:but you know if we dont find those diamonds he will kill us and cry at our funeral like he said i cant die now i dont have a mini me to leave behind ...we need to find that bitch but first we need to find out who is that betrayer amongst our boys abd that will lead us to her and the diamonds...

Jay:sure thing lets get down to it...

SAM'S POV

its been a month now since kedi ran away and my life has been a living hell since then damn i miss her like crazy....i have a girl friend now i got one cause my i wanted to shut my mother up she was constantly nagging me about getting her a daughter inlaw and i did but damn that girl irritates the fuck out of me,she complains a lot,shes a control freak and worse of all shes close to my mother and sisters i tried to break up with her a couple of times but she runs to mom and mom would threaten to burn me alive if i do..the worse part of it is two days ago she told me shes pregnant and now mom says she should move in with me and i should pay lobola for her..imagine nx...the door opened and she got in

Her:baby when are sending your uncles at home to pay lobola gape il start showing soon i cant hide this pregnancy for ever from them(i kept quiet)

Her:baby?

Me : ai shut up mamiki ..what is it? Lobola this lobola that dont you have better things to ask me than that huh and plus who said im ready for marriage

Mamiki:dont tell me to shut up sam keng (what) you want my child to be born out of wedlock huh and for me to be the laughing stock in this community having a child out of wedlock nx well that will never happen over my dead body..you gonna marry me even if its by force. ..mmmmh you dont know me shem...

Me: i dont even know what i saw in you

***i walked out with her shouting my name nx what have i gotten myself into of all the women in the world i chose to plan my seed in this

hood rat nx i dont know what i dd to deserve
this...it was getting dark outside so i decided
to go get drunk and drown my sorrows at the
nearest tarven***

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/05, 10:25] Ron: INSERT. ..06

.
. .
.

***today i got payed and my pay was more that
what we agreed on way more and im not gonna
ask why my pay is more than what he said he
will pay me if its a mistake then its his loss but
aag its monday but hey im excited i cant wait
for Saturday to come so that me and thato can

go shopping. ..u know i dont even know what thato does for a living i mean all she said to me was shes a hustler and that was about it and shes never brokeshe said soon we gonna leave this place to a better one maybe she want us to look for a two bedroom house and spilt the rent and im cool with that...i prepared myself and left for work when i got there something was off i mean even the pub wasnt open i knocked and called out mandla and no one answered...i kept on knocking until i heard someone say"fuck im coming "the door opened and it was one of mandla's friends (i call him scarface cause i dont know his name since they call each other bafo,he has a big scar in his right cheek i wonder how he got it mmmmh)i used to see him with mandla around the pub***

Me:hi umm is mandla in

Him:no look im sure they forgot to call you we not opening today and tomorrow

Me:why? is everything ok i mean why are we not opening (i could see he was getting annoyed by the second)

Him:look..why we not opening doesn't concern you you will be told when to come to work until then stay away (he closed the door..yho what's going on i thought he said we not opening for only two days and now i must wait to be told when to come back)

***ok what's happening i took out my phone and called thato and it went straight to voicemail. ..ok ...i called mandla and it just rang unanswered ai ok i took a taxi to crossing mall to buy some clothes,a new phone and some groceries....while i was on the queue waiting my turn to pay i heard a male hoarse voice whisper in my ear ***

Voice:you are beautiful i thought i should let you know

Me:ummm thanks i guess(i didn't even look at

him)

Voice:so what should i call you beautiful lady
(still whispering in my ear from behind)

Me:ke..kedi

Voice: ok beautiful kedi im siph

Me:ok (i moved forward i didnt even turn to look
at him..mind you ive never had a boyfriend
before whenever guys approached me sam
would beat them up or threaten them so yeah)

Siph:ummm i know im the ugliest guy in the
world but can you please look at me (yho
shame this guy's voiceevery time he
whispered in my ear i fill tingles in my
stomach...is it normal? Ai shem the devil is at
work here....i finally turned and yho the devil is
a liar...here stood a tall dark man with a bit of
muscles and a neatly cut beard with slightly
pink lips he was handsome no lies...i just stared
at him i could see he was talking but i didn't
hear a word he said he was wearing a white

shirt a ripped jeans damn though he wore a simple shirt and jean he looked hot....i was brought back to earth by him waving his hand in my face and him calling my name)

Sipho:earth to kedi

Me:(cleared my throat)ummmh did you say something

Sipho:i know im ugly but you didn't have to zone out while we talking (he had a smirk on his face)

it was my turn and i paid and left while i was existing the mall someone tapped my shoulder and i got startled a bit

Sipho:hey sorry i ddnt mean to scare you...where are you headed please let me drop you off

Me:no im good

Sipho:come one kedi im not a serial killer or a human trafficker im just an ordinary guy asking a beautiful lady to drop her off at her place or

home(gosh he was smiling)

Me:umm look im good and ummm thanks for the offer though (i flashed him a faint smile)

Sipho: at least give me your digits then since you dont want me to know where you live

Me:yho shame you dont give up neh

Sipho: i always go for what i want and i also make sure i get it...for now i want your numbers and the rest will follow

Me: arrogance is a turn off to me dude

Sipho: wow you think im arrogant (he looked surprised by this)

Me: yeah and i dont think i can see you are anyway (i took out a pen inside my sling bag and grabbed his hand and wrote my numbers and i took my things and left him there...one thing for sure is i was gonna block his numbers if he call even though i highly doubt he will i mean why would a handsome guy like him want

with a damaged and plain girl like me....i mean hes really handsome and im just a plain girl with an afro mxm)

i arrived home and thato was not back and it was already passed three...i tried to call her again and it went straight to voicemail again ok i was getting worried now eish now i had to call mandla nx...as i was about to call him he call me and i answered immediately

Me:hello

Mandla :kedi let me talk to thato her phone is on voicemail i know shes ignoring me nx im worried about her... (i interrupted him)

Me:mandl ...mandla where is my sister

Mandla: she left my place last night i thought she was home with you and that she was just ignoring me...wait shee..she didnt come home? (He sounded scared for some reason)

Me:mandla my sister left here in the afternoon

yesterday going to your place and now her phone is on voicemail and now you telling me shit that she left your house last night (i was shouting tears were streaming down my cheeks i was even breathing heavily)mandla where is my sister...where is she...what did you do to her (i was crying and fearing for the worst now)

Mandla: look she left here last night ok...why would i call you if i knew where she was im as worried sick as you are...look i have to go look for her call me if she comes back (he cut the call..WTF)

***i sent him an sms"IF MY SISTER DOESN'T COME HOME TONIGHT IM GOING TO THE POLICE AND MAYBE YOU'LL TELL THEM WHERE MY SISTER IS" he called immediately

Me: WHAT!

mandla : (he took a deep breath) we fucked up big time..we fucked with the wrong people and now im shit scared they might have her

Me:wha.what wrong people...what are you talking about

Mandla : kedi you not a little girl...we stole from someone we were not supposed to even think about stealing from the big boss failed to tell me who exactly we were stealing from cause if he told me i wouldn't have agreed now i think they got her and if she talks they'll be coming after me too

Me:so its your fault they took her..fuck you mandla you better pray she comes back unharmed or else im going to the police (i dropped the call)

ive never been this hurt and scared in my life ..i cant loose her shes the only family i have shes my pillar of strength no no no no...i just broke down and let it all out what if they kill her no she has to come back... i cried myself to sleep..

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/05, 10:25] Ron: INSERT. ..07

.

.

.

JASE'S POV

***after we left the basement granddad left for kzn.... a call came in from snakes one of my dad's loyal IT guy and he told us who the traitor is so we told him to call all the new guys in our squad to the warehouse immediately for a meeting it looked like it was one of the new guys who betrayed us..nc nc nc....as we were waiting for them snakes entered the office ***

Snakes:aow kray my kray and spilo my spilotro

Us:aow black mamba (we laughed and did our squad signature hand shake)

Snakes:i feel sorry for the fool he messed with the wrong nikkas

Me: yeah shit is about to go down

Jay:is everyone here

Snakes : sure bozza

Jay:good lets go have fun (we left the office to were they were sitting)

Me: good everyone is here mmmh we just found out that the is a traitor amongst you and now im giving that person one minute to come forward

they were busy mumbling shit i ddnt understand

Jay:SHUT THE FUCK UP! Like kray said you

have a minute to come forward or I'll burn your entire family while you watch and then I'll put a bullet through your skull after taking you to the slaughter house now im fucken waiting

they kept quiet and no one moved

Jay:ok ok now no one wants to come forward ok....snakes talk!

Snakes :ok this certain person met up with a certain enemy of ours about five times how i know that is not your concern anyway that enemy is mroza so i wonder why this person would meet up with that fool knowing fully well we dont do business with him at all and that we are on the verge of taking him out permanently.nc nc nc (he was shaking his head)

Me : one last chance the person should come forward and maybe i'll spare their family's lives

***i saw sizwe "the traitor" run to the door and i took out my gun and shot him on the back of his leg and he fell on the ground screaming ***

Me: SNAKES TAKE THIS PIECE OF SHIT TO THE SLAUGHTER HOUSE NOW (i roared)

***snakes went to him and dragged him out I was pissed as hell i mean we gave this fool a chance to save his family but he chose to run away nx some people are just plain stupid ***

Jay: we gonna have fun with him and plus his organs are gonna make us some cash in the black market especially his heart and kidneys (he laughed an evil laugh)

Me: fuck i cant wait to see you open him up while his still breathing

***here is the thing jay enjoys operating on our enemies or traitors...hes into knives especially surgical knives(catling,scalpel and Lancet or lance)and as for me im into guns i dont miss

when i shoot...you could see the guys were shit scared they heard no one messes with the khumalos and now they are gonna experience it head on some were even shaking***

Me: now listen and listen good all of you no one and i mean no one fucks with us and live to tell the tale now all of you gonna be present in the slaughter house to experience what we do to traitors now all of you to the slaughter house now..

Jay: if you not there within 15minutes consider yourself a traitor and dead along with your familynow fucken move (he roared)

they all rushed outside to their cars

***we got to the slaughter house it was outside Pretoria deep in the woods and we found everyone there and they looked shit scared its

high time they learned who they worked for***

Me:snakes did you take their weapons and did you search them thoroughly

Snakes :sure bozza

Me :good lets go have fun i know shit like this excites you

Snakes :you know me bozza (he said that with excitement written all over his face)

we went to the slaughter room and everyone was there including jay he was busy sharpening the surgical knives looking all excited and sizwe was strapped in our steel bed we call it "the devil's bed " looked like snakes roughed him up a bit he looked like he was hit by a car and the boys stood at a nearby corner in the room and with their eyes all out....i went to the door and locked it and put the key in my pocket

Jay: now sizwe i know where to find that old fool mroza what i want to know is where i can

find that bitch that drugged me and stole our diamonds

Sizwe: please dont hurt her she didnt know who she was stealing from she just did what she did cause she owed someone a favour please

Me: maybe he didn't understand you spilo..he said where can we find that bitch (he started crying)

Jay: no no no i expect alot of crying from that bitch not you man... im sure you were not crying when you decided to betray us right.... now talk (he was shouting)

he took a scalpel and cut his ear off and blood started gushing out...sizwe was crying and screaming all this while....snakes was laughing his ass off and the guys were cursing and looking away

Me: NOW TALK! (He was still crying and screaming nx)jay how about you cut off his balls and dick since we dealing with a bitch

here not a man

Sizwe: ok ok i know where i picked her up that day we stole from you it was some house in soshanguve block DD but she doesnt live there i think its her boyfriends house...she doesn't work for mroza...mroza met her through some guy she owes a favour too and i think the guy is mroza partner or something but i never met him

***he was singing like a canary nx fucken pussy...he gave us the address and i called my loyal guys in mamelodi to go pick her up and bring her to the warehouse ***

***i went outside to smoke and think about how we gonna ambush mroza i needed to think and come up with a plan and fast granddad gave us 48hours to retrieve those diamonds i guess jay was busy with sizwe cause he didn't come to join me for a smoke its been an hour and half plus its been long since he used his knives i guess he is busy quenching his thirst and

snakes busy enjoying the view mxm i was interrupted on my thoughts by phone ringing

Me:did you find her?

Caller:yes boss she showed up at that address you gave us and went in for an hour and half now she came out crying

Me: i dont give a shit if she came out dancing bring her to the warehouse now

Caller :sure bozza ...harmed or unharmed?

Me:slap her around a bit but dont hurt her too much i wanna fuck her up myself im sure spilo would love to break some bones too

Caller : shap (he cut the call)

*** fuck i cant wait to lay my hands on her she had the nerve to drug my brother and steal from us...nx im gonna fuck her up so bad even her ancestors wont recognize her....my ringing phone disturbed me from my thoughts***

Caller:we got her we will arrive in the warehouse

in 45 minutes max

Me:good job ill see her tomorrow get some guys to guard her tonight and they must not touch her sexual i want her in her right senses i dont want her broken i want answers in the mean time we need to deal with this backstabbing traitor

Caller: sure bozza (i dropped the call and went inside)

Me :the fuck jay what the hell did you do to the poor boy

Snakes:we had fun i dont remember the last time i had this much fun by just watching damn spilo you made my day in fact my year (he was busy laughing)

Me:sizwe my man we found your partner and shes on her way...u know i cant wait to lay my hands on her

Sizwe:bozza...im immmm soorry...pleaaase

immm soooory pleaaase (he looked weak)

Jay: you still gonna beg when i slaughter your family

Sizwe: pleaaase boooza il il do anything youu waaant juust spare my family pleaaase

Me: you know jay just open this motherfucker up and remove all his organs seeing him breathe makes me sick to my stomach (looking at sizwe)as for your family ...your wife is pregnant right so i might ... just might let her and your kid live but i still have to sleep on it you know

Jay:see you in hell

Snakes : yeah see you in hell

***jay took a scalpel and started cutting him open he was screaming his lungs out eventually he stopped jay started taking out his organs....the guys started throwing up and cursing some looked like they were about to

pass out....after he was done me and snakes
we took his lifeless body and put it in a bathtub
full of flesh and bone eating acid and that was
the end of him

Me:this is what will happen to each and
everyone of you or even worse if you even think
of betraying us you hear me(they were all
mumbling "sure boss" with terrified voices)

Me: now go clean yourselves up and prepare
we going after the diamonds we will meet
tomorrow at 10pm sharp

Them:ok bozza(i unlocked the door and they
walked out fast)

Snakes: none of them will ever sleep peacefully
from now on (he was laughing)

we laughed too

Jay:serve's them right none of them will ever
think of betraying us

Me:lets clean up and leave we have a long day

ahead of us tomorrow and plus we need an ambush plan for tomorrow

Snakes:what about that bitch

Me:that one is not a problem il personally deal with her tomorrow morning

Them:ok

we cleaned the room making sure we leave no DNA or proof that someone was slaughtered in that house and we left

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/05, 10:25] Ron: INSERT. ..08

.

.

.

JASE POV

i woke up early around 5 in the morning showered and wore my grey track pants a white v-neck shirt, a grey hoodie and black sneakers and drove to the warehouse when i got there jay's car was packed outside damn i hope he didn't kill the girl before we interrogated her i went inside and damn that chick looked horrible i mean its clear jay roughed her up badly she looked like she was in serious pain ...she was even crying silently with tears just running down her partly swollen face for a moment there i felt a bit sorry for her cause knowing jay and his temper and the fact that he was tricked by a girl and that she almost succeeded triggered the beast in him

*** about the "beast" the is an ancient secret or curse in my family that only male figures in the family know about...all the male figures in the

family from generation to generation up until now and future generations infact till the end of time had,has and will have a spiritual animal inside and its dangerous cause when it takes over our body it racks havoc. ..it can kill a person within seconds and you would swear that person was killed by a wild animal. ...its triggered by extreme anger and being in danger(it can sense danger) and we dont zone out when it takes over and attacks we see everything the only thing im glad of is that when we on that state our conscience dies completely even after we regain control of our body we dont feel bad or regret what happened ... the story is our great great grandfather met a beautiful woman and fell inlove and as time went by he married her not knowing that he was marrying the devil herself. ..she cheated and she never treated him with the respect he deserved as a husband (grandfather wasn't rich but he had enough to take care of his family) he

even suspected that she was the one that sent people to beat him up on his way to his friend's house but he gave her the benefit of doubt since he loved her...after years of marriage she still couldn't fall pregnant she continued with her promiscuous ways of sleeping with different men and great great grandfather let her be cause he was naturally soft and didn't believe in laying a hand on a woman.he met another beautiful woman our great great grandmother and he fell for her instantly he was sceptical about whether she will change on him too but he couldn't ignore the fact that she had a pure soul and she was kind hearted so he decided to take her as a second wife...great great grandmother fell pregnant and things went from bad to worse great great grandfather got poisoned and it was suspected that it was the first wife while grandfather was bed ridden the first wife sold all grandfather's cattles and goats and ran away it was only known when

people came to take what they bought from the first wife...things were really bad to a point that grandmother had to work at people's farms while pregnant so that they can survive and she never left his side and she took care of grandfather and nursed him back to health eventually grandfather got better and that's when he realised that he needs to protect his lineage from evil women like his first wife and the future male generation from what he experienced with the first wife cause she broke him(its one thing to date an evil woman but it another thing to marry one) if it wasn't for his second wife he would be dead or committed suicide so he went to a cave in the bush where a witch doctor stayed and asked him to place a curse to the future male generation in his family with isilwane (an animal) inside them to protect them from danger(to take over their body when they in danger or when they are angered to the extreme..he couldn't do anything when the wife

started cheating cause he was soft maybe if he wasn't soft he could have prevented some things from happening)and also for the spiritual animal to choose the right woman with a pure soul and kind heart as a wife for them starting with his unborn child and that the curse should go from generation to generation until the end of time and also that the curse should never be lifted off or be undone....grandfather sacrificed his eyesight as payment***

***and here we are today...from generation to generation males in the family where taught how to control the beast...the only people the beast or animal cant harm is the chosen one or wife and the person that has the same beast inside of them everyone else shame its death for them if we cant control it or we dont want to control it....so that's how our life is besides the fact that we part of the mafia people fear us cause they say we are ruthless and heartless

and that we dont have a conscience so no one messes with our family now back to the present day***

Me:bro what did you do to the poor girl damn dude

Jay:i almost lost control there for a second while roughing her up infact i was enjoying it until i remembered that we want some info from her

Me:(looking at the girl)you heard him now talk

Her:i will tell you everything you want to know but please dont hurt my sister i heard that when someone messes with you you hurt them and their families....please shes been through hell ill tell you anything you want to know you can even kill me afterwards but please spare her life

Jay:(he slept her)voetsek you piece of shit you

in no position to make demands now fucken talk

.

TO BE CONTINUED....

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/05, 10:25] Ron: A CONTINUATION OF INSERT. ..08

.

.

.

Her: look im ready to die while pleading with you to spare her life thats how much she means

to me like i said im ready to talk and tell you everything i know like where the diamonds are kept at mroza's house,how many guards he has and how to get in unnoticed i mean everything all im asking is for you to spare my sister's life she doesn't even know what i do for a living let alone the kind of dangerous people i hangout with...that's how innocent she is (she was sobbing)

Me: ok we will spare her life now talk

*** she told us everything we needed to know and more that she did what she did to provide for her and her sister and that they promised to pay her R500 000 which i doubt they were never gonna pay they'll probably kill her to tie up loose ends ***

Jay:can we talk outside (he looked pissed offwe went outside)

Jay: what are you doing kray you soft on that girl...you should be teaching her a lesson and

not being nice to her

Me: look that girl is doing exactly what we would do for each other. ..she did all that to better her life and her sister's life not because shes greedy and as for drugging you dude you beat the living daylight out of her now she looks like she was hit by a bus and im sure she has broken bones somewhere

Jay: i fucken hate it when you make sense actually it fucken pisses me off (i just laughed)

Me : look we can use her to trap that shit mroza and his partner

Jay: yeah and after all this she better let me fuck her the whole night and anyhow i want to as payment for drugging me (i laughed out loud mxm this fool)

Me: dude you and sex ai (we laughed and went back inside)

Me: look you give us mroza tonight on a gold

platter and maybe just maybe we will let you live

Her: ok but first i need to see my sister mroza might kill me so i need to see her before you guys go after him the diamonds

Jay: geez for a prisoner you make too many demands and i dont fucken like it one bit maybe i should just put a bullet in her skull is not like we really need her

Me: spilo come on stop it man (looking at the girl) no funny business or ill let him kill your sister in front of you (she just nodded)

we told her she only needs to drug that fool mroza and the partner if he/she pitches up since shes good with drugging people and we will do the rest. ..we gave her her handbag and we let her go get ready one of our guys dropped her off at her place

Jay: shit is about to go down in a few hours time and damn i can't wait

Me: mmm i can tell and im sure snakes is as excited as you (he just laughed)

KEDI'S POV

I woke up warly with terrible headache and everything that happened yesterday came crushing down on me i went down on my knees and i prayed i asked God to protect thato and to bring her home safe after i was done my phone rang i answered it fast

Me: thato is that you..are you ok...please tell me you ok mtase

Caller: whoah its mot thato its me siphos the guy you met at mall yesterday

i dropped the call what if thato calls and she cant reach me cause il be busy entertaining this guy nxhe called again *

Me: what is it huh i dont wanna talk to you just

drop the dam call im waiting for an important call nx (i dropped the call again)

***an sms came in""i dont know who pissed you off but please dont take it out on me and being rude doesn't suit you now send me an sms or a please call me after you've received you 'important ' call""

***eish i feel like an ass now i didn't mean to be rude towards him im just stressed out...i tried calling thato it waent straight to voicemail again i just cried myself to sleep.....i was woken up by a faint knock on the door i quickly went to open and there stood thato she looked horrible it was like she was hit by a car...i screamed and hugged her but she also screamed went i hugged her it looked like she was in pain...she had a blue eye and a deep cut on her bottom lip and another cut at the far left side of her forehead. ...tears were just running down my cheeks i wasn't even wiping them i just let them flow she was also crying she limped her way to

the bed and slowly sat down...i went to the kettle and turned it on the was water inside and i went outside and took a bucket and filled some tap water inside and came back insidei turned the kettle off since the water was hot enough i took a new face cloth and used the warm water in the bucket to clean her bloody face..i cleaned her up and she took off her shirt which had some blood on it and ohh my God her was bluish in colour God what did they do to her....i was doing all this with tears running down my cheeks after i was done i gave her some food and some strong pain killers she got under the covers it was around two in the afternoon ***

Thato: please wake me up around 7 please (it came out almost like a whisper)

Me : why thato you need to rest in fact you should be in hospital getting treatment.
..maybe i should call an ambulance

Thato:kedi please wake me up around seven i have somewhere i need to be and if you dont wake me up know that we are both dead

with that she closed her eyes and i just sat there watching her asking myself what the hell is going on ... i put on my alarm for 18h55 and i went outside and cried some more...i needed someone to talk to someone to comfort me cause this was beyond me and my heart is heavy....i decided to call back siphho i dont even know why but i just needed someone to talk to plus i needed to apologise for my rudeness towards him earlier i called him and he answered on the second ring damn was he waiting for my call

Siphho:hey i guess your important call came through

Me:(i was sobbing)she....they.....they(he interrupted me)

Siphho:kedi what's wrong. ...are you ok...why you

crying. ...please talk to me (he sounded worried)

Me: they hurt her she cant even walk properly
she has bruises all over her body

Sipho:they hurt who ok listen give me your
address so that i can come to you please

Me: i can..cant

Sipho:kedi please you crying and i dont know
whats wrong im worried sick here please

***i dropped the call i dont even know why after
10 minutes i decided to send him my address
via sms... 20 minutes later he called and told
me hes outside i went out and he came out of
his car and rushed towards me we met half way
and we hugged me tight and i just cried..i know
im a cry baby but seeing my sister like that
really broke me i dont even know how im gonna
get over it***

Sipho:shhhh its okits ok sthandwa sam
(ummm did he just say my love to me)

Me: its not ok they beat her up like shes some kind of animal she cant even walk properly

Sipho:ok kedi you not making any sense....they beat up who? (Aarg this guy)

Me:my sister thato

Sipho: the one you were waiting for a call from?

Me: yeah her and her boyfriend messed with the wrong people an now.... (i stopped damn thato said those guys are extremely dangerous telling sipho this could put his life in danger)

Sipho: what wrong people. ...whats going on kedi

Me: id rather not talk about it please dont force me too

Sipho: ok

***he took my hand and he pulled me towards his car and he opened the back door for me and i got in and he walked around the car and got in as well...he pulled me towards him and held

me tight kissing my my forehead ***

Sipho: i like you kedi alot...i liked you the first day i saw you at that supermarket even though you were cold towards me

Me: i wasn't cold you were cocky and that is a turn off for me

Sipho: (he chuckled) arrogant is the word you used not cocky

Me: were you offended when i said that

Sipho: yeah a bit cause i know for a fact that im not arrogant or cocky i just go for what an need and i make sure i get it that's all

Me: mmmh askies for offending you it wasn't my intentions

Sipho: how about you make it up to me

Me:how?

Sipho: by agreeing to be my woman, my girlfriend abd my one and only (i just kept quiet)

Sipho: babe

Me: huh

Sipho: so what do you say

mind you my head is still on his chest and damn he smells so good and his muscled arms around me did no justice to me cause i was feeling a bit different i felt a bit ticklish in my stomach heeh this is the second time this guy is making me feel like this eish

Me: sipho I've never had a boyfriend before so i dont know what to say to you

he pushed me off him gently and looked into my eyes i looked away quickly eish his eyes this guy is gonna be the death of me

Sipho: are you a virgin kedi

omg how can he ask me that geez this guy..wait what if i say no and he doesn't like me anymore...wait a minute do i want him to like me

Me: no im not (i looked down)

Sipho:ummm ok so what happened since you said you never had a boyfriend before

*** tears just threatened my eyes i tried to fight them back but i couldn't that pain of being raped by sam came rushing down on me and i found myself running out of breath ***

Sipho:kedi are you ok

me: i was raped by my step brother for years thats why im not a virgin

*** i got out of his car and ran towards our place with him calling my name i got in and locked the gate ran to our backroom and layed next to thato on the bed ...an sms came in ""kedi im soory i didn't mean to open up old wounds. ...im sorry you went through that just know that it doesn't change how i feel about you in fact it made me love you even more cause it shows you are a strong woman to have went through all that traumatic experience and

still stand strong...i love you and im sorry"" i kept on reading that smsm over and over until i fell asleep i was woken up by mr alarm clock and i woke thato up and she asked me to prepare bath water for her..after she was done bathing she wore her skinny jean,a crop top,sneakers and a cap and she said we should sit down she has something to tell me***

Thato: kedi im in deep shit...me, mandla, mroza and some guy called sizwe we stole diamonds from some really dangerous people ...mroza and sizwe lied to us and said they are just some cheese boys from the suburbs

me: oh my God thato so what are going to do maybe we shoul run away

Thato:'we' are not running away they will find us anywhere we run to but they said if i give them mroza they'll let me go and they promised not to hurt you

me:(crying) how are you going to give them

mroza

Thato: you dont have to worry about that.now listen to me kedi (she took some bank card under the mattress) take this card there 's about 60 to R70 000 in there if something happens to me take half and give my mom half... (i interrupted her)

Me:mtase nothing will happen to you lets go to the police im sure they'll help us

thato:kedi you dont get it do you im sure they have the police in their payroll....another thing if i dont come back tomorrow morning leave this place kedi go rent a flat somewhere ko town and enrol in a college and under no circumstance should you come back to this place ok..ok kedi?

Me: ok please mtase dont go we will figure something out (she stood up and walked to the door with her hand bag in her hand)

Thato: maybe im being punished for killing my

father...i love you mtaze always remember that
(with that she walked out with me screaming
her name begging her not to leave....i cried until
i couldn't cry anymore)

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/05, 10:25] Ron: INSERT.09

.

.

.

*****NARRATED*****

*****Thato made her way to mandla's place...on**

her way there she knew she had to come up with a lie that she will tell mandla and bra mroza if they ask her were she has been and why she looks battered. ..she got to mandla's place and it looked like no one was there so she decided to call him...she called him and he was shocked to hear from her he thought she would be dead by now cause the khumalo's dont just let you go just like that unless she wasn't abducted by them but then again sizwe disappeared without any trace and thato disappeared too but now shes back so he knew something was up....he told her he will send someone to pick her up after one of mroza's boys picked her up he took her to mroza's house she got out of the car nervous as hell but she had to remain calm to survive this...she went straight to mroza's study and they were there drinking what looked like whiskey ***

Thato:hi guys

Mandla : baby you back ...where have you been

and.....whoah what happened to your face and you limping....what happened

Thato: si...sizwe happened(she said sounding all nervous)

Mroza : what do u mean sizwe happened i thought hes dead or he ran away

Thato :dead? what would he be dead...oh my God is that why he kidnapped me and did this to me (she said pointing at her face)because you guys send people to kill him (she acted shocked)

Mandla: what?no no no he just stopped coming here and his phone is off and his wife said she hadn't seen him for days

Thato: well he said he was being stalked and someone planted a bomb to his car but luckily it exploded after he got out...he said at first he thought it was his bosses but he said he would be dead by now along with his family

mandla was just looking at her and he could tell she was not herself that something was off about her and plus why would sizwe not send out a word that he wanted his money and instead he kidnapped her knowing very well that mroza is a greedy and selfish bastard and he wouldn't pay a cent to save thato as for mroza he believed every word that came out of her mouth

Mandla: how did you get away from him

Thato: he..he forced himself on me and fell asleep afterwards so i ran away (she faked a cry but then flashbacks of spilo beating her up came rushing down to her and tears came out)im sur...sure hes looking for me by now

Mroza : pussy...how can you kidnap someone,rape them and then fall asleep afterwards without tying them up ai some man are just plain stupid and just amateurs (he laughed)

***thato could see mandla was staring at her and it made her uncomfortable....she was saved by a knock on the door ***

Mroza : tsena (come in)

Guy: sorry boss but the merchandise has arrived the guys are outside

Mroza:beautiful make yourself comfortable we will be back (they went outside)

***thato saw this as an opportunity to spike mroza's drink and she did....after that she went to lie down on the couch and she eventually fell asleep after half an hour they came back and found thato asleep on the couch ***

Mandla: thato wake up

Thato: huh (she was rubbing her eyes)

Mandla: wake up

Mandla: mroza excuse me and my bae we have some catching up to do

Thato: what time is it

Mroza: 21h35 baby girl

Thato: oh ok

Mandla: lets gomroza I'll see you tomorrow

Mroza: be gentle on her dont fuck her too hard
remember shes still bruised (he laughed)

***they left thato new something was up cause
mandla was cold towards her i mean he didn't
even seem hurt or angry that sizwe

"supposedly"raped her anyway they drove out of
mroza house and she kept on asking mandla
where they are going but he kept on saying she
will see when they get there...she eventually fell
asleep...she was woken up by mandla shaking
her...she woke up and mandla told her to step
out of the car and she did shaking***

Thato: mandla wha..what are we doing in the
bush this time of the night (she asked looking
all scared)

Mandla: why did the khumalo's let you go

Thato:huh...wha...what are you talking about
(she asked with a shaking voice)

Mandla: thato i know you more than you know yourself and i know you lied about sizwe abducting you...sizwe wouldn't kidnap you and then leave his family unguarded and vulnerable for his enemies to hurt them now im gonna ask you for the last time WHY DID THE KHUMALO'S LET YOU GO!(he roared)

Thato: i dont know wh..... (before she can finish mandla slapped her so hard she fell on he butt and then he took out his gun and pointed it at her)

Thato:i...i ..i only told them about mroza i didn't say anything about you (she was crying)

Mandla:now why did they let you go

Thato: they...they wanted me to drug him and they promised to let me be after that

Mandla:SO YOU SOLD US OUT! (he slapped her again and she cried out)

Thato:i only sold mroza out they dont know anything about you I'm telling you the truth

Mandla: i dont believe you....you sold me out thato after everything I've done for you...you betray me like this huh (he was pasing up and down)

Thato: baby i didn't sell you ou... (he interrupted her)

Mandla: shut up you piece of shit do you know what they will do to my family. ..my wife and kids do you know what they'll do to them

Thato: your what? Wha...what do you mean your wife and kids so you married.

..when....how.....mandla how can you do this to me (she was crying)

Mandla:voetsek my family is in danger and wena you are here being selfish and thinking

about yourself. ...fuck they used you to trap us..you betrayed me thato how could you...i trusted you and you sold me out to the devil.
....why thato

Thato: mandla i swear i didn't tell them about you (she was crying)

Mandla:you lying. .you saved yourself and put me and mroza on the chopping block

Thato: mandla please put the gun away (she was crying and pleading with him)

Mandla: fuck you (and then he pulled the trigger)

JASE'POV

me: you ready bro

Jay:as ready as I'll ever be

Me: ok let me call that girl thato and find out if she already did her part (i called her and it went

straight to voicemail)

Jay: whats wrong

Me: it goes straight to voicemail

Jay: fuck i told you she will betray us and that she cant be trusted

Me: we will deal with her tomorrow tonight lets go deal with that fool mroza...with or without her we going to get those diamonds. ..let go... we got into his car and we left

on our way we called our squad (the cobras) and they said they are ready to attack i gave them the go ahead and dropped the call

Jay: lets go have some fun

***NARRATED ***

**the cobras went in and started shooting they

used silencers....they were disappointed to only find four guards they took them out really quick and went inside only to find mroza passed out on the floor..one of the guys called jay***

Guy: bozza what a disappointment he had only four guards can you believe it only four and we came here prepared mxm

Jay :(he chuckled)what about mroza

Guy:looks like that girl did her job cause he passed out but hes still breathing

Jay:good we on our way 5 minutes tops (he dropped the call)

Jase:they got him?

Jay: yeah looks like that bitch thato did her job after all nx and the guys are disappointed that fool had only four guards (the laughed)

Jase: i told you we dealing with an amateur here..ai i wonder where that girl thato is and why her phone is on voicemail

Jay: maybe she did her job and left i mean maybe she didn't want us to find her there

Jase: yeah maybe but eish i have a bad feeling

Jay: i dont feel anything is it a feeling of danger approaching

Jase: i dont know i just cant put my finger on it but its something bad (they kept quiet thinking cause they know never to ignore any bad feeling they have but what was odd was that only jase's beast had this feeling)

they arrived and they found only three dead bodies outside and one near the door jase just shook his head and followed one of his guys to were mroza was and jay came after him holding a tool box

Jase: and now whats with the tool box

Jay: im gonna have a lil party in there (he said that with a smirk)

Jase: dude i dont feel comfortable having

people walking around with mroza's organs

Jay: dont worry we not selling them im gonna give them to our dogs to feast on them (he laughed while saying that)

Jase: mxm so are you gonna wake him up

Jay: nah i want him to wake up and see satan himself standing in front of him in hell (we laughed)

Guy1:bozza im not sticking around for another operation let me go outside and keep a look out with the guys

Guy2: me too if i stay for another operation im gonna be admitted into a psychiatric hospital

Jay :pusses (they laughed)

Guy3:you can call us pussy anytime we are not sticking around for another operation (they laughed and walked out)

*** jay did his thing on mroza and jase went to take out the diamonds in the safe***

Jase: are you gonna leave him like that

Jay:yeah its a sign to our enemies not to fuck with us

Jase:fuck dude but leaving him open like that eish anyway i hope you didn't leave any DNA

Jay : nah dont worry

Jase : ok lets get out of here (they left including the guys)

KEDI'S POV

***i woke up with a tight chest like i was kind off struggling to breathe properly i took a look at the time and it was around 10 at night as i was getting out of bed i had a sharp pain in my heart and i screamed a bit. ..it went on and on until it stopped ***

Me:what the hell is going on with me i better

not be having a heart attack im too young to have one (i said to myself)

*** i stood up and took a glass and poured cold water from the fridge as i was about to drink the glass slipped from my hand and smashed on the floor....i stood there dumb struck i finally came back to my senses and i picked the broken glasses and cleaned the whole thing....i took another glass and poured another cold water and drank thank God it didn't slip from my hand and brake too....the pain was gone but i still had that tight chest feeling i just knelt down besides the bed and i prayed for thato more than myself..i went inside the covers and tried to sleep but i couldn't i kept tossing and turning until i finally dosed off***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/05, 10:25] Ron: INSERT. ..10

.

.

.

KEDIS' POV

*** it was tuesday afternoon the day after thato left and the was still no sign of her i tried calling her but her phone was still on voicemail. ..i had a heavy heart i was worried sick i know she said i must leave if she doesn't comeback but i couldn't. ..i got down on my knees and prayed for her safe return after the prayer i tried to sleep but it was hard i kept turning and tossing until i eventually fell asleep....i woke up the following day around 8 in the morning i didn't get out of bed i just stayed there thinking about thato i was disturbed from my thoughts by a

knock on the door and i quickly got out of bed rushing to the door....i opened only to find mandla standing there looking like shit with a newspaper on his hand his eyes were blood shot red and just then i knew he brought me bad news***

Me: mand...mandla what's wrong (i asked him with a shaky voice)

Mandla: they killed her...shes dead

Me: huh...they killed who

*** he gave me the newspaper and the headline read "a body of a woman found in the bush just outside Pretoria"i continued to read the full story it said"the body was found battered and she was shot seven times one on the forehead,three on the chest and three on the stomach " but what caught my attention was the clothes they said she was wearing it was the same clothes thato left wearing that night

oh my God my heart was beating fast***

Me: it's not her..it cant be her(tears just ran down my eyes)

Mandla : i..i called that number the police left and i talked to a detective in charge of the case and....its her kedi they confirmed the name and surname i gave them its the same on her id book they found in her hand back

Me: no no no mandla please tell me im dreaming (i started feeling light headed...i also started seeing blurred visions and it was lights out)

JASE'POV

The door swang open and jay walked in with a facial expression i couldn't read

Me: and now

Jay: shes dead

he threw the newspaper he had on his hand and said i should open page 2...i did and there was a headline he circled with a red pen and i read it

Me: this doesn't confirmed its her

Jay: remember we called snakes yesterday to track her down but he had no luck finding her and today i was reading the paper and i stumbled upon this article and i had this feeling to find out more about the dead woman...i called our contact in the police station and he send me her id copy the found in her bag and its her

Me: damn

Jay: eish anyway lets concentrate on taking those diamonds to baba we will deal with this when we come back from kzn

Me: damn that bad feeling i had that night i

guess it was about her

Jay: but i wonder why you had it though its not like you knew her personally or had any connection to her or unless she was the chosen one for you

Me: no it wasn't that kinda feeling. ..with the chosen one remember grandad said only the beast reaction confirms if its her or not and with her the beast didn't even attempt to wake up or react at all so she wasn't the one anyway let me go get ready so we can hit the road

Jay: are we driving or flying

Me: you decide...damn i can't wait to see princess and ma (grandma)

Jay: me too bro its been a while since we visited home

Me: well just know princess is gonna milk us dry with shopping sprees

Jay: (laughing) maybe you not me

Me : mxm who bought her a hublot watch just because she passed her june exams...a fucken R50 000 watch for a 12 year old doing grade 6 imagine nje

Jay :she deserved it and more

i just shook my head and laughed and went upstairs to shower after i was done getting dressed packed an overnight bag for three days and took the diamonds and we left for knz

KEDI'S POV

i woke up and i felt my face was wet i looked up and i was met by mandla's eyes he was just looking at me

Me: wha...what happened

Mandla:you fainted

Me: tha....thato (i cried)

Mandla :shhhh its ok...its ok(he came closer and held me tight)

Me: why..how can she leave me all alone in this cruel world (i continued crying)

we had a knock on the door and mandla stood up to open the door

Mandla: ummm officers how i help you

Voice: morning...we looking for kedi is she in

Mandla:ummm yeah come in

a man and a woman walked in with police badges hanging on their belts

Woman:mam... im detective baloyi and this is my partner detective mdluli we are here concerning the body of a woman found in the bush outside Pretoria...we received a call from a man named mandla and he gave us this address and said the woman's sister lives here

Mandla: im the one who called

Me: and im her sister (it came out as a whisper and i sat up straight at the edge of the bed)

Det.baloyi: ooh ok you can also stay for the questions we need to ask

*** mandla gave them chairs and they sat down and mandla came and sat next to me on the bed***

Det.mdluli: mam when last did you see your sister

Me: two nights ago around 8 at night (i was sobbing now.... i couldn't believe she was gone)

Det.baloyi:im sorry mam but we need to ask this questions so that we can get the perpetrators or perpetrator who killed her(i just nodded as for mandla he was just sitting here all tense next to me)

Det.baloyi :did she tell you where she was going

Me: no she just said she had some business to

attend to and she will be back the following day
(the detective was writing in her notepad while
nodding)

Det.mdluli :did she have any enemies

Me: not that i know of (detective baloyi kept
writing on her notepad)

Det.baloyi : you sir how do you know the
deceased

Mandla: she is/was my girlfriend

Det.mdluli : when last did you see her

Mandla:two days ago

Det.baloyi :before or after 8

Mandla:(he kept quiet a bit and answered)
ummm i think it was a bit after 8

Det.baloyi : she had bruises all over her body do
you know anything about that (she asked
looking at mandla with an intimidating look)

Mandla:i wouldn't know anything about that

maybe you should ask her boss bra mroza (he looked annoyed at the female detective)

the detectives looked at each other then back at mandla and i was confused cause i didn't know what he was playing at bringing his evil friend into this

Det.mdluli :what is her connection to mroza

Mandla:she used to meet up with him alot even though i didn't like it one bit she said nothing its going on between them its just business. ...the last day i last saw her she received a call from him and she said mroza wanted her to deliver some packages somewhere in limpopo she was gonna leave the same day and come back late the following day or today

***ohh my God i looked at this bastard busy painting thato as a bad person gosh i hate him i wanted to slap him so hard and tell the detectives the truth nx but i contained my self cause i promised thato not to say anything to

the police to keep myself and her mom and lil sister safe***

Det.mdluli :and you mam you didn't know about this (i just shook my head looking down with tears gushing out)

***i stood up took my phone and excused myself i wasn't gonna sit here and listen to mandla paint thato as a bad person any longer

Det.baloyi :mam we not done here we stil have more questions to ask

Me:this bastard knows more about what my sister was up to than me cause he makes it seems like im clueless of who she really was...this thing here is talking....no in fact hes vomiting rubbish out of his mouth about my sister and i will not sit here and listen to that (i walked out)

***i cant believe mandla would do that to thato i mean i know we not suppose to say the truth

about anything concerning those dangerous people they stole diamonds from but for him to lie about thato like that no no no...while i was sitting outside the detectives came out***

Det.mdluli : mam im sorry for your loss mandla said he will come and identify the body since he doesn't think you can and he doesn't want you to be traumatised seeing her with a bullet wound on her forehead(him mentioning a bullet wound on her forehead traumatised me so i just nodded)

Det.baloyi :please take this card and call us if you remember anything that can help us with the case (i took it)

Me :(sniffing)please tell me you dont believe what mandla said about my sister. ...she wasn't a bad person hes lying..hes lying

Det.mdluli :look we have to consider all options and investigate all the possible leads we may come across during this investigation if she

was working with mroza its possible the same people or person who butchered him in his house the same day he died are the same people or person who killed her

Me:what do you mean mroza butchered you mean hes dead?

Det.baloyi :he was found cut open with his organs taken out and his guards all shot dead

Me:ohh my God(to say i was scared was an understatement)

Det.mdluli : yeah we have two murder cases or should i say 6 murder cases including the guards that might be connected anyway give us you numbers so we can notify you about the development of the case (i gave her my numbers and they left)

i walked inside and mandla was busy with his phone

Me : how could you mandla i know we not

supposed to say anything about those dangerous people but for you to lie about thato like that its disgusting and sick (i was mad as hell)

Mandla: look i had to say what i said for the detectives to believe us and leave us alone do you know what those people would do to us if we breathe a word to those cops about them huh

me: fuck you mandla fuck you after thato saved you from those people by lying to them that he never met mroza's partner and you tarnish her name like this...i hope she haunts you for this...get out i hate you leave (i was hurt beyond words)

Me:you still here i said get out (i shouted)

***he closed his eyes and opened them again taking a deep breath and came close to me and stared into my eyes....all i saw was nothing but coldness the was no emotion just coldness ***

Mandla: you better keep your mouth shut about what you know about mroza,me and thato if you as much as breathe a word to anyone if those dangerous people as you call them dont find you and kill you i will do it without even blinking twice (with that he walked out leaving me trembling with fear)

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment bo lovies

#thechozenone

[08/05, 10:33] Ron: INSERT...11

.

.

.

KEDI'S POV

***its been three weeks since thato's passing and its been hell without her...i did what she asked me to do and i moved out of soshanguve the following day after mandla threatened me and i found a flat in midrand with siphos help i also gave the detectives the numbers of thatos mom so they call her and give her the bad news cause i just couldn't....a day after the detectives called her i called her to check up on her and to also ask for her banking details so i can send her that money thato said i should give to her once shes gone and you wont believe how that went...she called me a bad omen she said thato is dead because of me..she said i killed my parents and now i killed her daughter...she also said my step mother warned her about my relationship with her daughter but she brushed it off cause i was an orphan now she wished she listened to her and her daughter would still be alive...yho ive never

been this hurt before her mother blaming me for thatos death she even went on to say she went to a sangoma and he told her someone close to thato is responsible for her death...imagine nje...she said shes gonna make me pay for killing her daughter i was crushed to a point where i almost committed suicide and i was saved by siphos since then hes been watching me like a hawk he even got me a job as a call centre agent at a company called SPM DIRECT so that i keep busy and not think too much about thatos death,her mother and suicide

Speaking of siphos well hes been good to me shes very supportive and loving...i know its way too soon but i finally agreed to be his girlfriend so yeah i have my first boyfriend and hes been amazingits been three weeks and the police are finally ready to release thatos body detective baloyi called me two days ago to let me know she said they have already told her

mom now i must call thatos mom so that i can send her that money before thatos burial..trust me i dont want to but i have to i dialled her numbers and it rang straight to voicemail i tried about three times i decided to try her one last time and she answered***

T.mom: what do you want isn't it enough that you killed my daughter now what the hell do you want

Me: ma i didn't kill thato she was my sister my best friend

T.mom:shut up you whore listen and listen good i dont wanna see you anywhere near my daughter's funeral shes being buried in three days time stay away or else you'll be stoned to death you hear

Me:(crying)ma please i need to say goodbye

T.mom:voetsek goodbye my foot for what you killed her didn't you say goodbye then if you come anywhere near my house or the cemetery

trust me u will die a painful death

***she dropped the call..i just cried after i calmed down i send her an sms asking her to send me her banking details cause thato left some money for her....a minute later i received an sms from her with her banking details mxm i just sat there staring into space ***

Sipho: babe are you ok ive been standing here for close to 7 minutes and you have been staring into space ..whats wrong(he sounded worried)

Me: thato is being buried in three days time and her mom said i should stay away or il be stoned to death if i come (i said that with a low tone)

Sipho:my love thato knows how you feel about her and how much you love her you dont have to be there when shes buried to prove that trust me she knows

Me: i just wanna say goodbye sipho thats all just to say goodbye

Sipho: babe look at me (he said touching my chin making me look at him and i did)all you have to do is fulfil her last wishes you told me about...you going back to school to further your studies and for you to live your life to the fullest

Me: its hard sipho how.... i mean how do i move on without her

Sipho: with time sthandwa sam only with time you'll heal and move on

***he pulled me close to his chest and held me tight after some time he lifted my chin up and kissed me and i kissed him back...he deepened the kiss things got heated as he pushed me back gently and i layed on my back on the bed and he got on top of me he continued kissing me and squeezing my breasts he moved from my lips to my neck sucking on it gentlygosh it felt so good until i felt his hands under my shirt at my back it felt like he was unhooking my bra and i flinched a bit i was starting to feel

uncomfortable i think he noticed cause he stopped and looked into my eyes his eyes were red***

Sipho: relax sthandwa sam

Me: umm i d... (he shut me up with a kiss)

Sipho: i love you kedi i promise il be gentle

he continued kissing me and squeezing by body and breathing heavy...i wasnt sure about this but hey the way he was kissing me and squeezing my body felt good i was even getting wet down there gosh...he took off my shirt and my bra and he started sucking on my breast ohh my gosh it felt really good he went to another one and i was breathing heavily i felt tingles all over my body he stopped sucking my breasts and started licking and planting kisses on my stomach he finally stopped and came back up to my face and kissed my lips and looked into my eyes with a smirk on his face

Sipho: are you gonna give me what i want or do

i have to force it out of your mouth (he was still smiling)

Me:huh (i whispered)

Sipho:ok i guess i have to force it out now (he said that still with that smirk on his face)

***he went down and pulled my leggings down with my underwear and i quickly grabbed them with my eyes all out**

Sipho: babe let go (i just shook my head no)babe come on dont you trust me i told you i wont hurt you i just wanna make you feel good and happy please

****i let go of them and quickly closed my legs with one of my arm covering my breasts and my other hand covering my pussy..i was stark naked he got out of bed and took of his shirt and jean he was left with his boxers and Jesus his di*** was up and it looked big now im rethinking this whole thing how will that thing fit in my pussy no no no....he climbed back to bed

and opened my legs and i quickly put my hand on my pussy covering it and he pulled my hand off and he was just staring at my pussy with so much hunger in his eyes as i was busy feeling embarrassed he started kissing inside my thighs and biting them gently and i just closed my eyes shut biting my lower lip gosh my body was feeling all sorts of feelings i never felt before as i was busy concentrating on his bites and kisses i felt his lips on my clit i jerked up and he used his hand to make me lay still he started sucking on my clit over and over.. as he was sucking and biting gently and licking yho a loud moun escaped my lips when i felt his tongue entering me it went deeper and i continued jerking up and down and he continued eating my pussy until i felt like an electrifying wave take over my body and i screamed his name out loud and my body started shaking he stopped he was wet all over his lips and chin and was also dripping down

from his chin to the bed as for me it was like i was hit by a car i couldn't move he had a big smile on his lips and he whispered close to my mouth ***

Sipho:finally i got what i wanted you mouning and screaming my name (he was smiling like a retard mxm)

*** he got off the bed and took off his boxers and what i was seeing was scary his d*** was huge i looked up to his face and he was smiling im sure he could see i was scared***

Sipho: (smiling)are you scared of him

Me:ye..yes i dont think it will fit

Sipho:dont worry he will fit cause thats his home from now on so he has to fit and dont worry il be as gentle as possible ok (i just nodded but damn i was shit scared that thing looked scary and big)

***he came up to me and kissed me i quickly

covered my mouth and he laughed***

Sipho: come on babe i want you to taste yourself (he said pulling my hands from my mouth)

Me: its disgusti..(he smashed his lips on my mine and i didn't kiss him back until he bit my bottom lip forcing me to kiss him back... he deepened the kiss and i moured i felt the tip of his d***on my pussy he tried to enter but he couldn't go in like i said hes big he tried again and still nothing the third time he went in and a groan escaped his mouth from deep within his throat ***

Sipho:fuck.....you so tight and hot

*** the pain i felt yho i screamed and i tried pushing him away from me but he held me tight***

Sipho: babe look at me please open your eyes(i shook my head no)sthandwa sam i love you and il never force myself on you if you want me

to stop ill stop please look at me (he pecked my lips)

i opened my eyes slowly and tears came out

me:its painful siph

Siph: it will get better my love just look into my eyes ok please dont take you eyes of me of mine(i just nodded)

***he started to move in and out of me slowly looking into my eyes he picked up his pace and i closed my eyes cause the pain was unbearable he quickly pecked my lips and told me to look at him and i did...his pace went faster and he pulled my right leg up and he went deeper and faster and thats when i started to feel pain mixed with pleasure and i mounded louder and he groaned i kept on mounding and calling his name and i think that made him attack my pussy even more...he went faster and deeper and harder and that made me dig my

nails deeper into his back gosh i felt that electrifying wave wash over my body harder and my toes curled up and i screamed his name louder***

Sipho: fuck

bab....shi..t...yessss...ahhhh...you...fuck....tight...shit...shit..shit

he continued to fuck me through my orgasm i felt his body tense up and he held me tighter he went on and on until he slammed into me harder and he let out a loud growl with his body shaking and he collapsed on top of me both of us breathing heavily gosh i never knew sex can be this good

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/05, 10:33] Ron: INSERT.12

.

.

.

*** KEDI'S POV***

after that intense love making i fell asleep and was only woken up by him busy pounding me and groaning on top of me gosh...after four rounds we finally fell asleep i thought that was about it but no..not with siphoshem i woke up with him busy hammering my pussy harder and groaning like an animal geez

Siphoshem: (kissing my lips) that was one heck of a morning glory thanx love ***i just smiled the truth is im really sore down there and i cant feel my lower body...i slowly tried getting out of bed yho the pain that was between my legs was unbearable tears just streamed down my

cheeks ***

Sipho: baby whats wrong ...why are you crying

Me: its painful down there i dont think il be able to walk and i need to pee (i said it feeling embarrassed)

***this fool just laughed his ass off i mean im in pain and hes busy laughing mxm i think he can see im getting pissed cause he stops laughing)

Sipho: im sorry for laughing sthandwa sam i should have actually whistled instead and patted myself on the back for a job well done

***after saying that he winked and got off bed with a huge grin on his stupid face and picked me up and took me to the bedroom he put me down and rushed out to answer his ringing fone i did my deed as painful as it was and limped my way to the shower after i was done i dried my self and limped my way to the bedroom and sipho was not there even the bed was made aarg i lotioned and wore his shirt and layed in

bed i couldn't go down stairs yho with the pain between my legs i think i fell asleep while waiting for him cause i was woken by soft kisses on my face i opened my eyes and it was him he had a grin on his face***

Sipho : how are you feeling now beautiful

Me: still sore but il live

Sipho: the pain will get better my love umm i bought you morning after pills and breakfast

Me: morning after what

Sipho: (he looked shocked by my question and then he looked like he remembered something)

Sipho: umm its a pill that stops you from falling pregnant my love remember we didn't use any protection last night and this morning

Me: ooh ok(i looked down i didnt tell him i was on an injection i was a bit embarrassed)

Sipho:dont worry sthandwa sam i have alot to teach you (he said that pecking my lips)lets eat

baby so you can drink the pills

*** we ate our breakfast chatting away and laughing gosh i was happy siphos made me happy for the first time im happy and its because of a guy can you believe it anyway i drank those morning after what what pills and we spend the whole day in bed talking and kissing(only) yho it was still painful down there***

THREE MONTHS LATER

My relationship with siphos has been amazing we've are very close i even told him about my life back ko centerview and what ive been through since my parents died...we even went to test for hiv and std's and thank God we are both clean but for two weeks now siphos has been acting strange...two weeks ago he was summoned back home by his parents (kzn) and since then hes been acting strange ive been

trying to make him talk to me about whats been bothering him but dololo he would get all defensive and angry and he would call me a nag so i just let him be my phone rang it was him ***

Me: my love

Sipho: my one i have bad news

Me: sipho please tell me you not cancelling on out date please i haven't seen you for a week

Sipho: baby please understand ok im a lawyer so something will always come up with my line of work

Me: sipho ive been understanding your line of work since we started dating and you've always made time for me whats changed

Sipho: kedi please im fucken trying here ok will you stop acting like my fucken wife and start acting like my girlfriend your nagging is starting to fucken piss me off now (he was shouting)

Me: sipho(it came out as a whisper)

Sipho: look i have to go il call you (he dropped the call)

tears just rolled down my cheeks i remember a new friend of mine anelisa from work always told me she prays whenever she feels suffocated or hurt that she always takes her problems to God maybe i should also start praying i mean the only time i pray is when i say my simple night prayer and also i have no family.... no one to fight for me or be there for me so maybe i should also take my problems to God like anelisa does cause what was happening between me and sipho was taking a toll on me i couldn't take it anymore its weighing me down...i went down on my knees and i called God i called his mighty name and i cried out all my problems to him each and every pain and hurt i prayed until i couldn't pray anymore after saying amen i felt a bit lighter i went to bed it was 7 at night and i didn't care my heart was heavy

***JASE' S POV ***

*** its been three weeks since we came back from kzn i must say i had the time of my life im sure even jay did and as for princess yeses she almost left us broke but hey we not complaining i mean shes our princess our pride and joy and as for grandma she was more than happy to see us she even cooked our favourite meals can you believe before going to bed she would ask us if we brushed our teeth...two fricken 32year old men being asked to brush their teeth before going to sleeping...she said we will always be her little boys imagine but hey we enjoyed our visit even our hard-core grandfather was happy to see us he said he knew we wouldn't show our stupid faces without the diamonds.. mxm.....the doorbell rang and i went to open ***

Me: Candice hey you didn't say you were coming

Candice : i knew you would give me some lame excuse so that i dont come...you so scarce babe whats up (she said walking in)

Me: been busy with work babe anyway hows you

Candice : ive been and still am horny and you (mxm i forgot how crazy she can be)

Me: (laughing)ive also been and still am horny
i said that grabbing her waist and pulling her towards me and smashing my lips against hers she kissed me back my hand went to her ass and i squeezed it tight...she pulled out of the kiss and went down she pulled my track pants down along with my boxers and i took off my vest...i felt her tongue lick the tip of my d
yeeses i was hard as a rock she began sucking on my d*** eish the things this chick was doing to me took me to heaven and back she went on

and on taking me all in to the back of her throat in and out in and out until i felt my body tense up and bamm i released all of my cum inside of her and then she swallowed damn she knew how that turns me on i pulled her up and kissed her hard while we were kissing she was busy stroking my d*** up and down..fuck..i picked her up and went to the bedroom i put her on the bed and i took off her clothes fast and went down on her i didn't have mercy on her pussy i ate it hard and fast she started screaming and calling my name so i knew she was near so i stopped and went to the drawer and took out a condom and rolled it on and i positioned myself on her pussy entrance and i entered her swiftly she gasped***

Candice : damn i forgot how huge mntungwa is ***i just smiled and i started moving in and out of her slowly she moaned and i went faster damn it felt good i picked up my pace and went harder and fast and she cried out loud i went

more harder and faster and she screamed my name and i felt her body tremble..i pulled out and turned her around and i slammed into her from the back she cried out and i continued fucking her hard until i heard her scream out my name again and her body trembling i wasnt far behind i felt my body tense up and i slammed into her hard and i released all the sperms that were stored in my balls into the rubber and i collapsed on top of her... damn***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/05, 10:33] Ron: INSERT....13

.

.

•

JASE'S POV

***after that steamy hot session we both fell asleep "God why me what have i done to deserve all this pain i keep on experiencing Lord please tell me what i have done so that i can apologise to you...isn't it enough.... isn't losing my parents enough.... isn't being raped for years and years enough... isnt losing my sister enough please tell me i need to know..why are you just letting people hurt me like this you suppose to protect me God why why is this happening please tell me it hurts God i dont know what to do please tell me what to do please tell me im tired when will i be happy i also deserve to be happy " i woke up sweating shit i checked the time it was 5 in the morning and next to me was Candice sleeping

peacefully...i went to the bathroom and splashed water on my face and brushed my teeth after that i stared at the mirror her cries kept on ringing in my head over and over...i closed my eyes and opened them again i could still hear her cry it sounded like who ever it was was praying and crying mxm i snapped out of it anyway it's was just a dream nothing else i went to take a shower and went downstairs to prepare breakfast for me and my bae...yeah we've been together for 5 years even though its been an on and off relationship during those 5years we always found a way to each other i know by now we should be engaged or married since we crazy about each other but im still waiting for the beast to confirm that shes the one for me i know many people would say im talking kak and that my heart should be the one telling me whether shes the one for me or not but in my family things dont work like that and plus something is missing man i just cant put

my finger on it but as much as im in denial with the whole thing of her not being the one for me the thing is the beast doesn't seem to react towards her since ive been with her she also been in trouble a lot of times but not even once have i had a bad feeling about her being in trouble including the time when she was kidnapped by her ex when she left him for me whom i killed after but hey i love this crazy coloured chick of mine ***

Me: fuck this headache (i put my hands on the counter to balance myself.. i suddenly have this terrible headache)

Candice : my love whats wrong (she said touching my shoulder)

Me: you awake

Candice : yeah i didn't feel you next to me so i thought i should come and join you and maybe make breakfast together....whats wrong babe you dont look ok

Me: i have this headache eish i dont know why

Candice : let me get you painkillers

Me: babe you know i dont drink those things i only buy them because of you il be fine dont worryor you can give me whats due to me i didn't get my morning glory you know (i said winking at her)

Candice : ok daddy where do you wanna have me

Me : right here (i picked her up and put her on top of the counter)

Me: let me go get some rubbers

Candice : rubbers? Or you meant a rubber

Me:(giving her a naughty smiles) four to be precise

Candice :hah jase

*** i winked at her and made my way to the stairs as i was about to climb it my skull felt like

was being stabbed with a sharp object...i
balanced my self with the wall and went down
slowly and sat down and then called out
Candice and she came running***

Candice : my love whats wrong

Me: head...headache

Candice : you know what you gonna drink those
pills even if i have to shove them down your
throat by force

***she left me there and cameback with a
glass of water and the painkillers i drank three
at once this headache is killing me....she made
me stand up and we slowly climbed the stairs
and went to the bedroom and i layed in bed fuck
this headache was painful minutes later her
phone rang and she answered looking all
nervous i can only hear what she was saying ***

Candice :hello

***she listened ***

Candice : ummh il be back later today

***she listened ***

Candice : ummh no look can i call you back im kinda busy now

***she listened ***

Candice : its not like that im just....

it looked like the caller interrupted her

Candice : ok ok i understand il be there please don't leave 30 minutes tops please

***she listened ***

Candice : no no no no dont pick me up il be there within 30minutes i promise

she put the phone down and looked at me

Candice : ummm lov...love i have to go my brother is back and he brought the things i asked im to bring me but..hes mad that i didn't sleep at my place so im sorry but i have to go you know how he can be

Me: its ok il be fine go

Candice : you sure

Me: yeah

Candice : ok thanks love let me take a quick shower

she did that came out lotioned and wore her clothes and took her things she didn't even put on her makeup..mmmmh

Candice: il keep on checking up on you ok love i have to go

she looked all excited all of a sudden. ..she kissed me and left....i took out my phone and called snakes

Snakes : kray

Me: black mamba i need you to track Candice's number and also get me all the info on the person who called her about 15 minutes ago and also use that tracker installed on her bracelet to find out where she is and hack into

the civilians cameras around if there are any to get a clear picture of who she's meeting up with Snakes : consider it done (he dropped the call)

***i took a deep breath...i hope she's not cheating on me or else she's dead nx.....maybe sleeping might tone down this hammering headache i closed my eyes and tried to sleep

KEDI'S POV

***i woke up with a heavy heart i got out of bed it was around 5 in the morning i knelt down and prayed and cried my heart out to God after feeling all satisfied i went to shower and lotioned and wore my black skinny jeans, Brown gladiator wedges, a white vest and a black blazer put on a little makeup tied my braids into a clean and tight bun i took my brown hand bag

and phone and i locked my door and left...when i arrived at work siphos call came through i just ignored it...the whole day was just normal nje and siphos has been calling non stop the whole day and i just ignored his calls mxm....it was knock off time and i just went straight home when i got there siphos car was parked outside but he wasn't inside the car i went straight to my flat...i opened and he was laying on the couch looking up***

Me: hi

Siphos:(he sat up straight)hey can we talk please

Me: mmmh now im worthy of your presence

Siphos: kedi please im trying here

Me: you keep on saying you trying like you doing me a favour...siphos if you dont want me anymore please tell me stop treating me like im nothing to you please

Sipho: hey... i love you ok more than life its self kedi i breathe for you...you are my world please kedi dont ever think i dont want you anymore or i dont love you please im heart belongs to you and no one else

Me: then talk to me whats going on

Sipho: kedi (he took a deep breath) i cant loose you please promise me you wont leave me please.....im scared of losing you trust me i wanna tell you but im scared you'll leave me and i cant have that (tears were running down his cheeks)i love you so much and im sorry for being distant and shouting at you and treating you bad

Me: for the last time whats going on sipho

Sipho: please come and sit down (i did and he took a deep breath again and he held my hands)remember i was summoned home(i nodded)

Sipho: and when i got there the parents told me

they...they..they found me a wife

Me: huh wh..what? (Tears rolled down my cheeks)

Sipho: its a daughter of my father's business partner they said my marriage to her has been arranged since i was in high school...i told them im in love with someone being you and that you the only woman i wanna marry but they just wont barge they even gave me an ultimatum that its either i marry her or i loose my inheritance

***i just looked at him with a blank face ive never i mean never felt so much pain in my life dont get me wrong ive been through horrific experiences in my life but this yho the last time i felt so much pain all at once it was when my parents died cause i was never prepared with thato she warned me that she might not comeback but this right now was painful sipho is my first boyfriend and i gave him my whole

heart and what hes telling me now is just too much.***

Me:si...sipho so you leaving me first it was my parents and then thato now its you am i cursed to a point that you all leave me

Sipho: kedi i cant loose my inheritance i just cant im sorry look dad said i can take you as a second wife please kedi

Me:(i stood up and pace up and down) no never i will never i say never be anyone's second wife is that all i am to you a second best sipho how can you say that(i was crying)

Sipho: sthandwa sam please its the only way please understand i cant loose my inheritance

Me: get out

Sipho: what

Me : get the hell out sipho i will never forgive you for this you promised me love and happiness...you said you'll never hurt me now

ompotsa masepa (you telling me shit)that you getting married to someone else(i was crying and shouting)

Sipho: baby please understand ilove you

Me: understand my fucken foot you say you love me you dont know what love is cause if you did you wouldnt hurt me like this

Sipho: stop this kedi ok ive always been there for you... when your sister died i was there for you even when you tried to commit suicide i was there for you and now im asking you to allow me to marry that girl and il make you my second wife you being all dramatic

Me: please leave im done..we are over go and marry her i dont care i may be a nobody and an orphan and i may have nothing but i will never settle for less and let my self be anyone's second best...leave sipho

Sipho: (he walked towards me and stood in front of me)listen and listen good kedi you are

mine and we will never be over not on this life time or the next you gonna be my second wife by fire or by force my heart belongs to you im just marrying this girl so that i dont loose my inheritance that's all....I'll give you sometime and space to process this whole thing i love you kedi till death

***he kissed my forehead and walked out I just sank to the floor and cried...is this bad luck or what ***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/05, 10:33] Ron: INSERT. ...14

.

.

.

JASE'S POV

*** "God this time im kneeling before you asking for your protection and for your guidance i know your delays are not your denials and i also know God that you never give your children burdens you very well know that they cant handle now im begging you to give me strength to overcome this pain im currently experiencing...please fight for me God i have no one else to fight for me please please (crying)"i woke up to someone shaking me roughly i opened my eyes while i pulled my gun under the pillow and pointed at the figure standing next to my bed i came back to my senses when i saw that it was jay fuck i was sweating and breathing heavily***

Me: the fuck jay i could have shot you

Jay: i knew you wouldn't anyway snakes has

been calling you and you didn't answer your phone and i also tried a couple of times and no answer so i decided to check up on...what's wrong you look like shit and since when do you sleep through out the day (he had a worried look on his face)

Me: i'm fine just had a lil headache and Candice forced me to drink painkillers

Jay: what's going on Jason i know it's not just the headache something is not right i mean i've been restless since last night

i know when he calls me by my full name he's dead serious

Me: i have been having these dreams eish i don't even know if i should call them dreams cause all i hear is a woman's voice crying and praying i don't know if i'm losing my mind or what but even after waking up i still hear her cries and the worse part is her cries cut right through my heart... each and every word she cries out is

filled with pain and sorrow eish i think im losing my mind

jay kept quiet he looked like he was thinking hard

Me: dude what time is it

Jay:around 8 i think we should call pops

Me: come on its just a dream dude nothing more

Jay: jase the fact that this dream keeps coming back shows something is up and not to mention that ive been restless since last night

Me : come on jay anyway look i have important things to worry about like finding out who candice was meeting up with earlier pass me my phone

***he did and i had 9 missed calls4 from snakes and 5 from jay and none from candice nx i called snakes back ***

Snakes : kray

Me: i heard you were worried about me (i chuckled)

Snakes : mxm anyway i emailed everything i found out about what your girl has been up to i even went deeper

Me: bad news?

Snakes : worst news bro... look i gotta go il see you two fools in three weeks time for the monthly meeting(he dropped the call and i took a deep breath)

Jay: bad news

Me: snakes said worst news pass me my laptop (he did)

***i took another deep breath and went to my emails and opened the one snakes send me and damn i wish i didn't ... fuck this girl has been busy looks like candice has been sleeping with rich men for money and i opened a video

attached to the email and i wish i didn't it was her naked busy sucking on some guy's d*** i stood up and gave Jay my laptop and went to the bathroomi peed then went to shower after i was done i lotioned and went to the bedroom and jay wasn't there i got dressed,took my gun and a silencer and went down stairs and jay was there busy gulping down on my whiskey straight from the bottle***

Me: easy on the whiskey bafo

Jay: i dont like this...you way too calm and i know when you like this shit is about to go down

Me: il be back dont worry il call you to clean up

Jay: bafo don't allow the beast to wake up trust me shes not worth it i can feel him

Me: im trying to control him by staying calm but it seems like im failing dismally

***i walked out and went to my car and i called

snakes to locate her and he said she at her place i drove straight there...i got out of my car and went to her floor got out and knocked on her door her friend Talia opened the door***

Talia: hey jase omg come in i haven't seen you in like forever

***i walked in and she was sitting on the couch and talia walked passed me and sat on a one sitter couch ***

Candice:oh my God babe you here im sorry i didn't check up on you my brother kept me busy with shopping sprees i was gonna call you before i sleep

***i looked at this lying bitch and i felt my self boil with anger...i felt my heart rate rise up and my palms get sweaty and itchy and I started seeing blurred visions for a couple of seconds and just right then i knew the beast was taking over and shit was about to go down ***

Me : talia leave

Talia: excuse me im not going anywhere leaving you with my friend looking this angry

i charged towards her and grabbed her by her weave and told candice to bring her staff and i dragged her to the door and tossed her outside...Candice brought her bag and shoes and i threw them at her i closed the door and locked it and put it in my pocket while talia was busy banging the door cursing and telling me to open..i turned and went to the lounge and candice wasn't in there i went straight to the bedroom i tried to open the door but it was locked

Me: OPEN THIS FUCKEN DOOR BEFORE I BREAK IT DOWN

i could hear her talk it was like she was on the phone...i kicked the door open i charged towards her and i snatched the phone from her and threw it straight to the wall and it broke into pieces

***NARRATED ***

****Candice looked at jase and she almost peed on herself he looked scary he had visible veins on his forehead and neck and armshis eyes were blood shot red and he was breathing like an angry lion his chest was moving up and down quickly...yes he had a muscular body like he knew his way around the gym but right now his muscular body looked a size bigger than its normal size...she took a step back****

Candice : baby i can expla.... (a painful and hot slap ended on her face and she fell on the floor crying)

Jase: YOU A PROSTITUTE NOW CANDICE...YOU SLEEP WITH MEN FOR MONEY HUH DONT I GIVE YOU MONEY R30000 A MONTH CANDICE AND ON TOP OF IT I PAY FOR YOUR RENT,GROCERIES AND YOUR BROTHERS

VARSITY FEES... SO ITS NOT ENOUGH NOW
....TALK ! (he roared...his voice was deeper
than usual)

Candice : (crying)im sorry it was a mistake i
was just greedy please forgive me jase im
sorry

***jase went to her and grabbed her by her neck
and pinned her against the wall and squeezed
his hand tight around her neck... candice's legs
were floating on air she was battling to breath
while jase kept on squeezing his hand tighter he
could see her eyes rolling back and her face
turning pale so he let loose of his hand and she
collapsed on the floor coughing hysterically and
trying to breath at the same time...jase went
and sat on the bed and stared at her she was
still coughing hysterically and trying to catch
her breath he pulled his gun out of his back and
put a silencer on and crocked it...Candice
looked up and her eyes popped out more
tears streamed down her cheeks she was even

shaking ***

Jase: what dont i do for you candice..if you needed more money you could have told me....why huh i know ive cheated on you before but after you found out and ended up in hospital because of stress i stopped i vowed to never hurt you like that ever.... three years candice three fucken years ive been faithful to you ive never cheated on you since you were hospitalized three years ago i decided to grow up and focus on you on us...WHAT HAVEN'T I DONE FOR YOU HUH...TALK BITCH! DONT JUST SIT THERE AND CRY THOSE FAKE CROCODILE TEARS ANSWER ME...WHAT HAVEN'T I DONE FOR YOU TO PROSTITUTE YOURSELF FOR MONEY (he shouted)

***her keeping quiet was actually making jase more angry he was controlling the beast but it was a matter of time before it took over cause his anger kept on rising.he stood up from the bed and candice quickly stood up from the

floor and tried to run to the insuite bathroom but she wasn't fast enough cause jase caught her and punched her hard on the face and she fell on floor jase went to her and checked her pulse and she was still alive she just passed out he picked her up and put her on the bed and he grabbed a chair and sat next to her and stared at her asking himself whether to burn her alive,put a bullet through her skull or to just let her go cause he still loved her***

****KEDI'S POV****

***It was around 8 at night i showered wore my pjs and got down on my knees and prayed for God to guide me through all this pain i was feeling i prayed hard and after i was satisfied i went to bed..i was woken up by my alarm i did my morning routine got dressed and went to work my day was just normal nje i didn't get a

thousands missed calls from siphos like yesterday and i was glad but the truth is i missed him and his touch but hey i think it was time i learned to live without him cause im not about to settle for less and be his second wife i also have pride i will never agree to such nonsense like my mother did yes my dad loved her but the first wife treated me and her like shit so did dad's family so im not about to let history repeat its self through me....i got home cooked myself a nice meal and ate after that i took a shower and got down on my knees and prayed after i was done a phone call came through the number wasn't saved i answered***

Me: hello

Caller: listen here you witch stay the hell away from my son hes getting married next month and if you still value your miserable life you'll stay away from him and know that i will never allow this stupid idea of his of taking you as his second wife but if he does succeed know that il

make your life a living hell until suicide will be the only way out for you...whatever muti you used on him you better go back to your sangoma and reverse it..... or death will come to you in heart beat stupid witch nx (she dropped the call)

*** tears just rolled down my cheeks i layed my head on the pillow and cried my self to sleep....my life neh will i ever find happiness..will i ever love again? This were the thoughts going through my mind while i cried myself to sleep ***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/05, 10:33] Ron: INSERT.15

.

.

.

KEDI' POV

***i woke up early in the morning took a shower and did the rest of my morning routine took my things and went to work as i was busy working i could see there was a bit of commotion my colleagues were busy than usual i mean everyone was hands on...ohhh yah the new boss is coming today i heard rumours that hes gonna reshuffle the whole management and fire and demote the incompetent ones but hey its just rumours anyway lunch time came and i went down stairs to the cafeteria to buy something to drink since i brought a lunchbox with me after paying for my juice i turned and BOOM i bumped into someone i hit his chest hard with my face and i stumbled back a bit almost falling but he quickly caught me

damn***

Voice : shit....are you ok

Me: ummm yeah damnis your chest made of steel or a rock

Him: (chuckling)i guess it is since you hit it hard and almost fell on your back you lucky i caught you

i look up at him and LORD HAVE MERCY there stood a handsome coloured guy .. he had a smirk on his face which showed his dimples did i tell you he was tall and muscular and he was wearing a navy blue suit that fitted him perfectly and it looked expensive...gosh and his deep voice yho...i quickly came back to my senses and just realized that i was staring at him..i immediately frowned

Me: dude really ... lucky ? what were you thinking standing in my personal space you should be standing there (i pointed with my finger where he should be standing looking all

annoyed and shouting)

Him : (he was no longer smiling or smirking)
lets agree to disagree about the personal space
thing and you too you should watch where you
going you cant go around bumping into people
do you know how much this suit cost...now it
has your cheap make-up on it nx (he said that
and moved closer to the counter)

Me: nx arrogant jerkass

*** i walked away quickly hurt as hell...

bastard....whose make-up is he calling cheap nx
people where watching now and i didn't want to
argue with someone like him i mean he looked
like a rich guy his suit said it all and as for me
the clothes im wearing dont even cost R800
and plus there's a saying "avoid a fool in order
to avoid noise " so yeah....i walked back to my
work station and sat on my chair and ate my
lunch but eish i was hurt i mean that asshole
said im wearing cheap make-up who the hell

does he think he is nx anyway i have more important things to worry about or stress about than some arrogant bastard ...i was disturbed by a call and it was siphosho...yho modimo wa kgotso (God of peace) my problems are real shem i let it ring straight to voicemail..he calls three more times and i still dont answer i just let it ringfour hours later it was knock off time as i was busy packing my things away ready to leave anelisa walks straight to me***

Anelisa: hey ..you good

Me: yeah why

Anelisa: pertunia said you were busy arguing with mr khumalo downstairs

Me: mxm ooh so his surname is khumalo nx anyway that fool bumped into me and didn't even say sorry i almost fell lisa and he had the nerve to say my cheap make-up messed up his "expensive " suit nx arrogant bastard (i was starting to get pissed)

Anelisa: haai ntombi (girl) do you know who mr khumalo is

Me :(i interrupted her)i dont care if his father is barrack Obama and his grand father is the founder of boko haram and his great grand father was Hitler he had no right to talk to me like that... absolutely no right

Voice: wow all this insult because i called your make-up cheap

we turned and looked at the direction of where that deep voice was coming from and there stood mr arrogant mxm... anelisa looked all nervous and scared khante whats wrong with her

Anelisa: umm I'll see you monday ok (she walked away and i continued with what i was doing)

Him: are you always this grumpy and mean or is it just today (i kept quiet)

Him: oohk now you turned mute wow(i clicked my tongue)

Him: i see you one of those uptight girls who thinks the world owes them something (i turned and looked at him up and down)

Me: and why are you talking to me

Him: cause i want to annoy you more and i can see its working

Me: mxm

i took my things and walked passed him he had that same smirk on his face....i walked to the bus stop and took a taxi to my place i got there and siphos car was outside eish

JASE'S POV

*** it was arround 11 at night i went to the kitchen and came back with a bucket full of tap

water and i emptied the whole bucket of water on her face....she woke up gasping for air and coughing nx i went to sit on the chair after she was done with her coughing and what not she looked my way and saw i was stil holding a gun and fear was all over her face she started trembling***

Me: you know what they say"when life gives you lemons,you make lemonade "(i chuckled)you know i sat here battling with my self on how to handle this situation....whether to burn you alive or to just put a bullet through your skull or to just let you go and do you wanna know what i decided to do (i asked looking at her and she kept quiet)

Me:I FUCKEN ASKED YOU A QUESTION

Candice: ye..yes i wanna know (she said in almost a whisper)

Me:to let you go (she looked surprised by my decision)but know that me and you are

done....you never gonna get a cent from me the only thing i wont stop doing is pay for your little brother's varsity fees cause i wont punish him for your stupid mistakes and you listen and listen good if i see your stinking self anywhere near my house or work place il kill you(she interrupted me)

Candice : jase please dont do this im s...

Me: SHUT UP DONT INTERRUPT ME WHEN IM TALKING(she kept quiet)SINCE YOU DECIDED TO FIND BLESSERS TO PAY FOR YOUR EXPENSIVE LIFESTYLE..YOU CAN CONTINUE PROSTITUTING YOURSELF TO PAY FOR YOUR RENT AND OTHER THINGS IM FUCKEN DONE WITH YOU CANDICE

i stood up from the chair and took off the silencer from the gun and put my gun on safe mode and looked at her

Me : and to think i was gonna buy you a house and a car for your birthday nx you disgust me

***i walked to the door with her calling and screaming my name..i got in my car and drove straight to my house i got there and jay's car was still there i got out and went inside jay saw me walking into the lounge and he stood up quickly ***

Jay: do i need to go clean up

Me: nah i let her live shes not worth it

Jay : but i felt your beast wake up

Me: i managed to control him it wasn't easy but i did... look im gonna take a shower and sleep i have a busy day tomorrow

Jay:you sure you gonna be ok

Me: yeah m sure and im thankful shes not the chosen one imagine if she was dude nx anyway are you sleeping here

Jay: nah i have a meeting in joburg tomorrow so i need to prepare

Me: with that old fool mr Anderson

Jay: yeah eish and you know how annoying he is nx

Me: mina at least il be dealing with amateurs tomorrow who are actually scared of us

Jay : no no no next time im dealing with amateurs and you'll deal with Anderson

***i chuckled and went upstairs surprisingly i wasn't that hurt about my break up with Candice i mean yeah my ego is bruised but i can live with the fact that we done and im glad i always used protection with her imagine being infected with STDs from all those men nx but i must still go do some tests net for control ***

***NARRATED ***

***jay was mad as hell at Candice for playing his brother like that he always told jase that he doesn't trust her and that she was just with him

for his money even though jase knew deep down that shes just a gold digger he still stayed with her...for what jay didn't know and he could tell that even jase himself didnt know why he continued to stay with her maybe it was because he felt guilty for cheating and her being hospitalised because of depression....he drove straight to Candice's place and knocked on the door...Candice quickly went to open hoping it was jase that maybe he didn't mean what he said but to her surprise it was jay***

Candice : wha..what are you doing here (jay didn't answer her he just push himself in and Candice slowly closed the door and turned only to find jay standing next to her...he then grabbed Candice by her neck and pinned her against the door

Jay : i see jase roughed you up a bit but its not enough if you ask me(he looked straight into her eyes with so much anger)

Candice : get your hands off me

Jay: you gonna pay for playing jase you bitch
im gonna make your life a living hell to a point
were you will wish jase should have just killed
you today by the time im done with you nc nc nc
suicide will be the only option for you nx

***he gave her an evil smile and pushed her
away from the door and walked out Candice
was left scared as hell she realised right then
that she messed with the wrong man ***

JASE'S POV

***i woke up early in the morning, showered and
wore my navy blue suit with a white shirt
without a tie , black formal shoes and my
favourite black and gold cufflinks and also my
gold rolex watch i took my laptop and put it
inside my laptop bag i also took some files ive

been walking on concerning this new consulting company and went to my audi Q7 and left...i got there and went inside straight to the receptionist***

Me:hi

Lady: good morning how may i help you sir

Me: yes i have an appointment with the CEO of this company

lady: ok your surname sir

she said that not even looking at me she was doing something on her phone busy chewing gum and it was irritating as fuck

Me: (i took a deep breath cause i was getting pissed) khumalo

***her head shot up immediately and she looked like she was scared or something ***

lady: ummmm oh my God he....hes waiting for..for you s...sir 3rd floor the first door you'll see with CEO sticker on the door but you wont

get lost cause he has his own PA.....oh my God
what im i saying

***i just went to the lift one thing i knew for sure
is shes fired nx....i arrived to the third floor met
up with the CEO we discussed alot of shit and i
requested a meeting with all the management
staff immediately after lunch since it was
already lunch time and that they should all be
present in that meeting and whoever isn't
present should consider themselves fired i
asked the CEO's PA to take me on a company
tour before she went to lunch and she did she
showed me around and everyone was busy or
pretending to be busy we went to the ground
floor and there was a cafeteria it was lunch time
so i told her she can go have her lunch il be fine
and that il find my way back so she left...i was
a bit thirsty so i went to the fridge and i took
bottled water and went to pay there was a line
and there was a guy and a lady in front of me my
phone beep and i took it out of my pocket and

checked mxm it was jay's sms***

Jay:"i swear if this son of a bitch wasn't a potential client i would put a bullet on his skull right now"

Me:"what happened "**send **

Jay:"hes being stubborn for nothing and causing unnecessary drama for nothing
"**received**

Me:"jay dont leave that place without him signing that contract you know whats at stake if he doesn't " **send**

i look up and it was the lady paying now so i move forward and concentrate on my phone

Jay:"i think its time i put jay away and bring out spilotro to make this fool sign:**received **

me:"all the best spilo "**send **

Jay:"tsek"**received **

****i move forward without looking and bamm i

bump into the lady that was in front of me she hits my lower chest with her face and stumbled back a little almost falling but i acted quickly and caught her...fuck***

Me : shit...are ok

Her: umm yeah..damn is your chest made of steel or a rock

me:(i chuckled she looked cute rubbing her forehead) i guess it is since you hit it hard with your face and almost fell on you back you lucky i caught you

Her: (she raised her head and just stared checking me out and then that stare turned into a frown)

Her: dude really. ...lucky? What were you thinking standing in my personal space you should be standing there ***she said pointing with her finger where i should be standing..she raised her voice a bit damn now people where watching..as much as i didn't want to i had to

put her in her place)

me: (with a serious face)lets agree to disagree about the personal space thing now you too you should watch were you going you cant go around bumping into people...now look at my suit do you know how much it cost and now i have your cheap make-up on it nx

***i left her there i payed for my water right then i heard her say "nx jerkass " i turned to look at her but she was already walking away looking pissed i went upstairs and the PA said everyone is in the boardroom mxm i thought i said after lunch time anyway i went in and did what i came here to do..being reshuffling the management and demoting some of the dead weight and placing some of my guys as management employees since we gonna be using this company as a front for our illegal business i had to make sure everything looks legit anyway after the meeting i enquired about the mystery lady and i found out her name is

kedibone tamarsha malapane and she works at customer service department as a call center agent...i took my things and headed there i don't even know why but i was excited a bit i got there and as i was about to enter i heard her sounding annoyed and her and another female were talking about me i listened carefully and what i heard made my interest towards her more real and strongi continued to listen to their conversation until she said something like"she doesn't care whether my father might be Barack Obama and whether my grand father is the founder of boko haram and if my great grandfather was Hitler "damn i almost cracked up with laughter i had to go so i interrupted their convo***

Me: (walking in) wow all this insult because i called your make-up cheap

they turned and looked at me damn she looked beautiful and innocent she looked cute looking all annoyedthe friend walked away

Me:are you always this grumpy and mean or is it just today (she kept quiet)oohk now you turned mute wow (she clicked her tongue and i just smiled like a retard)

Me:(still smiling)i see you one of those uptight girls who thinks the world owes them something (she scanned me up and down with a frown)

Her:and why are you talking to me

Me: cause i wanna annoy you more and i can see its working

Her: mxm

she took her things and walked out leaving me feeling all excited and shit

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment ??

#thechozenone

[08/05, 10:33] Ron: INSERT.16

.

.

.

KEDI'S POV

***i went inside and found siphos cooking
aarg...***

Me: hi

Siphos: hey beautiful ummm go and freshen up
supper will be ready in 15 minutes

Me: siphos what is this...what are you doing

Siphos: (smiling)cooking for my love now go and
freshen up il call you once im done

***i left and went to the bedroom and took a
shower and then i wore my pjs and went to the

lounge ***

Sipho: ooh you here i was about to come and call you please sit and let me bring our food

***i sat down and he brought the food and i said a silent prayer and dug in...wow the food tasted good actually ever since ive known sipho hes never cooked for me and now all of a sudden he decides to spoil me ai i hope hes not doing all this to soften me up about the second wife issue ***

Me: i didnt know you can cook...the food tastes good

Sipho: there's alot you still have to know about me im a jack of all trades (he said smiling)

Me: mmmm

***we continued eating in silence until he broke the awkward silence that filled the room ***

Sipho: ummm have you thought about the second wife issue (mxm i knew it nx)

Me: my answer is still no (i said not looking at him)

Sipho : i didn't give you some time to think about this for you to tell me no...i dont need your permission to get married ok

Me: you know what i dont have time for this...so this is the real you huh uve been pretending all along to being this nice guy khante you were waiting for opportunities like this one to unleash the real you(i said standing up)

Sipho:(he stood up too)pretending kedi...you the one who's pretending i mean ive shown you nothing but love..ive been there for you and now just one thingone thing i ask from you and you can't give me

Me: you know what we are going around in circles here i told you i will not be anyone's second wife so please go right ahead and marry your chosen one by your parents AND LEAVE ME THE HELL ALONE

Sipho: i thought i told you ul be my second wife by fire or by force...you are mine kedi you hear me.mine and mine alone..il slay Dragons for you

Me: but you choose money over me

Sipho: look ive worked really hard for my inheritance for me to just walk away from it

***i heard enough of his nonsense i tried walking away but he grabbed my my hand and pulled me towards him and smashed his lips into mine i didn't kiss him back... i tried to pull away but he wouldn't let me instead he bit my lower lip forcing me to kiss him back and i did he pushed me back until my back was against the wall and then he pulled my pyjama pants down along with my underwear...his lips left mine and went to my neck and he sucked on it really hard while rubbing my clit a moan escaped my lips and then he unbuckled his belt and he unzipped his trouser and pulled it down

along with his boxers quickly the next thing my leg is up and he roughly inserts himself i cry out loud cause it was painful but no he doesn't stop instead he goes in and out of me faster and harder a groan escapes his mouth and he whispers in my ear***

Sipho: fuck you so tight and warm shiiiit...

he continued to fuck me hard until he slammed into me hard and deep and he growled loud i knew he was done as for me i didn't enjoy it one bit all i felt was pain through it all....he pulled out and his juices ran down my legs he went to the bedroom and came back with a towel and i cleaned myself after that i wore my underwear and pyjama pants and out of the blue he picked me up and he went to the bedroom and put me on top of the bed gently and then got on top of me and he pecked my lips looking straight into my eyes

Sipho: im sorry i was a bit rough and didn't wait

for you to come its just that i missed being inside of your tight pussy so bad (he kept quiet and took a deep breath)i cant loose you kedi you are my soulmate i love you with everything in me...i fell in love with you the first time i saw you in that supermarket.... you know for the first time in three years i decided to go visit my grandmother from my mothers side that day (he chuckled abit) i woke up in the morning and i had the urge i couldn't ignore to see her so i passed that mall to buy her groceries and there you were looking beautiful in that afro of yours damn and you were cold towards me (i interrupted him)

Me: no i wasnt you were just cocky nje

Sipho:(he laughed a bit) lets agree to disagree on that one (he perked my lips again) i love you sthandwa sam whole heartedly i cant chose between you and my inheritance in fact i will never chose because i chose both...why cant i have both huh i worked so hard for that firm for

me to just loose it and you are my soulmate and you were created for me kedi you complete me...so please my love agree for me to do this please your blessing will mean the world to me
***tears just came out..and he kissed me gosh the kiss was good...no matter how crazy sipho and his proposal is God knows i love him whole heartedly too he Finally broke the kiss and smiled ***

Sipho:i have to go love i have an important meeting tomorrow morning and i need to prepare for it

Me: ok

Sipho: i have a plan for us kedi trust me you'll like it just allow me to do this and please dont leave me and il live to make you happy i swear....(he took a deep breath and he stared into my eyes for a while)

Sipho: marry me

Me: huh (i said that with my eyes wide open)

Sipho: marry me kedi please

Me: sipho i c.. (he interrupted me)

Sipho: look you dont have to answer me now but know that you have a week to think about it and give me your answer but know that me and you will get married even if your answer is no

(i just looked at him with a blank face)

he kissed me again and got off me said his goodnight and left...i tried to sleep but i couldn't i had so much in my mind and geez i was even considering his proposal did dad also sweet talk mom like this for her to be his second wife eish im confused like really confused ...i eventually fell asleep

*** the whole week was just hard i kept on thinking about sipho 's proposal and also i found out that Mr khumalo..you remember him

...YEP hes my new boss apparently he bought SPM DIRECT and yho ive been embarrassed about our encounter that day i mean what if he fires me anyway im glad i haven't seen him since then...things are a bit hectic here at work the reshuffling and renovations are making thing even harder....my phone interrupts me from my thoughts i check it and its an sms from siphos it reads" my love come to my house after work we need to talk " i reply by saying " ok" the rest of the day was just hectic as usual knock off time came and i called a cab and i arrived at siphos place and i knocked and there was no answer i even dialled his numbers and he didn't answer my call since he gave me a copy of his house keys i let myself in while i was inside i heard voices coming from the lounge as i got closer it sounded more like moans i reached the lounge and i couldn't believe what i was seeing....it was siphos with a woman they were both naked and she was

ontop of him they were having sex...she was busy riding him***

Me: si...sipho (i said with a breaking voice and tears were already gushing out)

***he quickly turned his head and shock was written on his face he roughly pushed the woman off him and she fell on her back on the ground and he stood up gosh he wasn't even wearing a condom ***

Sipho: baby i can....

***i ran out of the house before he can even finish his sentence with him calling my name and i ran outside the gate and just continued to run i didn't even know where i was running to i just ran like i was being chased by a mad person its like i was losing my mind until i heard a car hooting and tires screeching and my mind just froze and then it was lights out for me

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/05, 10:33] Ron: INSERT.....17

.

.

.

KEDI'S POV

*** I heard a voice calling me it sounded far it felt like i was dreaming i tried opening my eyes but they were heavy that voice kept on calling until i opened my eyes only to be met by siphos eyes***

Sipho: my love are you ok

***i didn't answer him but instead i checked my

surroundings and i saw mr khumalo standing next to a car looking at us with a serious look on his face then i figured hes the one who almost hit me with his car ..sipho helped me sit up***

Me: get your hands off me (it came out as a whisper)

Sipho : my love please lets talk about it let me explain... (i interrupted him)

Me: its over sipho and i hate you i hate you with passion

Sipho : kedi please baby please

i stood up and immediately felt dizzy i balanced my self with the car's bonnet...sipho tried to touch me and i pushed him

Sipho : babe please let.. (i interrupted him)

Me: are you deaf i said dont touch me its over go back to you whore im done with your sorry ass..i hate you sipho i hate you (i was crying)

***the pain i felt was unbearable it felt like someone was stabbing my heart with a sharp object mr khumalo came close to me holding a bottle of water and gave it to me ***

Mr.K: drink up (i took the bottle from him and drank the water) you hit the ground hard with your head you should get checked out

Sipho: you can leave now il get her checked out(he said that with an attitude)

Mr.K: il leave when she tells me to leave sipho : baby lets go il driv... (i interrupted him)

Me: WHO'S YOUR BABY HUH WHERE YOU THINKING ABOUT ME WHEN THAT WHORE WAS BUSY RIDING YOU(shouting)

Sipho : DO NOT FUCKEN RAISE YOUR VOICE AT ME YOU HEAR ME NO MATTER HOW ANGRY YOU ARE YOU'LL RESPECT ME AS YOUR MAN... U YANGIZWA(YOU HEAR ME)

***he was pointing a finger at me moving closer

to me while shouting back***

Mr.K: touch her and il rip your heart out of you chest(he said looking at siphos with an intimidating look)

Siphos: STAY OUT OF THIS THIS IS BETWEEN ME AN MY FIANCE NOW LEAVE BEFORE I FUCK YOU UP

Me: WHOSE YOUR FIANCE IM SURE YOU NOT TAKING ABOUT ME YOU BASTARD

i saw siphos lift his hand up and the next thing i see him fall on his back on the ground.... ooh my God mr khumalo punched him

Mr.K: YOU HAVE THE NERVE TO MAN HANDLE A WOMAN INFRONT OF ME YOU PIECE OF SHIT

***he kicked him on his stomach hard while siphos was down while shouting at him... siphos cried out omg i couldn't believe it i mean my boss fighting for me....for the first time

someone was fighting for me he left siphon and went to pick my bag up on the ground and came to me and grabbed my arm and dragged me to the passenger side and opened the door for me and ordered me to get in who he looked scary i didn't wanna argue with him...he went to the driver's side and got in and drove off leaving siphon on the ground as for me i was still crying silently i was really hurt siphon and that girl's image of them having sex was still playing in my mind.... suddenly i felt suffocated i felt like i was losing my breath ***

Me: plea....pleas...please stop the car i...i can't breathe..th

he stopped the car on the side of the road and i quickly got out of the car and bend down with my hands on my knees trying to calm down....i felt a hand rubbing my back gently

Mr.K: come and sit down

***he held my hand and pulled me towards a

big rock and i sat on it while he crouched in front of me holding both my hands ***

Mr.K: try to calm down and breath in and out...you gonna be fine(i shook my head)

Me: why...why would he..he do this to me...am i not beautiful enough or maybe im bad in bed or maybe he lied he doesn't love me... (he interrupted me)

Mr.K: STOP IT (he shouted)you will not belittle yourself or doubt yourself because of that son of a bitch....he doesn't even show remorse instead hes reprimanding you about raising your voice at him and you here looking and feeling like shit while he should be the one whose supposed to feel like that

Me: sir you dont un...understand hes the only person in this world who was the closest thing to family...i have no one hes the only one i considered familywhy..why.. (i cried)

Mr.K: kedi family sometimes betray you to a

point where you'll ask yourself if you really related to them (he took a deep breath) the is a saying that goes like this " blood makes you related but loyalty makes you family" that boy is not loyal to you so never consider him as family....you lucky you can choose your family some people are stuck with their crazy and evil families take this as a lesson and try to move on from it cause trust me hes not worth it and please call me jase this sir thing is making me feel older than my age (he smiled revealing his dimples gosh this guy)

***well hes right the people who are blood related to me treated me like shit i mean "sam and his siblings" as for step monster at least we not blood related and thato was the best thing that has ever happened to me and she wasn't even blood related to me so yeah i guess MR here is right but still its not easy i still love siphos so much and it wont be easy getting over him just like that ***

Jase: come on lets go

he stood up and also made me stand up and he wiped my tears and we just stared into each other's eyes for sometime then he cleared his throat and held my hand and pulled me towards the car i got in and he also did and we drove off...the was an awkward silence in the car then he took out his phone and dialled and put it on his ear

Jase:doctor v are you still at the hospital **he listened **

Jase:ok i need a favour im bringing someone umm a friend she fell and hit her head hard on the floor i just need you to check if shes ok**he listened **

Jase: great we on our way...see you just now (he dropped the call)we going to the hospital to get you checked out

Me: ok

i started to have a massive headache..i held my head and screamed a bit while shutting my eyes

Jase: whats wrong

Me:head...headache

Jase: dont worry im almost there ok hold on

we finally arrived and quickly got out and he opened my door and i got out and he scooped me up and quickly rushed inside yoh i was in some serious pain i shut my eyes tight while screaming...he put me on a stretcher and i was wheeled away i opened my eyes and i saw blurred visions and it was lights out again

i heard a beeping sound and i opened my eyes slowly i scanned the room and i remembered that mr khumalo brought me to the hospital...the door swang open and he entered gosh this guy is handsome shame

Jase: you awake (he said smiling)how are you

feeling (he said sitting on a chair next to my bed)

Me: i have a slight headache

Jase: dont worry the doctor said you'll be fine in a couple of days the headaches will stop..he said you had a mild concussion but its nothing serious u will be fine

Me:ok ummm what day is it

Jase: Saturday around 11 in the morning

Me: oh my God

Jase: its ok you needed to rest umm i bought you clothes to change and toiletries ohh and youve been discharged but the doctor would like to see you before we leave in the mean time go and shower and il tell the nurse to bring your breakfast

Me: ok

***i got off the bed and i felt a bit dizzy then it stopped i took the bag and went to the

bathroom and opened the bag and everything inside was new gosh anyway i showered after the shower i got dressed and went out and he was sitting on a chair concentrating on his phone i cleared my throat and he looked up quickly***

Jase: come and eat we have to go

i put my bag down and sat on the bed and ate after that the doctor entered

Doc: miss malapane i see you ready to go home

Me: yeah

Doc: you suffered a mild concussion but you will be fine just rest and drink you medication and you'll be fine..

Me: ok thank you doctor

Doc: its a pleasure my dear just take it easy ok (i nodded)ok khumalo please man take care of her

Jase: (smiling)you know i will doc

the doctor left and mr khumalo took my bag and we left

Me : my pills

Jase: dont worry i have them

we got into his car and he drove out of the hospital

Me: ummm i took a cheap medical aid it wont pay for my admission there

Jase: dont worry about it i took care of it

Me: umm ok you'll send me the bill but I'll be able to pay you with instalments

Jase:(he gave me a look i didn't understand) im the one who took you to that private hospital cause a very good friend of mine is a doctor there and i trust him so please i said dont worry about it ok

Me: oohk ummm thanx

Jase:(he smirked and nodded)

we arrived at my flat.... wait how did he know i live here anyway he parked and got out and came to my side to open the door for me....he went to take out my "new" traveling bag and my hand bag and i looked on my left and damn i saw siphos carGod please i dont have the strength and energy to deal with him

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/05, 10:33] Ron: INSERT.....18

.

.

.

KEDI'S POV

*** jase locked the car and started walking but i just stood still he turned and looked at me in a questioning manner ***

Jase: and now... what's wrong

Me: hes here his car is here and I'm sure hes inside my flat... he has a spare key (i said that in a low tone)

Jase: lets go you need to rest and not stress about useless people (i took a deep breath) come on lets go

***we walked in and i turned the handle and the door wasn't locked i walked inside and siphon was laying on the couch facing up and there was a half empty bottle of whiskey on top of the table....jase also got in and he placed my traveling bag on the floor and placed my hand bag on top of the couch siphon hasn't moved an inch hes still facing up with his eyes open since he was blinking i knew he wasn't dead so i turned and looked at jase who was looking at

sipho***

Me: ummm something to drink

Jase :do you have bottled water

Me: yeah

as i turned and was about walk towards my small kitchen sipho spoke

Sipho: so you decided to be a whore finally

Me: askies (i said turning to look at him)just because you a manwhore it doesn't mean im a whore

Sipho: what did you call me (i kept quiet) i asked you a question (i continued to keep quiet)

he stood up and walked towards me and stopped half way and turned to look at jase

Sipho: i see you love left overs huh

Jase: you know what they say one man's trash is another man's treasure(he said with a serious face)

Sipho: you see this one shes worse than trash
shes damaged goods she once told me her
step brother used to rape her since she was
what 14,15, or16 until a few months back

***he said the age part looking at me with a
smirk and raised eyebrows....at that moment
my world came crashing down before my eyes
who the pain and betrayal i felt was out of this
world...i looked at him with tears running down
my cheeks with my bottom lip trembling i didn't
even look at jase i just couldn't***

Sipho: you see kedi you are nothing without
me...you just an empty shell remember im your
first boyfriend so no woman forgets her first
boyfriend you may fuck around with this
coloured boy but you'll always come back home
my love back to me back to this (he said
grabbing his crotch)...you're mine kedi i told
you only death will do us apart and you'll be my
second wife by fire or by force

Jase: kedi go pack a bag we leaving

i was frozen i couldn't move i couldn't believe that this is siphos the guy i love with my whole heart

Siphos : shes not going anywhere with you

Jase:WHAT ARE YOU WAITING FOR I TOLD YOU GO AND PACK NOW! (He said shouting with an intimidating tone)

Siphos: AND I SAID SHES NOT GOING ANYWHERE WITH YOU...DO YOU KNOW WHO THE FUCK I AM JUST BECAUSE YOU MANAGED TO PUNCH ME YESTERDAY IT DOESN'T MEAN YOU'LL SUCCEED THIS TIME AROUND YOU BASTARD (he shouted back at jase)

***jase turned to look at me and yho his face was turning red his eyes were turning dark and he had a visible vein on his forehead yho i was beyond scared he looked scary i quickly walked to the bedroom but siphos quickly held

my arm tight and turned me around and slapped me across my face really hard and i immediately saw stars and my headache started hammering ...i closed my eyes with tears running down my cheeks and i felt siphos hand let go of my arm and then i heard noises and things breaking i opened my eyes and i only saw darkness i closed my eyes again and the noise of things breaking continued and what sounded like siphos screaming i opened my eyes again and i saw blurred visions i bend down with my hands on my knees i closed them again praying silently to God to not allow me become blind while i was silently praying with tears running down my cheeks and closing my eyes shut i felt a hand on my shoulders ***

Voice : kedi are you ok(it was jase's deep voice... i kept quiet)

Jase:kedi...hey whats wrong

Me: i can..cant see(my voice was broken i was

scared)

Jase: what do you mean you can't see

Me: i see darkness (i cried)

he made me stand up straight and told me to open my eyes i did and i saw blurred visions again i closed them quickly

Me: i see blurred visions (i continued to cry)

Jase: its ok you'll be fine ok you'll be fine i promise (he said with a panic tone)

***he scooped me up and i just held him tight he walked to the direction of the door i heard a door open it felt like a car door and he told me to bend my head forward and i did he put me in and the door closed and then started the car ***

Jase: my house now and bring everything (he kept quiet for a minute or so and spoke again then the car moved)did you get it **he kept quiet **

Jase: yeah **he kept quiet again ** ok we will

talk when i get home..**he kept quiet again ***
sure....

Jase:(touching my hand) do you still see blurred
visions

Me: im...scared to open my eyes

Jase: just open them one more time to check
please

***i did and i could see even though its not a
very clear vision but i could see the road and i
turned to look at him and i saw him it wasn't a
clear vision but i could see him but this stupid
headache was still hammering (tears
continued to roll down my face***

Me : i can see you but my vision is not clear but
the headache is back

Jase: (he took a deep breath it was like he was
relieved)we almost there you'll be fine dont
worry ok (i just nodded)

*** i guess we arrived cause the car stopped i

kept my eyes shut a door opened and he held my hand and pulled me out and then he scooped me up and walked for while and he put me down it felt like a bed (i kept quiet) it went silent until i heard voice

Voice: whats going on

Jase:that motherfucker slapped her and she said shes seeing darkness and then blurred visions but now she said she can see but her vision is not clear and she has headaches yesterday she fell and hit her head hard

Voice: ok let me do my magic il call you when im done

Jase: ok i trust you doc

i felt his scent coming closer

Jase: (touching the tip of my chin and pushing it up gently)open your eyes and look at me

Me:(i shook my head)im scared what if i see darkness

Jase:you wont please open your eyes (i shook my head again)please tamarsha look at me (ok did he just call me by my middle name)

i opened my eyes and the vision was getting better but it was still not clear

Jase: can you see me

Me : yeah but its not clear its like i have something in my eyeballs thats blocking my clear vision

Voice: its your nerves dont worry its nothing big it looks like you wont need any surgery so yeah its nothing major relax

Jase: ok mr professional has spoken anyway this is muzi hes a family doctor and a good friend so you in good hands hes good at what he does trust me

***he brushed my cheek and kissed my forehead and said he'll be outside the door and i nodded...he left and then muzi made me lie

down on my back and put a drip on me and injected something on it i think and i felt drowsy and sleepy instantly and it was lights out***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/05, 10:33] Ron: INSERT. ...19

.

.

.

JASE' POV

*** i dont know what was happening to me ive never felt like this before i mean ive been with different women my whole life from different

walks of life and from different races and different sizes but ive never felt anything close to what im feeling for kedi i can't even explain it in words....yesterday as i was driving from my fuck buddy's house and then all of a sudden a woman ran across the road without looking both ways on the road and i was lucky enough to hit the brakes on time and i furiously got out of the car ready to fuck her up and to my shock it was kedi within a second she fell on the ground i rushed to her and i checked her pulse she was breathing it looks like she was crying as i was about to pick her up and rush her to the hospital a man came running towards us calling her name then i stepped back as he got down and started calling her name he asked if i hit her and i said no i stopped just in time she finally woke up and he helped her sit up she looked around and saw me she looked surprised but she quickly told the guy that i assumed was her man to not touch her and she

started crying gosh i wished i could console her but i kept my distance her cries cut right through my heart i didn't even know what that bastard did to her but i wanted to fuck him up...i gave her water to calm down and then they started arguing thats when i found out this bastard cheated nx my blood started to boil and when he attempted to slap her i just nearly lost it i punched him so hard and kicked him and i ordered kedi to enter the car she didn't even argue... i took her to the hospital and a friend of mine doctor Vic checked her and said she had a mild concussion... when she fell earlier she hit her head hard so she was admitted gosh i didn't sleep a wink that night i was worried sick this interest i had on her was driving me insane...i call it an "interest " cause i dont know what to call it i mean how can someone i know little about makes me feel like this anyway she was discharged three days ago and i drove her to her place she was shocked

that i knew exactly where she live but i just brushed it off cause i couldn't tell her that i have a file on her anyway when were about to go in she said that bastard boyfriend of hers was there well i didn't care i just wanted her to rest so we walked in and that fool was laying on a couch with a half empty bottle of whisky i knew this was not gonna end well so told myself that im not going anywhere until this fool leaves damn things got out of hand quickly that fool started insulting her i kept quiet out of respect of kedi and her place but then he started calling kedi damaged goods and started blubbering about how kedi was sexually assaulted by her step brother and shit i mean this bitch ass nikka was hurting kedi by blubbering something she probably told him in confidence what kind of a man does that i immediately glanced at kedi and she looked like her world was ending her tears were gushing out while he bottom lip trembled just right then.. right then that look on

her face and that pain in her eyes jeerrr the beast woke up... he woke up so quickly that he almost took control but i was also quick enough to not let him but he was fighting for control he wanted this fools blood so bad worse part is i was also baying for his blood damn but i didn't want kedi to see that side of me i never want her to see that side of me...i ordered kedi to go pack a bag cause the was no way im leaving her here infact right then i made a decision to make sure she leaves this place for good cause she said this bastard has a spare key...she hesitated a bit when he ordered her not to but she decided to go pack...as she was about to leave the unthinkable happened this fool signed his death warrant....he grabbed her and turned her around and slapped her hard across the face and right then the beast took full control he grabbed him and punch him on his face and he flew across the room and he fell on top of the table and he screamed like a bitchhe rushed

towards him and made him stand up and grabbed him by his neck tight lifting him up and walked towards the wall with his hand tight around this fools neck and pinned him against that wall and punched him on his stomach continuously until lots of blood started to come out of his mouth....he roughly threw him across the room and he landed on a tv stand and the tv fell on top of him and he went to him and dragged him close to the door cause that was the only big enough space in this small flat he kicked him continuously on his stomach and face and got on top of him and punched him continuously on his face over and over and over....he wasn't moving but the beast didn't care he stood up and turned with an attempt to go to the kitchen for a knife to stab him continuously but kedi's presence made the beast to stop she was bending with her hands on her knees and tears dripping down to the floor...the beast immediately went to sleep and i

had full control of my body now i quickly went to the kitchen and took a dish cloth and wiped my hands they had blood on them and i looked at my shirt and it had blood all over it...i didn't unbutton it i just ripped it off and wiped my face and walked to where kedi was with fear all over me asking myself how im gonna explain what just happened to her and not sound psychotic and crazy...i touched her shoulder and asked her a stupid question whether she was ok and she continued crying when she kept quiet i felt a knot in my stomach i swear ive never been that scared in my life even grandfather doesn't make me feel this scared no matter how angry he gets when jay and i mess up...i asked her again and she said she can't see she only see darkness i don't wanna lie i was relieved instead of panicking but i came back to my senses and made her stand up straight and asked her to open her eyes again and she said she sees blurred visions right then

i scooped her up walked out and closed the door and rushed to the car i didn't even care about this dead or half dead bastard laying inside the flat i made a call to our childhood friend muzi hes a doctor hes also part of the mafia hes the best in the business and told him to come to my house immediately and dropped the call and send kedi's address to jay and drove out calling him he answered on the first ring and he asked if the sms meant cleaning up and i said yeah i finally ended the call and i glanced at kedi she looked scared and her eyes were shut gosh i finally arrived at my main house and muzi's car was outside eish my home boy never disappoints i took kedi inside and muzi did his things...now shes been out of it for three days now you see muzi is a well known doctor in the mafia and he mostly uses black market drugs to heal people who are part of the mafia and anyone else whose willing to pay thousands or millions to get healed fast or

to perform unlicensed surgeries on rich people... well he does some rounds at most netcare hospitals in Pretoria and Joburg as a cover up or as a front if you get what I'm saying and he has shares on most of them***

Jay: jase come on you need to rest you spend all day in here just staring at her for the past three days

Me: she needs to wake up Jay she can't go out like this I haven't even kissed her yet she can't do this to me

Jay: trust you to make a lame joke at a time like this (he chuckled)

Me : tsek...is that son of a bitch still breathing

Jay: you know machines are the one helping him to breathe unless you want them switched off

Me: nah I want him to remain stuck between the world of living and the world of the dead as

punishment for hurting kedi and worse off all
laying his filthy hands on her

***right then kedi starts coughing i stand up
quickly and rush to her and take off her oxygen
mask***

Me: hey beautiful please open your eyes

***she did slowly and closed them quickly and
opened them again and stared at me and
blinked repeatedly and tears came out***

Her: i... ca... can see you(it came out like a
whisper)

Me:(smiling) im glad

***i said rubbing her cheeks slowly and gently
staring into her eyes.... God im falling for this
woman and deeply and it scares the living
daylights out of me but the thing is i dont
wanna be saved i wanna keep on falling deeply
for her ***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/05, 10:33] Ron: INSERT.20

.

.

.

JASE'S POV

***its been a month now since that whole siphon drama ..when jay got to kedi's flat he was still alive but his pulse was weak so i told him to take him to the warehouse "there's a room in the warehouse we call it the white room it looks exactly like a hospital ward it has everything from hospital beds to exray machines to everything you'll need in a theatre room ..just

everything you can think of that is in a ward and theatre room its there so we kept him there for a week net for control and after that week i switched off the machines and then his body went into the flesh eating acid and his car was burned down outside Johannesburg a word got out that he was reported missing by his wife i was confused as hell until kedi told me about the second wife shit anyway assumptions where made about his whereabouts some said hes dead and his body parts are probably used for muti others said hes kidnapped aaarg i didn't give a shit and kedi got worried about him and even cried that hes missing and that hes could be dead in a ditch somewhere damn i was mad as hell that she was worried and also cried for that fool but she got over it and since then we've been close and we also spend lots of time together but i haven't told her how i feel i thought i should give her some time to heal from the

heartache but i always make sure i know her whereabouts all the time jay says i'm obsessed and whipped nx anyway as for her eye side she can see but now she wears glasses sometimes but most of the time she uses lenses....the explanation i got from muzi about her temporary blindness was that she suffered what he calls ORTHOSTATIC HYPOTENSION his explanation is that a body and brain are used to dealing with mild fluctuation in oxygen which can be due to anything from going up in altitude and in this case her blood pressure was extremely high and also she suffered a hard blow to her head and the medication she received from the hospital didn't do any justice because a number of medications have side effects of orthostatic hypotension they caused a delayed sympathetic response to the brain and then she become temporary blind...others experience orthostatic hypotension for a minute or so while with others it last a couple of

hours, a week or months or even years so im glad with kedi it lasted three days as for doctor vic hes walking on thin ice he didn't do his job properly and now he knows he owes me and he knows i always collect my debt....im sitting on the lounge checking if the trackers i put on her are working i check everyday***

Jay: really bro you put a tracker on her

Me: yeah...you have a problem with that (i asked giving him a dead stare)

Jay: chill kray... eish this girl is driving you crazy you're so over protective of her that im even scared to mess with her

Me: you're exaggerating jay i just wanna make sure she safe all the time thats all

Jay: then why dont you just make things official between you too...i know you said you giving her some time to heal and shit but dude its been a month now

Me: i know but were close now and if i make my move im afraid this good thing we have going might get ruined

Jay: what if she falls for someone else

Me: then il kill him and wipe out his entire generation

Jay: and watch her break down again ***i just kept quiet....i mean i dont wanna loose her and i dont wanna see her cry or hurt because of me or anyone else eish jay is right my phone rang and it was kedi damn i smiled like a retard***

Jay:you're soo whipped its not even funny anymore nc nc nc (he said shaking his head while standing up and he went upstairs)

Me: nkosazana

Kedi: hey mntungwa(she giggled)

Me: where are you

Kedi: on my way to mall of Africa im meeting up with this guy i met at anelisa's birthday party

he asked to take me out for lunch (i felt my blood boil instantly)

Me: what guy and which restaurant are you meeting him

Kedi:hes anelisa's distant cousin and im meeting him ko spur(i kept quiet)

Kedi: jase....jase are you still there

Me: yeah come to my house after your date

Kedi: ummm ok

Me: il send a driver to pick you up

Kedi: there's no need for that im sure nathi wont mind dropping me off

Me: its necessary... il send a driver unless you want me to personally come pick you up

Kedi: ummm the driver is fine

Me: ok let me know if you need anything and if you dont feel safe or comfortable

Kedi: dont worry jase im sure il be fine ok bye

(she dropped the call)

*** i send kedi's pic to one of my guys with a caption"tail her and take pictures and send them to me immediately and also where shes going...jay decided to come downstairs ***

Me: took you long enough

Jay: i was taking a shit..you got a problem with that(he said that sitting down)

Me: mxm i hope you washed your hands

Jay: voetsek (i chuckled)

my chuckle stopped and my face became hard at the thought of kedi having a lunch date with some guy

Jay: and now i thought you'd be happy after talking to your nkosazana or should i say muntuza

Me:(i took a deep breath)shes meeting up with some dude she met at her friend 's party

Jay: and you're just sitting here not going there to drag her out of whichever restaurant hes taking her

Me : who said im not doing anything

Jay: jase you need to stop this "i dont wanna ruin our friendship " bullshit you got going on...you know ive never liked or approved any of your girlfriends or fuck buddies or your booty calls but the fact that i approve of this one that should give you a clear indication that shes the right one for you...

Me.: i know shes the right one for me the thing is.... eish she makes me nervous and scared ...she makes me feel things i never thought I'd feel she has this hold over me and she doesn't even know it (i said that scratching my head roughly)

Jay:(chuckling)i told you you're whipped and worst of all its not her pussy that is making you look like a teenager in love for the first time

Me: uzonya if you keep insulting me

Jay: (laughing) im not insulting you its the truth
bafo

Me:nx

***an sms came in it was from stix i opened it
and it was downloading a picture after the
download is done the picture opened and it was
a picture of kedi and two guys ..the first guy
didn't look familiar but the second guy sitting
next to kedi looked familiar i looked carefully
and to my shock it was a son of our
enemy..fuck***

Me : fuck...no no no (i said that standing up)

Jay: whats wrong

***i gave him my phone he looked at the screen
and he stood up quickly ***

Jay: fuck noo i told you to make her yours
now shes fucken having lunch with the son of
our arch enemy (shouting)

i took my car keys and gun and walked out...there's no way im letting the woman i truly love stay another minute with that son of a bastard

KEDI'S POV

*** since the temporary blindness issue my life has changed and for the better ofcourse me and jase "yes... mr khumalo " have been close and we also spend alot of time together...there's this strong connection between us and i can't explain it and i feel safe around him and hes also funny he always makes sure that im happy its like he makes it his mission to make me happy....i have strong feelings towards him but since he never said anything about him liking me or something i decided to just ignore them and yeah we shared a kiss later that day i woke up from my

mini coma and it was passionate and amazing.....his thick,soft and juicy lips tasted so good but ever since that kiss nothing happened its only hugs.... maybe he sees me as his younger sister someone he needs to protect and take care off but hey im kinda cool with it cause yho the guy is hot shem and im sure he only dates super models and as for me im just a "plain jane" so yah ... i remember one day i went to his house for our usual movie night i knocked and he opened the door without a shirt on he was only wearing his sweatpants gosh i nearly fainted his body yho its a clear indication that he knows his way around the gym anyway i asked him about what happened that day siphos slapped me and he said they fought and he ran away....so siphos missing and its been a month and a couple of days now i was worried and i still am but i told myself that he doesn't deserve my tears or even a worry from me his fiance or wife has enough of those

for him anyway anelisa invited me to her birthday party jase was against it but hey he eventually gave in cause he knew i would go with or without him approving to it and i met a handsome xhosa guy..hes not as handsome as jase but let me say hes handsome in his level not jase's level if you know what i mean anyway he got my numbers from anelisa cause i refused to give them to him so hes been asking me out to have dinner with him and ive been refusing but last night when he asked me again i decided to agree but i opted for lunch instead so now im preparing for my lunch date..ooh i forgot to mention jase got me a new place to live in i tried to fight him but he wasn't having none of it he forcefully made me move out of my flat to a three bedroom apartment which he owns and its closer to work...i told him il stay there if he allows me to pay whatever amount i paid for my flat into his account for rent and i also made him draw up a lease contract to seal

the deal he was mad at me for making him take rent money from me and that i made him draw up a lease contract but he eventually got over it...anyway after my shower i wore my cream and blue ankara high waist trouser and a white crop top and took my cream sling bag and wore my gold sandals and i tied my long braids into a bun and put on little make up and locked and left i grabbed a taxi and on my way i decide to check up on jase and i told him i have a date he didn't sound happy to hear that instead he told me he'll send a driver to pick me up when im done i tried to reason with him but he would hear none of it....i arrived there and i see him sitting there but he was sitting with another guy....he stood up when he saw me i arrived to where they where sitting and he opened his arms for a hug and we hugged he whispered that i look beautiful and i blushed looking down after that he opened a chair for me and i sitmmmmh a gentleman....im only used to

jase who loves to open a chair for me
everytime we go out to eat ***

Me: thank you(he smiled)

Nathi:damn i can't believe you finally agreed to
have lunch with me

***the other guy cleared his throat and i finally
looked at him and damn this nikka was a lighter
and a few years older version of mandla"thato's
mandla" i just stared at him***

Nathi: babes ummm this is my bestfriend
mpendulo...dude this is her

Mpendulo:ok so this is the girl that you've been
taking about since the party (we shook
hands)nice to finally meet you...you are
beautiful

Nathi: dude

Mpendulo :what.... its the truth (i blushed and
kept quiet)

***apparently mpendulo came here to see the

girl that nathi has been blabbing about for two weeks....he left and i was left with nathi we talked about anything and everything i was having a great time with him until i saw nathi's face turn hard and sour and he stood up and then i smelled his scent i turned and there he was standing behind me with an angry look it was jase damn he looks scary ...ok it looks like this two know each other and shit is about to go down***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/05, 13:20] Ron: Diary ya kedi:the chozen one

INSERT.21

.
. .

KEDI'S POV

***i stood up cause i could see jase was about to loose it and as for nathi he looked like he was ready for jase ***

Me: jase what are you doing here

he wasn't even looking at me but at nathi

Me: jase

Jase: take your bag and lets go

Me: ummm jase im still on a date

Jase:(shouting) I SAID TAKE YOUR FUCKEN BAG AND LETS GO

Nathi: thats no way to talk to a beautiful lady and no shes not going anywhere we still on a....

he didn't finish his sentence jase jumped on him and punched him on the face and nathi almost lost his balance but he regained it and punched jase back yho i was scared and busy screaming for them to stop but it fell on deaf ears...they continued to throw blows at each other while im busy screaming for them to stop....i suddenly hear a hoarse voice behind me calling for jase to stop cause now hes on top of nathi busy punching the daylights out of him while nathi is busy trying to block them with his arms i turn and its jase's twin jay he rushes to them and tries to pull jase off nathi but jase is like a mad man now his focus is on nathi its like nothing else matters i heard one of the waiters say the manager called the cops

Jay: KRAY!(shouting)

***jase stopped and got off nathi and turned to look at me yho i felt my blood freeze and my insides turn...the look on his face was scary he had a cut on the corner of his bottom lip and

little blood was coming out as for nathi lots of blood was coming out of his nose it looked like it was broken***

Jase: stay the fuck away from her or next time i wont be this nice towards you

Nathi: (laughing a little)il only stay away from her if she "herself "tells me to

Jay: voetsek you piece of shit next time i wont stop him and he'll definitely send you to meet your useless ancestors nx

jay threw my sling bag to me

Jay: CAR NOW!(he said shouting)

***i didn't argue i walked out with nathi calling my name when i got outside i remembered i dont know where jase parked so i decide to walk to a taxi rank while wiping my tears on my way there i felt a hand grab my left upper arm...it was jase his perfume gave him away he roughly turned me and that scary look was still

there he stared at me for a while and dragged me towards where i think he parked...he unlocked the car and we went in... the drive was silent i looked outside the window until we arrived at his place he parked and got out and walked inside i slowly got of wiping my tears and slowly walked inside i went to the lounge and he was standing in front of the window looking outside with one of his hand in his pocket and the other one was holding a glass with what looked like whiskey inside...i sat on the couch and kept quiet***

Jase: you gonna stay away from that guy.... do i make myself clear(i kept quiet)

Jase: i hate repeating myself kedi I FUCKEN HATE IT

Me: you didn't have to hit him like that jase what did he do to you huh

***he turned and looked at me and walked towards me while pointing at me and shouting

Jase: YOU DEFENDING THAT BASTARD
KEDI...YOU HAVE THE ROTTEN NERVE TO
DEFEND THAT SON OF A BITCH TO ME

*** he threw the glass he had on his hand
across the room and it hit the wall and broke
into pieces yho i got really scared and stood up
quickly and walked backwards slowly while he
walked towards me...tears started coming out...
i held my breath as he walked passed me i sat
down on the couch trembling with fear i decided
to clean up the broken glasses on the floor after
i was done i went to sit down on the couch and
switched the tv on i wasn't even watching my
mind was far i kept asking myself why jase is
so mad and why does it look like those two
have a dark history ...after 30 minutes of jase
disappearing somewhere in the house or
outside and me thinking and crying i fell asleep
on the couch ***

JASE'S POV

***after beating the crap out of that fool nathi kedi walked out and minutes later after warning nathi to keep away from kedi i went after her when i got outside i searched for her and i couldn't find her until i looked far towards where the taxis are and i saw her i ran after her and i roughly grabbed her and dragged her towards where i was parked...we got in and i drove straight to my main house..im saying "main house " because i have four houses in total two here in Pretoria, one Johannesburg and another one in cape town (its a beach house) and two apartments one of them its where kedi lives and the other one is in kzn anyway i parked and went inside leaving her in the car yeses i was mad as hell not at her of course but at that bastard nathi...i told her to

stay away from nathi and she started defending him by saying i shouldn't have hit him i completely lost it i felt my blood boil i threw the glass that was on my hand across the room and she flinched in fear right then i knew i had to leave her sight before i do something il definitely regret... i walked outside for some fresh air as i was walking around the yard calming myself down jay's car drove in...he packed and walked towards me***

Jay: WHAT THE FUCK WAS THAT (shouting)

Me: i know i shouldn't have lost it in public like that

Jay: (he took a deep breath)bafo you need to pull yourself together and tell her how you feel to stop all this nonsense

Me: (i took a deep breath)i almost manhandled her when we got here...eish

Jay: i hope you didn't lay a hand on her

Me: il never do that bafo is just that i almost lost it when she said i shouldn't have hit him

Jay: (he sighed)make things official between you too jase and mark your territory or nathi will snatch her from you (i kept quiet)

***we continued to talk about random things until he left...i went inside and found kedi sleeping in the lounge i picked her up and took her upstairs to the bedroom and put her gently on top of the bed and covered her with a throw...jay is right its high time i made her mine officially....

KEDI'S POV

***i woke up feeling someone holding me tight from behind and something poking me on my butt i nearly screamed until i smelled his scent gosh it was jase i checked my surroundings and

i was in a bedroom i tried to move but he tightened his grip and pulled me closer and his dick kept on poking my butt***

Jase: where are you going (gosh he asked with a sleepy voice and it was deep)

Me: to... to the loo

Jase: hurry back

he loosened the grip and let go of me... i got off bed and i realised that i was wearing his shirt without a bra

Me: did we....did you?(i asked with a low tone)

Jase:no i didn't do anything to you yet.... if i did you wouldn't be able to walk (he said with a smirk)

***i quickly went to the bathroom and did my things and flushed and rinsed my mouth and went to the bedroom i stood by the door and jase opened the covers ***

Jase: come

Me: ummm jase whats going on.....why are we....

Jase: come we need to talk

***i slowly walked to the bed and got on and laid next to him facing the ceiling but he pulled me towards him and made me lay on top of his him and he held me tight i felt his hard dick on my lower abdomen my body stiffened immediately ***

Jase:relax i wont do anything you dont want me to do

Me:jase what's going on why are we laying like this in bed half naked

Jase: im sorry for the way i reacted earlier but im not sorry for beating the shit out of that fool (gosh he ignored my question)

me:jase what... (he interrupted me)

Jase: do you forgive me for what happened down stairs earlier?

Me: as if i have a choice i hate it that i can't

stay long being mad at you

Jase: (he chuckled) im actually glad you cant cause i also can't survive you being mad at me

*** he pushed me off him gently and made me lay on my side facing him he also layed on his side facing me and he perked my lips...yho ok...and looked into my eyes with a serious look***

Jase: i love you kedi...ive always been in love with you since that day we met i didn't say anything all along because i wanted to give you time to heal from your heartache i didn't wanna seem like im taking advantage of your pain to warm my way into you heart....i love you so much...i wanna make you happy kedi and treat you like the queen you are

omg i couldn't believe what im hearing i was looking at him shocked as hell i couldn't believe jase just said he loves me and that hes in love with me...me kedi...

Jase: earth to kedi (then he perked my lips again) say something please

Me: ummm why would you love someone like me

Jase: what do you mean someone like you(he said frowning)

Me: a broken woman

Jase: and where exactly are you broken (i raised my eyebrows)kedi first of all you are not broken you went through shit and you came out strong..what your step brother did to you didn't break you instead it made you strong cause if it did break you you would be doing drugs or drinking heavily to numb the pain or worse of all you would have committed suicide so the fact that your here and smiling and waking up every day to face the challenges of life it shows that you're way stronger than you think you are

me: jase every day is a struggle...he broke me .. sometimes i wish i should have died with my

parents

i fought the tears that were threatening to come out

Jase: my heart lets face those struggles together and also lets conquer those every day challenges together...i love you muntuza more than you can ever imagine let me carry your heavy burdens...let me fight for you and let me make you happy pleasewhat do you say

Me: jase i.... (he interrupted me)

Jase: please my heart let me make you happy

Me: (i took a deep breath)ok

Jase: huh i didn't get that (he said with a stupid grin)

Me: i said ok hau

***he smiled wider and pulled me closer and he kissed me....he deepened the kiss and i moaned gosh he got on top of me and continued to kiss me deeply things got heated and soon the shirt

that i was wearing was off and he was busy sucking on my breasts....i was already wet down there he stopped sucking and came up to kiss me i felt his hand inside my thong and he rubbed my clit smoothly and entered his finger gosh my moans got louder***

Jase: shit... i see you're ready for me (he whispered to me)

***he continued to finger me and my moans got even louder he pulled out his finger and licked it clean oh my God my eyes nearly popped out of my socket and he chuckled ***

Jase:fuck you taste good

***he got off me and took off my thong and parted my legs and i closed them quickly he opened them again forcefully and kissed my inner thighs all the way to my pussy the moment his tongue touched my clit i almost lost it gosh i jerked up quickly but he used his hands to keep me still geez this guy ate my

pussy hard he licked and sucked while his other finger "i dont know which one "was busy fingering me gees what i felt was out of this world i was screaming my lungs out calling his name and probably speaking in tongues...i felt an electrifying wave take over my body from my head all the way to my toes and my whole body shook uncontrollably yho....he stopped and licked me clean and came up to my face with my juices all over his mouth and chin he had a big smile on his face as for me i felt like i was hit by a car my whole body was numb he got of the bed and took of his boxers and what i saw i wasn't expecting gosh his dick was huge yho.... it shouldn't be legal to carry such a huge machine.... he looked at me biting his bottom lip holding his dick..it was oozing that colourless cum he climbed on the bed and got between my legs and looked into my eyes***

Jase: you scared of him (i nodded)

Me: hes huge i dont think he'll fit(he perked my

lips and smiled)

Jase: il be gentle my heart

*** i felt the tip of his dick on my pussy entrance..... gosh am i ready for this weapon of mass destruction ready to enter me?***

[08/05, 13:21] Ron: Diary ya kedi:the chozen one

INSERT.....22

.
. .
. .

JASE'S POV

***i tried to enter her slowly but she was too tight i couldn't go in so i pushed in harder and i entered her yeses i felt her pussy walls expand i groaned lightly and she cried out i kissed her forehead and asked her to look me in the eyes

cause her eyes were shut she slowly opened them and i smiled at her and perked her lips and started to move slowly she closed her eyes and bit her lower lip it felt good to be inside her it was like its where my dick belonged,i picked up my speed and went faster and she moaned loudly and dug her nails on my back i went faster and harder i felt her body tense up and she screamed my name and trembled i pulled out and i put both her legs on my shoulders and entered slowly gosh it felt good she continued to moan and i was groaning i felt like im losing control i picked up my speed instantly and went in and out of her faster and harder and her screams and moans didn't do any justice they actually drove me absolutely insane i fucked her so hard and fast that she came again i wasnt far behind i felt my own build up and i knew i was near so i didn't have any mercy on her pussy i went harder and faster like it was the last day on earth even my sweat was dripping

on her damn the bedroom was filled with her screams and loud moans and my loud groans i felt my body tense up and i loudly called out her name and roughly slammed into her pushing in deeper and released all my sperms that were stored in my balls into her.... i released a loud growl from deep down my throat and collapsed on top of her she held me tight while both of us were breathing heavilyGOD i love this woman....

me: (i raised my head and looked into her eyes)i love you my heart

Kedi:(she blushed) i love you too my king

i raised my eyebrows in a questioning manner with a smile on my face

Kedi: you once told me your zulu name is nkosi so im gonna call you my king since you call me your heart (she smiled)

***i couldn't help but grin like a chimpanzeeis it even legal to love a person this much i

mean she drives me crazy and shes not even aware anyway i pulled out slowly and went to the bathroom and came back with a towel and wiped her and myself i kissed her pussy and she giggled i wore my boxers and went downstairs to make something to eat after i was done i took the food upstairs and woke her up to eat since she dosed off we ate chatting away after we were done i took the plates down to the kitchen and washed them then went upstairs..i took off my boxers cause i was hard as a rock shit even thinking about her and how tight she is made me hard i turned her around doggy style and entered her slowly and did my thing she was screaming my name while i was also groaning and growling out loud she came twice and i eventually came too and a made her sleep ontop of me and we dozed off with me holding her tight.....i woke up and checked the time it was around 6 in the morning and i was hard as fuck i got ontop of her and entered her

slowly and she gasped gosh it felt soo good i did my thingi gave it to her real good and we both came at the same time after that we dozed off...i woke up again it was around 8 and i pushed her off me gently and got out of bed and went to pee then brushed my teeth and hit the shower after i was done i went back to the bedroom and she was still sleeping i don't blame her i woke her up almost the whole night going in and out of her anyway i went downstairs to prepare breakfast in bed for her when i entered the kitchen nx i find jay sitting on the bar stools eating***

Me: ngiyalingwa straight

Jay:dude take it easy on the poor girl i heard her screams from down here

Me: tsek entlek o funani la slima (what are you doing here fool)

Jay:who are you calling a fool

Me: you...entlek what are you doing here and by

your talks it looks like you've been here for a while

Jay: this is also my house as much as my house is also yours so i can come as i please ooh and tell umakoti that i have a spare key so she shouldn't walk around naked

Me: voetsek....jy praat kak

he laughed nx this fool i also laughed i guess his stupid laugh is contagious

Jay: so i guess you are now officially dating and fucking

Me: fucking really?

Jay: (he chuckled)ok ok making love

***we both laughed ***

Me: yeah and i still cant believe it i hope i dont fuck things up

Jay: dont worry you wont...just be yourself and get rid of all you fuck buddies and friends with

benefits

Me: eish i forgot about those...maybe i should just keep one of them for when shes mad at me or when shes on her periods

Kedi: wow ok

***i quickly looked towards the door and i know by the look of hurt in her face she heard my last statement fuck my heart was beating fast ***

Me: my heart i was joking

Kedi:hi jay

Jay: makoti...ummm he was kidding ok

Me: (walking towards her)breakfast will be ready in 15 minutes tops my heart (i said kissing her forehead)

Kedi:dont bother yourself i think i should just leave

***i took a deep breath and grabbed her hand and pulled her towards the lounge we got there

and she yanked her hand off my grip and took a step back shit that broke my heart ***

Me: baby dont do that

Kedi: before you told me you loved me and that i should give us a chance did you break up with your friend with benefits or girlfriend as she once told me or your fuck buddieS as you just said to your twin

i kept quiet cause i couldnt believe she was making a big deal out of this i mean we started dating last night and now shes acting up because of a stupid joke that i know now that its not funny and this insecurities showing on her face is a total turn off

Kedi :il take that as a NO

she turned and walked away but i grabbed her hand and pulled her towards me

Me: kedi we started dating last night but i promise il end things before the end of today

kedi: how many are there (i kept quiet)wow that many

Me: kedi please i did all those things cause i was single but now im in a committed relationship with you please dont judge me because of my past cause il never judge you by your past too(she kept quiet)

Me: i love you my heart and only you and i wont cheat on you...you are enough for me and more

Kedi: im meeting up with anelisa and her friends i have to go

Me: no you not (i said with a straight face)

Kedi: jase you will not choose friends for me please its bad enough you ordered me to keep away from nathi now its anelisa

Me: we not going to argue about this kedi...you not meeting up with her and thats final

***i went back to the kitchen pissed living her standing there...i mean im sure that bitch

anelisa is trying to hook kedi up with nathi she introduced them after all and im sure that bastard is using kedi and anelisa's friendship to warm his way into her life and il never let that happen over my dead body***

Jay : is she ok

Me: she'll be fine

Jay: you look pissed whats wrong

me: nex dont worry about it

Jay: ok but you guys can't be having fights and arguments you started dating last night its called a honeymoon stage for a reason

***i just kept quiet i continued with making breakfast ***

KEDI'S POV

***i woke up when i heard a door close i

checked next to me and jase wasn't there i woke up and got out of bed and gosh walking was a struggle i limped my way to the bathroom and i peed and brushed my teeth using his tooth brush and i took a bath not a shower cause a bath is what i needed now. ...i sat inside the bathtub soaking in warm water thinking about last night i mean it was epic,amazing and totally out of this world and the fact that he kept me up all night makes me have goosebumps gosh i think this guy is a sex God ok maybe its a bit extreme calling him a sex God but yho the things he did to me last night and this morning jeez and the way he moved his waist when going in and out of me gosh..... bathed and got out of the bath dried myself and lotioned and wore his shirt and no underwear i dont think il wear an underwear for today and probably tomorrow cause its a lil sore and swollen down there i made the bed and went downstairs to look for my phone so

that i can cancel my lunch date with anelisa and her friends i want to spend the whole day with my king....i found it intop of a coffee table and send her a quick message cancelling our lunch date and i heard voices in the kitchen it was jase and his twin jay i went there to greet jay and what i heard broke my heart.....it was jase saying maybe he should keep one of his fuck buddies for when im mad at him or when im on my periods they saw me and he said he was joking i decided then and there that i should leave but jase refused and told me how much he loves me and all that but i mean what would stop him from cheating anyway i told him that im going to meet up with anelisa but he blatantly refused and walked out on me and tears just ran down my cheeks i went upstairs and just threw myself on the bed and cried my eyes out....i felt so insecure it wasn't even funny what if he cheats like siphon did maybe i should just break things off with him before things gets

serious and he end up hurting me i eventually fell asleep....i woke up feeling a heavy load ontop of me i opened my eyes quickly and it was jase i opened my mouth to say something but he quickly entered me and i gasped he started to move slowly looking straight into my eyes i closed my eyes when he went deeper but he stopped moving and whispered that i should look at him i opened then slowly and he continued to stare and started moving slowly and going deeper gosh it felt soo good i was moaning***

Jase: i love you (he said that still moving slowly inside of me)im sorry about my stupid joke (i kept quiet)il never hurt you like that or any other way especially intentionally

***i still kept quiet he picked up his pace and went faster and harder i screamed out of pleasure and he slowed down and went slow and deeper ***

Jase: i love you kedii called them and ended things im also sorry for walking out on you.....i know you have trust issues and i promise il never give you a reason to doubt my love and commitment to you and il never ever give you a reason to not trust me

i continued to keep quiet but his dick inside of me was doing things to me that made me want to scream his name and all his clan names if i knew all of them but i just bit my lower lip

Jase:(he stopped moving) please say something my heart

Me: what you said hurt me

jase: im sorry my heart im really sorry... i was joking around with my brother i didn't mean it my heart ill never joke around like that ever again

***he smashed his lips into mine and deepened the kiss and broke it and pulled my right leg up

and moved fast,hard and deeper he hit my g-spot and i screamed his name out and my body shook as i reached my climax instantly ...he didnt stop he fucked me throughout my climax and i felt his body tense up and he slammed into me hard and his body trembled and he let out a scary loud growl and he collapsed on top of me breathing heavily.....after catching his breath he raised his head and he had the biggest smile ever on his face***

jase: do you forgive me (i nodded with a smile on my face)

Jase: GOD i love this woman(he kissed the tip of my nose)

Me: GOD i love this man

***we both smiled at each other ***

[08/05, 13:23] Ron: INSERT.....23

.

.

.

KEDI'S POV

***its been three months and life has been great and things between me and jase have been amazing i fall inlove with him deeply every single day and he treats me like an egg he spoils me rotten and hes over protective...luckily am on a prevention or else il be pregnant by now cause we make love every day and everywhere i even have a driver's license now and he gave me one of his cars to use who would have thought me kedi il be driving a land rover hehehe yah neh life... anyway things are not that good at work cause two months back i had a fall out with anelisa she called me a whore and she said im a gold digger who sleeps her way to the top she told who ever cared to listen and now people treat me differently and give me evil looks i guess

shes mad cause i refused nathi's advances towards me and she also found out im dating jase well i didn't tell jase about anelisa's attitude towards me cause hes so possessive with me im scared he might hurt her..my phone rang speak of the devil ***

Me: my king

Jase:my heart i miss you

Me: i miss you too so you still coming back tomorrow right(he kept quiet) my king?

Jase: my heart im afraid il only be able to come back sunday

i kept quiet and started breathing heavily hes been gone for 5 days now and he keeps on extending his days he was supposed to go on a three days business trip

Jase: baby im sorry look il.... (i interrupted him)

Me: save it to someone who gives a damn

***i dropped the call my heart was heavy how

can jase do this to me he kept on calling and i ended up switching my phone off i was at work so i continued with my work while wiping my tears my desk landline rang and i answered ***

Jase: baby please understand its business if i could i would come back but i can't until i close this deal please (i kept quiet while sniffing)

Jase; kedi dont do this you know it breaks my heart when you cry

Me: bye jase

***i dropped the call and stood up and went to the bathroom to fix myself and i bumped into anelisa coming out of the ladies she laughed when our eyes met ***

Lisa: you still gonna cry because of him like i once told you hes using you and for what i don't even know cause you have nothing to offer anyway i hope he fucks you good bitch cause that's what you gonna be to him only a bitch

and then she walked out tears just ran down my cheeks after calming down i cleaned myself up and went back to work knock off time came and i drove straight home i got in and drank two sleeping pills and went straight to bed..i woke up to someone shaking me roughly and i quickly opened my eyes ready to scream but i stopped when i saw that it was jay

Jay: jase is worried sick about you he said your phone is off

Me: i dont wanna talk to him thats why i turned my phone off(i said with a sleepy voice)

Jay: look you need to talk to him hes going crazy

Me: i dont care ummm look i drank some sleeping pills so can we do this some other time i need to sleep

Jay: WHAT...HOW MANY (shouting)

Me: 2

***he took out his phone and dialled ***

Jay: yeah she's ok but she said she drank some sleeping pills does she often take them (he took a deep breath)ok

Jay: take he wants to talk to you

Me : i dont wanna talk to him

Jay: im not doing this with you TAKE THE FUCKEN PHONE AND TALK TO YOUR MAN(yho i took it)

Me: mmm

Jase: (he took a deep breath)DONT EVER DO THAT AGAIN DO YOU KNOW HOW FUCKEN WORRIED I WAS

Me: jase can we do this maybe tomorrow im really sleepy

Jase: SINCE WHEN DO YOU DRINK SLEEPING PILL HUH

Me: since im stressed out bye jase

i gave jay his phone and closed my eyes im not even gonna ask him how he got in mxm and immediately dozed off i was woken up my alarm i got out of bed and went to shower gosh my eye lids were heavy all i wanted to do was go back to bed and sleep but i couldn't cause i have to go to work anyway i did my morning routine and went to work with my phone still off i got there and did what im paid to do as i was busy working my desk landline rang

Me:hello

Jase: baby(he sounded sad)

Me: jase

Jase: im worried about you

Me: dont be... look i have to go im busy

Jase: my heart dont do this you pushing me away

Me: i don't have time for this bye (i hanged up)

***6 days..hes been gone for 6 days now and

he expects me to just be ok with it mxm hes out of his mind and worse of all he doesn't want to tell me what kind of business hes doing in Brazil he just said its a business meeting i decide to switch my phone on and endless messages and voicemail messages come flooding in mxm ...im tired of people using me and treating me like a fool maybe i should make peace with the fact that love and relationships aren't for me who knows maybe hes with some Brazilian chick nx.... work was just ok and im glad i didn't bump into anelisa cause i dont have the energy for her...knock off time came and as i was busy parking my things ready to leave my phone rang and the number wasn't saved***

Me: hello

Caller: finally

Me: askies? Whose this

Caller :dont tell me you can't recognize my

voice anymore (ohh my GOD)

Me: ho..how did you get..get my numbers

Caller :i have my ways im in soshanguve now and i asked around about thato and you apparently thato was well known here so i got your numbers from one of your ex colleagues

***i quickly sat down and tried to breath cause i was struggling to..i was even trembling ***

Caller : you still there...anyway its a matter of time before i find you(he chuckled)i hope you'll be ready for me cause im coming for you sweetness(he dropped the call)

***tears just came rushing out i was trembling and scared as hell where the hell is jase when i need him..i tried to pull myself together but i was failing dismally i quickly dialled his numbers but i remembered that he said i shouldn't call him that he will be the one to call me...then i decide to send jay a message to tell jase to call me asap...my phone rang

immediately it was jay***

Me: hello

Jay: is something wrong

Me: i need to speak to jase

Jay: im afraid he cant call now but he'll definitely call you before midnight hes currently busy right now

Me: jay please i need to talk to him(a sob escaped my mouth)

Jay: kedi whats wrong

Me:(sniffing) nothing im ok ummm... (he interrupted me)

Jay:where are you now

Me: work about to leave

Jay: ok stay put im on my way

Me: ok (he dropped the call)

***i sat there scared what if he finds me.he said

its just a matter of time before he does and how the hell did he know me and thato stayed in soshanguve unlesseish no no no ...15 minutes later jay walked in he looked at me in a questioning manner ***

Jay:whats wrong kedi you look scared and you've been crying

Me:il be fine...why is jase doing this to me...hes supposed to be here i need him...he broke his promise of coming back early and now...now hes not here (i said with a breaking to voice)

Jay: look you need to trust him its work thats keeping him there or else you know he'll be here with you

a file fell from the table to the ground and i quickly jumped up shaking as hell and grabbed jay's arm

Jay: relax its just a file...kedi whats going on you even shaking(he asked looking worried)

Me: please take me home...please

***i tried so hard to fight my tears back...he agreed and we left i kept on looking over my shoulder to see if we are being followed.... what if he finds me ***

Me: jase's car

Jay:you mean your car anyway il send someone for it dont worry

me: ok

JASE'S POV

***i can't deal with the fact that kedi is angry at me... she's drifting away from me and i can't do anything to prevent it and i miss her so much eish shes even shutting me out and its killing me and driving me insane i just hope she doesnt go to nathi for comfort or im gonna go on a killing spree but i trust her shes not like a

bunch of women ive met shes a different kind and i love her to death...i asked jay to keep an eye on her cause hes the only person i trust with her... things here have been hectic everything here is a mess and this old fools complain about everything instead of coming up with solutions they complain nx now its been 6 days and they don't agree with solutions that are brought forward i see they think some of us dont have life's now i see why grandad insisted i be the one coming here and not jay cause knowing him a war would have erupted by now because of him between the mafia families hes short tempered and he just doesn't give a shit...my phone rang***

Me: spilo

Jay: something is up with kedi

Me: what do you mean..did something happen to her (my heart was beating fast)

Jay:shes all jumpy and freaked out i asked her

what is wrong but she says shes fine but i can tell something freaked her out big time call her jase maybe she tell you

Me: maybe shes still angry at me thats why shes acting that way

Jay: something freaked her out man she was even shaking

Me:(i sighed) ok let me call her thanks bafo (i dropped the call)

i dialled her numbers and it rang unanswered...the was a knock on the door...ok i know that knock and how the hell did she know im here i went to open while calling kedi again

Me: Theresa

Theresa: hey baby i heard you back

me: heard from who

kedi didn't answer again i called her again while theresa pushed her way in nx

Theresa : you know i have my ways...damn i missed you baby and the machine between your legs

***she said biting her lower lip while unzipping her dress damn i felt my dick hardened mxm im a man after all but one thing i know is nothing is gonna happen i cant hurt kedi like that ***

Kedi: he..hello

i snapped out of it when i heard kedi's voice and walked towards the window now i was really worried her voice was hoarse it was like she was crying

Me: my heart whats wrong

Kedi: im ssscared jase when are you coming back(she was crying)

Me: baby... my heart talk to me your king tell me what happened even jay is worried about you

Theresa: jase come to bed im already wet down

there

***she said snuggling her arms around my waist from the back .. i felt my blood freeze instantly i pushed her away from me roughly and she fell backwards ***

me: kedi its not what you think ok ...let me explain (she kept quiet)baby im not cheating on you believe me please

Kedi: its over jase i hope she was worth it(then she hung up)

Me: no no no no

i called her again but it went straight to voicemail..my blood boiled immediately and i turned to look at this bitch

Theresa: im...im sorry i didn't mean...

***i charged towards her she was standing up now and i slapped her so hard she fell again i grabbed her neck and made her stand up and tightened the grip around her neck she was

struggling to breath and turning pale i tightened the grip harder until she stopped fighting and i let her go she fell on the floor i checked her pulse she was dead***

Me: good riddance to bad rubbish

i called my boys

Caller: boss

me: bring the cleaning crew my hotel room

Caller : noted (i dropped the call)

i called jay and he answered on the fourth ring breathing heavily

Jay: jase come on im busy

me: im in deep shit

jay: talk to me

i told him what happened

Jay: fuck shes just hurt she doesn't mean it

me: i can't loose her man you know i cant plus i

think shes the chosen one

Jay: shit...you sure about that

Me: yeah i had a chat with dad about how he knew mom was the chosen and now i know kedi is the chosen one...please man after you done there go and check up on her please

jay: ok bafo

Me: another thing this bitch theresa is a spy

jay: what...you know what im coming there tomorrow

me: no man i can handle it you need to look after things there and keep an eye on kedi il let you know if things gets out of control

Jay : fine but you have 24 hours to deal with it or im coming there

Me: ok we will talk tomorrow

Jay : sure (i dropped the call)

i dialled snakes numbers

Snakes : kray

me: mamba i need you here in Brazil tomorrow
bring some guys with you someone is fucking
with me i need to teach them a valuable lesson

Snakes : noted il call you when we land

***i dropped the call... how the fuck did she
know which hotel im staying in and my hotel
room number nx someone or some people are
about to die along with their families eish i
need to deal with this asap so i can concentrate
on fixing things with kedi...there's no way in hell
im losing her***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/05, 13:23] Ron: INSERT.....24

.
. .
. .

JASE'S POV

***I've been trying to call kedi but she's been ignoring my calls it got to a point were she blocked my numbers eish i couldn't sleep or concentrate on anything im glad snakes is here or else everything would have been a complete mess anyway we found out who theresa worked for apparently she was paid by some guy here in brazil hes still new in the business so he was trying to make a name for himself she was supposed to drug me and the fool was gonna sell me to the highest bidder imagine "killers grandson at the hands of his enemy "nc nc nc imagine nje nx... they have been keeping tabs on me since i got here but i changed hotels this time around so that bitch coming

here alarmed me that something was up...my plan was to interrogate her first then kill her but what she did when i was on the phone with kedi made me loose control shes lucky i didn't rip her heart out of her chest while she was still breathing but what surprised me is that i didn't have that feeling of danger approaching from the beast ai anyway my boys went to fetch that amateur bastard and killed his guards they were disappointed yet again to find only two guards nx amateurs..... after he sang like a canary about everything i got really angry and the beast woke up and ripped him into pieces anyway we finally found a solution and came to an agreement at the meeting with the mafia bosses as i was here to represent my family ..right now im about to land at OR TAMBO airport and im tired as fuck i just wanna fix things with my heart and make crazy love to her and then sleep like a baby....i find him waiting for me i fist bump with the guys and they leave

then i bro hug my twin and we leave fuck i missed this crazy twin of mine anyway i tell him everything that went down and hes in stitches that an amateur almost got me nx this fool...he checks his phone cause he said he forgot to put it back to ringing mode when he left the meeting with some new potential investor for our construction company ***

Jay: i have missed calls from your heart

Me:call her back (he did and put her on speaker)

Jay: i got your missed calls is everything ok

Kedi: im seeing blurred visions again and i feel dizzy and im at the mall

Jay:fuck...which mall

Kedi: dont worry i called nathi hes on his way

i wanted to say something but jay beat me to it

Jay:YOU DID WHAT...DIDN'T JASE WARN YOU

TO STAY AWAY FROM THAT BASTARD

kedi:me and jase are over so i can call whoever i want

then she dropped the call i took the phone and called her again and again but she didn't pick up i was beyond angry

Me: drive straight to her apartment if we dont find her there i swear im going on a killing spree

Jay: this boy is really starting to piss me off nx

KEDI'S POV

***this life doesn't like me how can jase do this to me he said he'll never hurt or cheat on me and now this..im giving up on love cause i can see its not for me as for jase im done with him the same way i got done with siphos...after jase's call i cried like ive never cried before and jay came to check up on me he even tried to

convince me that jase is not cheating on me but i know what i heard so i told him to leave...i tried to sleep but everytime i closed my eyes i would dream of sam finally finding me and beating me up and forcing himself on me i would wake up screaming and sweating... today i woke up with a hammering headache and swollen eyes so i decided to call in sick at work i couldn't go to work looking like this its been two days since i found out jase is cheating on me as for jase hes been calling me and i didn't answer i even ended up blocking his numbers im done with him,i also called a handyman to come and change the locks since him and his brother have spare keys he just left 20 minutes ago so i decide to go to the mall for some grocery shopping i need a bucket of ice cream and a chocolate cake to down my sorrows so i showered and decided not to wear my lenses but i wore my glasses to hide my puffy and swollen eyes its a bit cold and drizzling

outside so i decide to wear my ripped jean,a long sleeve shirt,sneakers and a hoody i also tie my weave into a messy bun and took my hand bag and car keys and i locked up and left i arrived at the mall and headed straight to checkers and did my grocery shopping. ..i paid and as i was heading out i saw him he was with 3 guys and a girl gosh my heart nearly stopped i was even shaking out of fear he didn't see me cause they were chatting away and laughing walking towards another direction...i tried to move but my legs were feeling wobbly and numb i couldn't move...i then remembered its been a while since i last prayed so i closed my eyes and did a silent prayer and i asked GOD to protect me and to send Arch Angel Gabriel to walk with me and protect me i said amen and and i looked at the direction they went to and i couldn't see him so i finally moved and walked faster to the parking lot while pushing my trolley i got there and i put everything in the boot fast

and put my cake in the back sit quickly got inside the driver seat and locked the car i sat there trying to breathe i think i was having a panic attack cause i was struggling to breathe i tried hard to calm down while shutting my eyes but when i open them i would feel dizzy and see blurred visions***

ME: GOD please i can't go blind again please GOD please i can't

i said that with tears running down my cheeks i took my phone out of my pocket and opened my eyes atleast i could see now but i was still feeling a bit light headed...i searched for jays numbers and called him but it rang unanswered i tried again but the same thing happened so i decided to call nathi i know jay said i should stay away from him but we are over so yah fortunately he answered on the fourth ring

Nathi:what do you want (ouch that was cold)

Me:(sobbing)please help me im scared nathi i wouldn't call you if it wasn't a matter of life and death

Nathi:(he kept quiet a bit)why dont you call you boyfriend to come and help you

Me: we broke up please nathi i can't see properly and i feel dizzy im at the mall i have no one else to call (i cried)

Nathi: which mall (i told him)ok im on my way il call you when i get there

Me: ok (he dropped the call)

***right then jay returned my calls so i answered ***

Me:Jay

Jay: i got your missed calls is everything ok

Me: im seeing blurred visions again and i feel a bit dizzy and im at the mall

Jay: fuck... which mall

Me: dont worry ive already called nathi hes on his way

Jay: YOU DID WHAT...DIDN'T JASE WARN YOU TO STAY AWAY FROM THAT BASTARD

ME: me and jase are over so i can call whoever i want

***i dropped the call and sat there waiting for nathi jay called again and again and again mxm gosh i miss thato so much she would know how to deal with sam cause me im scared of him he installed fear in me towards him when he used to beat me up mercilessly and then rape me continuously i remember the first time he forced himself on me i was 14years and he roughly raped me forgetting i was a virgin it was so painful i couldnt walk properly for almost a week i even bleed for two weeks and during those two weeks he would still force himself on me while still bleeding and beat me up when i begged him to stop or when i

told him to atleast wait until i stopped bleeding
i also remember telling his mother after it
happened when she asked me what was wrong
when she saw that i couldn't walk properly after
telling her she said i deserved it cause im a
daughter of a whore and she made me skip
school for those two weeks....nathi called and i
told him where I've parked and i waited for him
...someone knocked on my window i got
startled a bit and it was nathi i unlocked the
doors and he opened the door gosh he was
wearing a suit and he looked handsome in it***

Nathi: whats wrong

Me: i feel a bit dizzy and i was seeing blurred
visions i was scared i thought i was going blind
again

Nathi: blind again?

Me:yes i once fell and hit my head hard and
became temporary blind so now i was having
the same symptoms i had when i became blind

(tears came rushing down my cheeks)

Nathi: can you see properly now

Me:yeah but i still feel dizzy

Nathi:mmmm ok let me take you home

he pulled me out of the driver side and he pulled me to the passenger side and closed the door and got in on the driver side and we drove out...he was concentrating on the road while i looked outside the Window thinking about sam i mean does it mean hes closer to finding me or what and what would have happened to me if he saw me God maybe i should move away from here and go far away maybe eastern cape or kzn or mpumalanga i was interrupted by a hand touching me

Nathi: are you ok ive been calling your name and you were zoned out

Me: im sorry you were saying

Nathi: (he signed)whats wrong kedi i know

there's something else besides the blindness issue

Me:there's nothing else bothering me nathi

Nathi: you said you and jase broke up is that what's bothering you

Me: (i took a deep breath)i guess (i said shrugging my shoulders)

Nathi: im here for you if you need to talk

Me: thanks...nathi im sorry i shut you out and pushed you away...im sorry for hurting you if you did get hurt if not then im sorry for being mean

Nathi: (he chuckled a bit)its ok im a man and since im inlove with you i forgive you i cant stay mad at you for too long

***umm did he just say hes inlove with me yho ai i can't deal with this i just kept quiet..we arrived at my apartment building and he parked at the parking lot and took out his phone and

dialled ***

Nathi: come and pick me up il send you the address via sms you have five minutes to get here

he dropped the call and got busy with his phone and put it back into his pocket and looked at me

Nathi: you look cute with your glasses

Me:(blushing) thanks

Nathi: so i heard you and anelisa aren't friends anymore

Me: yeah she showed me her true colours after i told you to stay away from me

Nathi: dont mind her shes just being bitchy and protective towards me il talk to her

Me: donti don't wanna be her friend anymore (he raised an eyebrow)

Nathi: ooh just like that

me:yeah shes not a loyal friend she shouldn't have picked a side but just continued to be my friend and your cousin so i dont need friends like her in my life

Nathi:wow ok so can i continue to be your friend

Me: just a friend?

Nathi:yeah il settle for that for now since you just came out of a relationship

Me: ok friend (he laughed)

his phone beeped and he checked it and opened his door and came to the passenger side and opened my door

Nathi:will you be ok from here or you want me to go in with you

Me: i have some heavy groceries at the back

Nathi: ok

***as he walked towards the boot i saw jay and

jase walking towards us shit i froze***

Me: nathi i think you should go i see trouble approaching (he walked towards me and saw them he took a deep breath and put his hand around my shoulders gosh this man mara i tried to move but his grip got tighter ***

Jay: this looks cosy dont you think so jase

jase just looked at me with anger in his eyes

Nathi:(he kissed my cheek) let me go il check up on you later and please take it easy ok friend

***he smiled and winked at me and walked away JESUS jase continued to stare at me his eyes were now red with anger and he had a visible vein on his forehead he looked scary but i didn't care he can even explode here and i still wouldn't give a shit i walked to the boot and took out all the shopping bags and put them on the floor and balanced myself with the car i was feeling dizzy again i saw jay come towards me

and he asked for my keys i told him inside my hand bag and he opened the door and took my hand bag and went to the driver side and took out the car keys and locked the car and picked up the shopping bags and walked away...i tried to walk after jay but i felt light headed again and stood still and closed my eyes and opened them again before i know it jase scoops me up bridal style and walked into the building...we got there and jay was already inside jase walked straight to the bedroom and put me on top of the bed and stood there with his hands in his pocket staring at me***

Me i forgot my cake at the back seat

i said trying to get up but he walked out and immediately came back and closed the door and turned the key and put it in his pocket ...ooh gosh

Jase: didn't i warn you to stay away from that son of a bitch(i kept quiet)

Jase: I HATE REPEATING MYSELF (he roared)

Me: AND I DONT ANSWER TO YOU ANYMORE
(i shouted standing up)

Jase:DONT FUCKEN RAISE YOUR VOICE AT
ME(i kept quiet)

Jase: answer me didn't i

me: its over between us so i can befriend
whoever i want

jase: like hell we are...we will never be over you
hear me and i didn't cheat on you ok i will not
be punished for something i didn't do and im
definitely not going to loose you because of
some bitch

Me: you know what i dont have time for this
please leave

Jase: IM NOT GOING ANYWHERE UNTIL WE
FIX THINGS

me: there nothing to fix jase i know what i heard
ok its over im done we are done

jase: kedi (he said with a lowered voice)

Me: no jase i trusted you and you brok... (he interrupted me)

Jase:TRUST...DONT FUCKEN TALK ABOUT TRUST CAUSE IF YOU EVER DID TRUST ME YOU WOULD BELIEVE ME OR ATLEAST GIVE ME THE BENEFIT OF DOUBT...IF I CHEATED I WOULD BE BEGGING FOR YOUR FORGIVENESS AND TELLING YOU IT DIDN'T MEAN ANYTHING BUT IM HERE TELLING YOU I DIDN'T CHEAT BUT YOU STILL DONT BELIEVE ME WHAT THE FUCK DO YOU WANT FROM ME HUH WHAT DO YOU WANT ME TO DO TO PROVE THAT I DIDN'T SLEEP WITH HERTELL ME! (he was shouting... his deep voice filling the bedroom and i was just crying)

Jase: you called him...why? of all people you called him after i warned you to stay away from him(he was breathing heavily)did you sleep with himhuh did you fucken sleep with him

gosh i felt my blood boil

Me:fuck you jase you hear me fuck you just because you're a man whore it doesn't mean everyone is lik.... (i didn't finish the sentence cause he slapped me so hard i fell backwards luckily i fell on top of the bed instead of the floor***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/05, 13:23] Ron: INSERT.....25

.

.

.

JASE'S POV

fuck what have i done eish no no no

Me: ba...baby im...im sorry i didn't mean to
please forgive

***she continued to cry ...God what have i done
her phone rang she didn't even check who it
was she just cried it stopped and rang again
she stood up and ran to the bathroom and i
heard the lock turn i went to the door and
begged her to open until i heard her talk***

Kedi: hello

she kept quiet

Kedi:umm can i call you back im kinda busy
right now (and then she sniffed)

*** i kept on begging her to open and
apologising

Kedi: nathi please il call you back

***fuck i can't believe this i really can't how dare she talk to that son of bitch nx my rage just escalated and i kicked the door open and rushed towards her and grabbed her phone and threw it to the wall and it broke into pieces i swear this girl is tempting me i grabbed her by her weave and dragged her to the bedroom and threw her on top of the bed and paised up and down trying to calm myself down but it wasnt happening so i just walked out before things get worse than they already arei went to my car and drove to my house and went to the gym and started hitting the punching bag the flashback of me hitting kedi and dragging her by her hair came rushing down on me i shouldn't have done that i dont even know why i did it i hate myself for it fuck i was angry at myself i saw myself rushing towards the wall and punched it over and over and over until i couldn't punch anymore fuck i think broke my hand anyway good its the same hand that

slapped her since i cant cut it off its better i
break it***

KEDI'S POV

***i can't believe jase slapped me he said hes
sorry and all that but i just didn't care my king
slapped me he slapped me his heart.... i think
there's no coming back from that my phone
rang in my pocket but i ignored it, it kept on
ringing and ringing i knew who it was so i
ignored it i got off the bed and ran to the
bathroom and locked myself in there it rang
again aarg i answered it***

Me: hello

Nathi: hey i was just checking up on you

Me: umm look can i call you back later im kinda
busy right now (i sniffed)

Nathi: are you ok

Me: nathi please il call you back

*** while i was dropping the call the door swang open ohh my God he broke the door he rushed towards me and i hid my face cause i don't wanna be slapped again but he roughly took my phone from me and threw it to the wall and it broke into pieces gosh by now I'm trembling with fear then he grabs my weave and drags me to the bedroom with me begging him not to hurt me and throws me on top of the bed and just paises up and down until he stops and opens the door and walks out after that i hear the main door roughly shut gosh everything is a mess jase cheats then slaps me when i challenge him and on another hand sam is hunting me down and i can tell hes close to finding me its just a matter of time i just cry until i can't anymore i think i cried myself to sleep cause i woke up feeling cold i slowly opened my eyes and it was dark i got out of bed and switched the lights on and closed the

curtains and locked the main door and drank my sleeping pills and changed i wore my pjs and got under the coversi woke up the following day with a banging headache i did my morning routine mxm i didn't even enjoy my weekend infact it was the worst weekend ever anyway i called a cab and went to work i didn't feel like using his car i got to work and commenced with my work lunch time came and i didn't have appetite so i didn't eat just walked throughout my lunch break until an hour was left for me to knock off suddenly i felt a presence of a person standing besides me and i looked up quickly***

Guys:are you miss malapane

Mr: umm yeah

Guy: ok i have a delivery for you mam

Me: ohh ok

he gave me a box and an envelope

Guy: please sign here

i did and he left

***gosh i was scared to open it what if its from sam but nah he doesn't know where i work so eish i guarded enough courage and opened the envelope first it read "IM REPLACING THE ONE I BROKE...IM SORRY MY HEART....LOVE: YOUR KING" thank God it was from jase so i opened the box and it was a Samsung galaxy S7 edge ohh my God it was already on and i received a message immediately "I HOPE YOU LIKE IT I ALREADY DID A SIM SWAP...ENJOY" mxm i continued with my work and it was knock off time and i took my things and called a cab and headed home.....the rest of the week was just ok i haven't heard anything from jase or sam so im cool with him its high time i started living without him as hard as its gonna be hard i have to do it but truth be told i still love jase and missed him terribly today is sunday and i was busy doing my laundry and cleaning the

apartment but im almost done with everything....
i decided to move out month end and find
another place since me and jase aren't together
anymore i dont feel comfortable staying here
anymore so i send him an sms yesterday
telling him im moving out month end and he
didn't reply even now so yha im leaving...my
phone rings the number is not saved on my
phone maybe its jase***

Me: hello

Caller: how are you beautiful (God why me)

Me: sam o batlang (sam what do you want)

Sam: ke batla wena (i want you) even now as
we are talking im hard as a rock and craving
you badly khante when will i see you

***i dropped the call shaking as hell i thought
maybe he gave up what have i done so bad to
deserve this i wish i died with my parents or
with thato i know by now i would be in a better
place an sms comes through "i know where you

live and work now im just waiting for the perfect time to come and visit you if you know what i mean

*** God no no no maybe hes bluffing gosh im shaking like a leaf and i immediately feel a pounding headache attack me and i scream out loud whilst holding my head***

Me: kedi you need to calm down or you'll go blind again or even run mad

***i kept on repeating those words to myself over and over while tears were running down my cheeks after a few minutes of crying i hear a knock on the door God nooo what if its him i have no one to call for help even nathi ive been ignoring him and i can't always call him when im in trouble or when i need his help so i just keep quiet maybe if he hears no one answering he'll leave the person kept on knocking until i heard his voice telling me to open gosh it was jase's voice i stood up and felt a bit dizzy but i

quickly maintained my balance and went to the door and opened it while wiping my tears eish and this headache was still hammering ***

Me: hi

even my nose was blocked from all the crying i did

Jase: are you ok you've been crying whats wrong

***he looked worried omg he still cares ***

Me : im ok what are you doing here

***i couldn't even look him in the eyes im sure i look horrible with puffy eyes ***

Jase: can i come in

Me: sure

*** i moved out of the way and he came in***

Jase:cleaning?

Me:yeah

Jase:why though cause you said you moving out

Me: nje

Jase: mmmmmh....so have you found a new place yet

Me: im still deciding between three flats

***he kept quiet just staring at me and i just looked down and i notice that hes wearing a black hand brace ok i wanted to ask him what happened but i decide to shut my mouth cause its none of my business right then my phone rang on top of the table and my heart started beating fast gosh what if its him i ignore it and jase just continued staring at me and this stupid phone kept on ringing gosh i was uncomfortable ***

Jase: aren't you going to answer it

***i just shook my head it stopped ringing and immediately rang again gosh jase reached for it

and my heart nearly stopped for a second ***

Jase: yeah

***he kept quiet ***

Jase: and who's calling

***he kept quiet ***

Jase: mmmmh i see she told me alot about you

***he kept quiet ***

Jase: (he looked at me with a horrifying frown
)look your sister is in the shower il tell her you
called ill make sure she calls you back

***he kept quiet ***

Jase: sure

***he put the phone down and looked at me
with a look i couldn't comprehend***

Jase: whats going on kedi is sam the same
bastard who forced himself on you

***i nod and i felt a lump on my throat gosh i

tried to swallow it but it was just too strong and a loud sob escaped my mouth and i just cried he stood up and came to sit next to me and held me tight i just cried until i calmed down i even had hiccups....he pushed me off him gently and wiped my tears with his hands and cupped my face staring into my eyes***

Jase: when did he start calling you

Me: when you were away on your Brazil trip

i looked down

Jase: (he took a deep breath)what did he say he wants

me: me

Jase: huh

Me: he said(took a deep breath) hes been craving me for months and hes coming for me....that day i called nathi i saw him at the mall but he didn't see me i tried to call jay but he didn't answer and i couldn't call you so i had no

choice but to call nathi i was scared jase in fact im still scared he...he said he knows where i live and work (i sniffed)

Jase: its okgo and pack

Me: huh

Jase: you moving in with me until i deal with this son of a bitch

Me: jase i... (he interrupted me)

Jase: its not up for discussion kedi please go and pack

Me:(i sighed)ok

***i stood up and went to pack after i was done i sat on the bed eish this headache wasn't getting any better i closed my eyes i felt a hand on my shoulder and i opened my eyes ***

Jase:what's wrong

Me: headache

Jase: il call muzi to come and check it out

Me: ok

Jase: let me take this to the car il be back

he stood up and took the bags and left after a while he came back and i locked up and we left...the was an awkward silence inside the car we said nothing to each other aarg anyway we arrived at his house and he opened the door for me went to the boot and took out my bags and we went inside and went upstairs to the main bedroom ummmm ok

Me: its ok il use the guest bedroom

he took the bags to the walk in closet and came back

Jase: firstly you are not a guest and secondly i haven't slept next to you in weeks

me: jase we are not together anymore

Jase: so you keep saying... look we belong together and you know it, the thing is you are too stubborn and hard headed to acknowledge

it... no matter how many times you run away from me kedi fate will always bring you back to me

after saying that he kissed my forehead and walked out yho

JASE'S POV

i walked downstairs filled with rage this bastard doesn't know how heartless and evil i can be i swear on my mother's grave im gonna make him suffer to a point that even death will reject him...he messed with the wrong woman hell is gonna come to earth just for him i dialled jays numbers

Jay: why do you like calling when im busy fucking someone (he was breathing heavily)

Me:il stop the time you meet and start fucking your chosen one

Jay: mxm whats up bro im busy man

me: we have some useless cockroach to crush

jay: permanently

me: no but worse than what you did to that bitch candice but i dont want him dead...death is too easy for him i wanna break his soul piece by piece

Jay:what did he do

Me: he messed with my heart

Jay: then he'll wish he was never born

Me: il see you tomorrow

Jay: sure

***i dropped the call and went upstairs to ask kedi what she'll like to eat and i get there and hear the shower running i walk in and i hear her sobbing and that broke my heart i took off my clothes and went in and she was sitting on the floor with her head down i pulled her up and

held her tight while warm water poured on us
and she just cried in my arms***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/05, 13:23] Ron: INSERT.26

.

.

.

KEDI'S POV

***after crying my eyes out we finally got out of
the shower and dried ourselves and lotioned
and i wore my pjs since it was already after

7pm and layed on the bed minutes later jase walked in with a tray and two plates of food on top he went and sat on a couch that is in the bedroom***

Jase: come and eat

Me: you cooked

***i asked walking to were he was sitting ***

Jase: my helper cooked

Me:oh ok

Jase: yeah she started on Monday

Me: ok

we ate after we were done he took the plates downstairs and found me laying in bed and he came and layed next to me and and pulled me close to him and i put my head on his chest

Jase: tell me about him

i knew who he was talking about

Me:(i took a deep breath) his name is sam and

we share the same surname hes my uncle's first born...my dad was forced to marry his mother because of tradition but they said he can marry the one he loves as a second wife and he did take my mom as a second wife then i was born....Sam's mother hated me and my mom to the core but at least dad worshipped us.... the love he showed us was out of this world as for step mother she disrespected dad every chance she got so when i was 12 mom and dad where involved in a car accident and mom died on the scene and dad died two days later thats when i started living in hell the abuse from step mother, sam and his younger sisters began a week after the funeral they used to beat me every chance they got and they made me sleep outside in the store room and the door was broken it didnt lock and i would sleep on the cold floor without a blanket sometimes three days will pass without them giving me food things got abit better when i befriended

thato she would steal food for me at her home so that i can eat...when i was 14years that when he started to force himself on me he would beat me up if i cried or tell him it hurts... i told his mom but she said i deserved it since im a daughter of a whore

***i cried and he held me tighter his body was stiff and he was breathing heavily ***

Jase: where was your father's family

Me: none of them wanted to take me in they said they have enough problems to deal with and they don't want me adding to them (i sniffed)

Jase: your mother's family

Me:apparently her parents disowned her after she agreed to be dad's second wife so i don't know them

Jase: mmmmh...so how did you end up this side

Me: i ran away i couldn't take the rape and abuse anymore so i left with thato to where she was staying in soshanguve without telling anyone

i felt his body move uncomfortably... ok

Jase: who is thato

Me: my sister well we not blood related but we had each other's backs since childhood and she was the best thing that ever happened to me after my parents

Jase: was?

Me: (i took a deep breath with more tears coming out) she was killed by some bad people

Jase: what bad people (he asked quickly)

***i just remembered im not supposed to talk about them or else jase will do some digging and they will come after him and probably kill him and jay and myself so i need to stop this conversation ***

Me: can we not talk about it the pain is still fresh please

***he kept quiet ***

Jase:(he kissed the top of my head) ok lets sleep

i tried to sleep but i couldn't and i remembered i packed my sleeping pills i tried to snuggle off his grip but he tightened it gosh this man

Jase: where are you going

Me:ummm to the bathroom

Jase: ok hurry back

he loosened the grip and i got off the bed and checked if hes sleeping and it looked like he was so went to the walk in closet and searched for them in my bag and I finally found them and i turned to go to the bathroom and he was standing at the entrance with his arms folded across his chest

Jase: i didn't know that this was the bathroom

Me: ummm i...i was looking for something

Jase: pills

Me: ummm yeah

Jase: then why were you sneaking around

Me: i wasn't

Jase: let me see (he said stretching his hand)

Me:why

he walked towards me and and snatched them out of my hand and read the outside cover

Jase: SLEEPING PILLS KEDI (he shouted)

***i kept quiet ***

Jase: ARE YOU ADDICTED TO THESE (he continued to shout)

***yes i was cause they helped me sleep when those nightmares of sam beating me up and

forcing himself on me came so i just continued to keep quiet***

Jase:YOU KNOW I HATE REPEATING MYSELF...NOW TALK!(he roared)

Me: they..they help me sleep when the nightmares come back or when i can't sleep

it came out as a whispergosh this guy looks scary when hes angry

Jase: what nightmares

Me:(tears came out) when he forces himself on me

he kept quiet for a while and pulled me to his chest and held me tight

Jase: i think you should talk to someone about it kedi sleeping pills are not the answer what will happen when you overdose huh

Me: i dont have issues jase im fine ok i was fine until he came back

Jase: yes you have issues to deal with, your parents death, the abuse and what he did to you and your sister's death you need to talk to someone it will be good for you

***i got out of his arms and took a step back ***

Me : can i please have my pills back

he just stared at me with a frown and walked out i went after him and he went to the bathroom and opened the packet and poured them in the toilet and flushed and threw away the empty packet in the bin gosh it was like someone was stabbing my heart with a sharp object i found myself on the floor whipping as if someone has died he walked towards me and pulled me up

Jase: if you ever take those pills again i swear on my late mother's grave kedi we'll have serious problems

***he wiped my tears and scooped me up and put me on top of the bed and also got in and

pulled me towards him and made me sleep on top of him holding me tight while kissing the top of my head....im mad at him right now but gosh i missed him, his touch and his hypnotic scent i kept on inhaling his scent until i dozed off***

JASE'S POV

***i woke up with my hands wrapped around kedi from behind God i missed her so much i can't believe shes here laying next to me i pulled her closer and tightened the grip around her and just enjoyed having her in my arms again but eish something doesn't sit well with me about the conversation we had last night specifically about her best friend or sister as she called her and her name being thato and the fact that she was killed by some bad people i pray and hope that her thato is not the

same thato that stole from us eish anyway also what she told me about her life growing up was really painful and it just grew the urge in me to torcher that son of a bitch even more when i get my hands on him i swear im gonna make him and his family pay for what they did to her especially him and his mother and im also worried about the sleeping pills issue....i snuggle myself off her and try not to wake her up and i went to the bathroom to pee and brushed my teeth and hit the shower after i was done i lotioned and wore my sweat pants and a vest and headed downstairs i found my helper mamdluli busy with breakfast she's from kzn she was send by grandma she said i need help with the cleaning and cooking since im not married and that she hates that me and jay live on takeawaysshe also send mamkhize to jays house too he wasn't happy im telling you.. they are both somewhere around grandma's age so im cool with it i can't have some girl

younger than me or my age as my house helper kedi would leave me without even looking back and i can't have that since shes the chosen one for me and on top of that i love her to death so yeah***

Me: morning ma

Mamdluli : morning breakfast is almost ready

Me: please make it for two

Mamdluli: makoti (she said raising an eyebrow)

Me: yebo ma

i said looking down smiling i don't know why but i respect her too much maybe its because she reminds me of grandma

Mamdluli:mmmmh (she said smiling)

***i went back upstairs leaving her busy preparing breakfast i got there and my heart was still sleeping i kissed her cheek and she moved and opened her eyes slowly ***

Me:hey

Kedi : (she smiled)hey

Me: go take a shower breakfast will be ready in a few minutes

Kedi: ok

she got up and went to the bathroom and i heard the shower running so i made the bed and called jay

Jay (breathing heavily)FUCK YOU JASE IM GETTING MY MORNING GLORY WHAT'S WRONG WITH YOU...YOU'RE DISTURBING ME MAN

*** then he dropped the call and i just laughed my lungs out i swear its just a coincidence that whenever i call him hes busy fucking some hoe it just happens anyway i send him an sms to come to my house asap and also send snakes an sms with Sam's details and told him to dig deeper on him and to find him and layed on top

of the bed thinking about what kedi told me about how she grew up it really hit me hard i swear i have a strong woman by my side imagine everything she went through and she still didn't use alcohol or drugs or even prostitution as a coping mechanism for her....she came out with a towel wrapped around her body fuck my dick went hard instantly i got up and walked towards her with a boner showing mxm this sweatpants weren't doing any justice for me....i held her from behind and inhaled her scent and kissed her neck***

Kedi: jase

Me: mmmm

Kedi: let me get dressed

Me: i miss being inside of you my heart

Kedi: i can't we broke up jase and....

***i turned her around and kissed her

forehead***

Jase: can we agree to disagree on the break up issue as far as im concerned we didnt break up....i love you kedi more than you can ever imagine im sorry for hitting you and i swear on my late mother's grave i didn't cheat on you the only thing im guilty of is letting her in my hotel room ...please forgive your king

***i kissed the tip of her nose and smashed my lips on hers and while my other hand went to her tight butt squeezing it tight while the other hand held her waist tight pulling her closer and closer to me i deepened the kiss and a moan escaped her lips shit and that drove me crazy i took off her towel and threw it on top of the bed and pulled from the kiss and stared at her body her eyes where still closed and her lips partly pouted God i love this beautiful creature infront of me she slowly opened her eyes and found me looking at her with a huge grin on my face and my dick hard as a rock and throbbing and

painful as hell***

Me: i love you my heart

*** she looked down blushing shit i scooped her up and layed her on top of the bed and took off my clothes i didn't have time for foreplay all i want was to be buried inside her....i climbed between her legs and rubbed her clit with the tip of my dick and she moaned loud i kissed her and she pulled out of the kiss***

Kedi: condom

jase: askies....look there's no way in hell im using a condom with you i haven't slept with anyone since the last time we made love and i don't plan to ever..please don't tell me you...(she interrupted me)

Kedi: no i haven't

***fuck....thank God i was about to loose iti entered her slowly and i felt her pussy walls expand she moaned louder and i groaned ***

me: fuck.... i missed you my heart

Kedi:oooh jase

shit i started moving with a fast pase i pounded her so hard she was screaming and mumbling shit i didn't understand i quickly put my hand on her mouth cause she was screaming loud i felt her body tense up and pulled her leg up and fucked her hard she dug her nails deep in my back and as she was about to scream i put my hand on her mouth again and pounded her hard and fast and deeper until my body tensed up and i slammed into her hard and shook uncontrollably while gasping for air then i collapsed on top of her both of us breathing heavily...damn i love make up sex...i raised my head smiling and stared into her eyes and they were glowing

Me: are you ok

Kedi:(smiling)yeah

me: i love you

Kedi:i love you too

i pulled out of her slowly and took the towel and wiped her and myself then kissed her pussy and she giggled damn this love i have for her is slowly but surely turning into an obsession im telling you...i layed next to her and pulled her closer and she put her head on top of my chest and dozed off i slowly got her off me gently and went to the bathroom and took a quick shower and headed downstairs and found jay eating in the lounge

Me: when did you arrive

Jay: while you two were fucking

me: mxm

Jay: and please please dude stop calling me when im busy on top of a woman

***i just laughed ***

Jay: lets go talk

we went to the study

Me: (i took a deep breath)kedi was sexually molested by her step brother since she was 14 until a few months ago when she decided to run away with her best friend and the worse part is her step mother said she deserved it when she told her imagine

Jay: what

Me: yah eish and now he found her and hes been calling her and saying hes been craving her for months....that bastard have the nerve to say hes craving my woman. My woman

I said pacing up and down trying to calm myself down

Jay: that is his sister dude what is this world coming too...is that why shes been edgy and scared

Me: yeah even that day she called nathi she said she saw him at the mall

Jay: shit

Me: im about to unleash the beast to this boy by the time im done with him and his family none of their ancestors will recognise them nx

Jay: so what now

Me: im waiting for snakes to find him then im gonna have fun with him. ...what i have planned for him will make you and snakes happy

jay: dont tell me you gonna operate on him thats my job dude...

me: (chuckling)i know just this once im not gonna kill him death is too easy for him i told you i want to break his soul piece by piece and i just know how (i said smiling)

Jay: always and i mean always remind me never to hurt kedi

***my rang it was snakes ***

Me: mamba what do you have for me

snakes : i send you an email hes just an amateur

me: ok il call you back after reading the files

Snakes :sure

he dropped the call and i opened my laptop and checked the email

Me: jay come and look at this

***he did and laughed ***

Jay: is this why he feels hes the boss and busy threatening and scaring kray's woman and my soon to be sister in law

Me: it looks like it nx

he dialled his phone

Jay: kray is gonna send you some fool's picture and where to find him i want him in the slaughter house as in yesterday unharmed and after that i want you to gather enough men and take out all the members of a Popeye gang called the black hyenas take out all the members including their boss do you hear me....and one more thing you fuck up consider

yourselves dead i want a clean job

then he hangs up while im busy sending stix the picture and the location to where he is

Jay: how is she

Me: shes strong bafo but she needs to talk to someone like a professional about what she went through so that she can heal properly but yeses shes stubborn that one

jay:(laughing) dont give up on her

me: trust me im never gonna give up on her i just want to deal with this bastard and his witch of a mother first after that il concentrate on convincing her to see a psychologist or something so that she can heal

Jay: you really love her neh

Me: more than i love myself

Jay: when i grow up i wanna be like you and love my chosen one like the way you love yours (he said imitating a child's voice)

Me: (laughing)tsek you are a grown as man
and.....nx you know what you need JESUS in
your life wena and grandma's prayers

Jay: we are twins i am you and you are me so
nawe you need JESUS in your life and
grandma,mamdluli and mamkhize's prayers

***we laughed our asses off nx this fool is just
something else but im glad hes my twin i
wouldn't trade him for anything ***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/05, 15:14] Ron: Diary ya kedi:the chozen one

INSERT. ...27

.

.

.

KEDI'S POV

i woke up and jase wasn't next to me so i got out of bed fixed it and took a quick shower and got dressed and went downstairs and i heard voices coming from the lounge i went there and it was jase,jay and an older woman so i cleared my throat they all turned and jase got up and came to me with a smile on his face

Jase: you finally awake

***he perked my lips and pulled me towards where jay and the woman where sitting and he cleared his throat ***

Jase: ma this is the lady of the house and baby this is mamdluli our house help

yho i raised an eyebrow looking at him " lady of the house neh"

Woman : she beautiful..(i blushed)

Me: dumela mama

she frowned a bit

Woman : you are tswana

***i nodded ***

Woman :does your family know you want to marry a tswana girl

she said looking at jase

Jay: (he frowned)what's wrong with a tswana girl (he looked annoyed)

Woman:they are evil and they use witchcraft easily

wow ok i just stand here staring at her shocked ..i try to walk away but jase grabs my hand and holds it tight

Jase: askies?

Woman:my son this people are not good for you you need a beautiful and well groomed Zulu girl

im sure she can't even speak Zulu and she knows nothing about...

***she didn't finish her sentence ***

Jase: SHUT UP (he shouted)TOMORROW MORNING I WANT YOU OUT OF MY HOUSE AND BACK TO WHERE YOU CRAWLED OUT FROM DO I MAKE MYSELF CLEAR

***as for me i was just standing here hurt as hell khante why do people hate me this much maybe im cursed i snuggle my hand out of jase's grip and run upstairs to the bedroom and sit on top of the bed and wiped my tears i remembered thato's words she once told i need to be strong and stop being a cry baby cause its not gonna help me with anything i stood up and went to the bathroom and fixed myself up and went back to the bedroom and sat ontop of the couch and thought about my painful life after a couple of minutes the door swang open and jase walked in and came and sat next to me

and held my hand***

Jase: im sorry about what happened downstairs
please dont take what she said to heart

Me: what if shes telling the truth about your
family never accepting me

Jase: my brother adores you and i know my
dad,grandfatherand grandmother will love you
so everyone else can go fuck themselves

Me: ok...im hungry

Jase: (he took a deep breath)are you sure you
ok my heart

Me:yeah im ok its not like il ever be your wife so
there's no need to worry about your family not
accepting me

***i said standing up he grabbed my hand and
his grip was tight and he looked hurt by what i
said but its the truth i mean i wouldn't want to
marry me too im way too broken....i love him
and i know he loves me too but i just learned

the hard way that sometimes love is not enough
and again after i told him what sam did to me
and how i grew up i dont think he'll see me the
same anymore so yah....he kept on staring at
me ***

Me: jase im hungry

Jase: lets go feed you

***we went downstairs and it was really quiet
we went to the kitchen and he told me to sit
down he'll make us something to eat***

Me: where is jay and mamdluli

Jase:(not looking at me) jay took her to the bus
station

Me:ooh

***he continued to make sandwiches in silence
aarg after he was done he gave me my plate
and a glass of juice and sat next to me and we
ate in silence ***

Me: jase im sorry about what i said i shouldn't

have said it

Jase: then why did you say it

Me: i grew up being called a whore and a witch even siphos mom called me that now its your house help that is calling me a witch maybe this is how my life is supposed to be i mean everyone hates me andv for what i dont know believe me i know you love more than anything and i love you too but its just too much jase im trying to be strong but im failing dismally i just want to be happy and all this hurt and pain to stop is that too much to ask for but people keep on hurting me and putting me down

i said with a broken voice while wiping my tears

Jase: i thought i told you to let me carry your burden kedi... to let me fight for you why is it hard for you to accept that you in a good place

Me: its hard for me to believe that im in a good place after being in hell for a long time

Jase: come closer (i did)i love you my heart and im gonna marry you i wont rest until you surname is khumalo...i live for you do you understand me i live for you and i will slay dragons for you

*** tears escaped my eyes and he wiped them and kissed me and i kissed him back he deepened the kiss and i moaned then he stood up making me stand up too and he picked me up and made me sit on top of the counter and stood between my legs and pulled me towards him and he started sucking my neck while his hand was busy massaging my clit gosh i was moaning a bit louder now i wet down there he moved from my neck to my lips kissing me hard now both of his hands squeezing my breasts gosh i wanted him inside me already ...i pulled his shirt up and ran my fingers on his 8 pack and his well build muscled tight chest and my other hand went inside his sweatpants and boxers and i grabbed his huge hard dick and i

jerked it up and down and he groaned out loud
shit***

Jase: fuck...ba..baby

***we continued kissing hard with him
squeezing my breast and me jerking him up and
down...he pulled out of the kiss and pulled
down my leggings along with my underwear
and my shirt and bra and also took off his
clothes and pulled me down from the counter
and turned me around and made me bend down
and hold on to the barstool and slammed into
me hard from behind gosh what i felt was a
mixture of pain and pleasure he pounded me
hard,fast and deeper while groaning like an
animal and while im also screaming his name
out loud..he went on and on and on until we
both came at the same time ***

Jase: fuck that was epic

***i just giggled and he pulled out and wiped me
with his vest and pulled me towards him ***

Me: i love you my king

Jase: i love you too my queen

i giggled and we kissed until his phone rang he pulled out of the kiss and bend down and took it out of his sweatpants

Jase: jay

***he was still breathing heavily ***

**he kept quiet **

Jase: ok give me an hour I'll be there

**he kept quiet **

Jase: great. ... look im busy with my heart so that fool can wait she comes first and business second

**he kept quiet then chuckled **

Jase:tsek il tell her... sharp

he looked at me with a grin on his face

Jase: jay says you turning me into a sex

machine

Me: no im not

Jase: yes you are im even addicted to your pussy

Me: not my fault you are addicted

Jase: yes it is even the animal in me is addicted to it

***i laughed then he pulled my left leg up and inserted his dick and i gasped gosh will i ever get used to how huge it is anyway he started with a fast pace while groaning and whispering things in my ear i dont understand and a few minutes later hes done he wipes me again and pick up our clothes on the floor and scoops me up and went upstairs he put me on top of the bed and went to run a shower and came back and picked me up and we showered and had another hot steamy round ***

JASE'S POV

after the hot steamy sessions we had in the shower we dried and lotioned

Me: my heart i have to go meet up with jay and some guy to discuss some business

Kedi: at this time jase

Me: its the only time hes available my heart and tomorrow hes leaving for U.K.

Kedi:ohk so i shouldn't wait up for you

***she said that with a low tone i know she thinks im laying to her and that maybe im meeting up with some girl but i dont blame her she always had trust issues and that whole scene with Theresa messed things up so i have to win her trust back ***

Me:its a business meeting my heart but il check up on you every 30 minutes ok and a security detail is on its way here just to make sure you're

safe until i come back

Kedi: ok

Me:i love you

i said kissing her

Kedi:i love you too

***i wore my black ripped jean with a black and grey v- neck shirt and timberlands and a black biker jacket and a grey cap with the front facing the back she said shes gonna have an early night shes tired so i tugged her in and kissed her one more time and and went downstairs and turned on my security system and went out and found my boys outside and left... on my way there i kept on thinking about today's events...mamdluli insulting kedi i mean it looked like she was sent here for a mission and not only to cook and clean for me ai man something is not right i mean she had no right whatsoever to be in my business but she was infact angry that kedi is tswana but one thing

for sure is im gonna get to the bottom of this cause one thing baba taught us is to never ignore a bad feeling or even a hunch also what kedi said about marriage hurt me but i guess i get where shes coming from but its high time she accepted that im never letting her go and that shes mine forever i finally arrived at the slaughter house and i went in and i found him tied to the chair he was passed out it looked like jay roughed him up a bit and i smiled damn im gonna have fun ***

Jay: finally your here i need to have a word with my sister inlaw this is too much

Me: ai voetsek man leave my wife out of this

Jay: so mamdluli's words didn't discourage you

Me:no in fact her words made me love her even more than i did

Jay: good cause i was gonna kick you ass if they did

Me: shes the chosen one dude even the beast loves her deeply

Jay: good but something doesn't sit well with me about mamdluli i think she was brought here for something else

Me: yeah i think so too but i just can't put my finger on it

Jay: me too i need to keep a closer look at mamkhize im starting to not trust her anymore

me:but ma is the one who send them here

Jay: but i think someone else got to them first

me: aunt phindile

Jay: yeah but don't worry lets deal with this fool first then deal with that witch phindile

Me: I hope shes not up to her old self again this time il fuck her up real bad man i have kedi now so i wont tolerate any bullshit from her or anyone else nx anyway wake this fucker up

one of the guys poured him with cold water and he woke up gasping for air mxm pussy...he looked around and looked at jase then me

Me: well well well sam we finally meet at long last

Sam: who are you

Me: someone even your ancestors are scared of

Sam: what do you want from me

me:i want your soul sam

*** i said giving him an evil smile his eyes popped out he looked shit scared and that made me happy cause what i have planned for him is out of this world***

[08/05, 13:23] Nor: INSERT.28

.

.

.

JASE'S POV

Sam: please dont hurt me man

Me: why shouldn't i

Sam :look i dont know who you are and what you want but please dont hurt me

Me: bafo look at this bitch busy begging me nx

Jay: (chuckling) you still gonna beg nja

Sam : what did i do entlek what is it you want from me

i slapped him so hard and spat on his face

Me:I TOLD YOU I WANT YOUR SOUL

my phone rang before i answered i told jay to put a tape on his mouth and i answered

Me: Tman tell me you already here

Tman: almost there

Me: i hope you're with javas i have fresh meat here for you free of charge

Tman:yah plus i have been craving some ass for a while now

Me:(chuckling)yeah plus this nikka likes molesting little kids and raping and beating up defenceless women

Tman:leave him to us we'll teach him a lesson he will never forget the prison way

Me: sure hurry up man im getting anxious here

i dropped the call and looked at this motherfucker

Me:you see Tman's 10 year old daughter was raped by her step father and he chopped the nikkas head off and buried his useless body somewhere no one will find it and javas' younger sister was raped by their uncle and he burned him alive and chopped his useless body

into pieces and fed it to the dogs so you in deep shit boy another thing prison is their second home (laughing) you know sometimes when they miss prison life they get arrested on purpose just to be in there and rape new inmates who are charged with rape and beat the fuck out of those who are charged with domestic violence cause both of their mothers are victims of domestic violence so you are fucked boy

i said laughing and this fool was crying tears mixed with mucus nx*

Jay: no you wouldn't kray

Me: i told you im gonna break his soul piece by piece

Jay: fuck i respect you even more bro

Me:(looking at this fool)you see you gonna pay for what you did to kedi im gonna break you worse than the way you broke her

***i gave him a death stare and his eyes popped out and the door swung open and Tman and javas walked in javas was already taking off his shirt ***

Javas: do you have a mattress

Me:yeah stix bring a mattress

stix walked out and came back with a mattress it was a single bed mattress and javas told him to put it next to the wall and told the guys to undress him and i told them to take off the tape on his mouth cause and to untie him i want to hear him scream and beg for them to stop like the way kedi said she used to beg him to stop

Sam : man im sorry i didn't mean to do it it was the devil man im sorry please dont let them do this to me please man im begging you i wont do it again i swear il go away and never bother her again

***he was crying ***

Me:DID YOU STOP WHEN KEDI BEGGED YOU TO STOP FOR FUCKEN 11YEARS DID YOU HUH AND YOU'RE HERE VOMITING SHIT OUT OF YOUR FUCKEN MOUTH LISTEN HERE YOU FUCKEN BITCH LIKE I TOLD YOU BEFORE IM GONNA BREAK YOUR USELESS SOUL PIECE BY PIECE... BY THE TIME IM DONE WITH YOU EVEN THE ANGEL OF DEATH WILL REJECT YOUYOU PIECE OF SHIT

***i looked at the guys ***

Me: have fun but dont kill him i still have other things planned for him (i looked at sam) il be watching be a good girl and scream like the bitch you are

Jay: you messed with the wrong woman dude kedi is kray's soon to be wife and my sister inlaw you and your family especially that witch you call your mother you all are gonna pay for hurting her

***we all went out and me and jay went to stand

by the mirror glass to witness everything and turned up the volume. .. javas and Tman know about the mirror glass but this fool doesn't they made him get down on his knees and bend him down forcefully then they took off their clothes the both had big smiles on their faces javas wore a condom and slammed into him from behind and sam screamed out loud begging him to stop he started crying javas pounded in and out of him hard then Tman went in front of sam with a gun in his hand and told sam to suck his dick sam refused and continued to cry then Tman hit him on his face with the back of the gun and shouted that he should blow him while javas was busy pounding him from behind while groaning loud it looked like he couldn't take the hitting any more so he sucked Tman's dick after a while they exchanged positions javas at the front and Tman at the back they would both cum and change condoms and continue it was like they drank viagra pills or

something..... as for Jay he went outside he said he couldn't take it anymore that it was too tramatic for him mxm pussy anyway things went on and on until they were both satisfied and got dressed and picked up the used condoms and rapped them with a tissue and headed out sam was just laying there on the mattress crying out loud while holding himself tight and rocking himself back and fourth the mattress was filled with blood...good now that part one is done now its time for part 2***

Javas: kray kray kray what a fresh meat thaaa nja i had fun

Tman: yah i had fun too yeses

Me: i should be the one thanking you you broke this motherfucker for me

Javas: what about that guy i told you about

Me: the files are with jay outside

Them: thaaa nja

Me: shout if you need backup

Tman:you know we have you and spilo on speed dial

Me: sure sizoringa later(talk later)

Them: sure

they went outside and i called my guys to tie this bastard sam to a chair and burn that mattress and they did.... jay walked in

Jay: bafo you know how to rip someone's soul apart

Me:no one messes with whats mine and lives to tell the tale

Jay: yah neh so whats next

Me:truth serum then electric shock and then summer circumcision and lastly nyaope then il let him go home cause i want his mother to watch his useless son suffer the same way kedi's parents suffered....watching their daughter being abused and raped everyday in

their graves if he doesn't commit suicide within two weeks then he'll experience everything over and over again excluding the truth serum and summer circumcision of course

Jay: fuck jase

Me: watch the space bafo let me call my heart and check up on her

i went outside and called her but she didn't pick up and i called her again

Kedi: hello

***she said with a sexy sleepy voice ***

Me: my heart

Kedi: hey my king askies i didn't check the screen when i answered

Me: it ok i was just checking up on you like i promised

Kedi: ok ummm how is the meeting are you guys winning

Me: (chuckling)yeah we are

Kedi: good...baby im sleepy

Me: (laughing)ok ok my queen go back to sleep il see you when i get back

Kedi: ok i love you

Me: i love you more my heart

then i dropped the call and called muzi

Muzi: bafoza

Me: muzi bring me a truth serum as in now joh and a couple of syringes and injections and some morphine and sterilized surgical knives and bandages and everything else that is needed in a theatre and recovery room that is not in the slaughter house

Muzi:what?

Me:you have an hour dude il explain everything when you get here

Muzi: ok im on my way

an hour later muzi arrived

Muzi: bafo what's going on

Me: (i took a deep breath)this son of a bitch raped kedi since she was 14 until a couple of months back when she ran away

Muzi: what? Fuck noooo i hope you are gonna kill him

Me: no... death is too easy for him i wanna break him piece by piece until he commits suicide...lets go in

***we went in and jay also entered sam was still crying silently....muzi injected him a truth serum and minutes later he laughed a bit i knew it was starting to work so i sat on top of the table facing him ***

Me: so sam tell me why did you rape kedi huh why what influenced you to force yourself on her shes your sister after all

Sam: she was beautiful and sexy i wanted to

feel how she tasted.... all my friends and guys in the neighbourhood wanted to date her but she refused all of them so that made me want to make her mine cause all the girls i dated were whores and cheap i know she was 14 years and my sister but i couldn't help it every time i looked at her or thought of her my dick would get hard

***i stood up and punched him soo hard across his face and paced up and down trying to calm myself down ***

Me: why did your mother hate kedi's mother

Him: cause she loved kedi's dad when they were in high school but uncle didn't notice her instead his brother liked her so she dated him to get closer to kedi's dad but he still didn't notice her so shit happened and she got pregnant and they got married after dad's death kedi's father was forced to marry mom and she was happy until three months later he

announced that hes taking the love of his life as a second wife and that she was pregnant that's when shit began to happen

Muzi: this is some fucked up shit

Me: what happened to kedi's parents ***i dont know why i asked that but something in me wanted me to ask ***

Sam : mom and uncle Harold killed them

***i felt a knot in my stomach ***

Jay: how

Sam : her and uncle Harold used witchcraft to kill them they didn't die naturally fortunately kedi's dad was strong so he survived but uncle Harold went to finish him off at the hospital two days later

Jay: this people are witches and wizards

Me: how do you know all this

Sam: i overheard them talking it looked like

they were sleeping together so i confronted mom two days later and she threatened that she'll go to the police and report the rape or i keep my mouth shut so i kept my mouth shut

i slapped him across his face

Me: and continued to rape her you piece of shit

Sam: im sorry ok but she was good and i couldn't stop im obsessed with her i can't help it im obsessed with her mom said shes the special one that i should break her cause shes destined for greater things and a good life

Jay: VOETSEK JOU BLEKSEM NX IKHULUMA AMASIMBA LE NJA

***the anger i felt for this piece of shit was growing every second i left the room and went outside to breathe it was around 12 midnight i went back inside and told the guys to take turns to guard him ***

me: im going back home to my wife il start with

part 3 tomorrow around 6 in the morning

Jay: are you ok man

Me: il be fine after holding her in my arms

Jay: we'll deal with all of them one by one

Me: yeah il see you in a few hours

Jay:sure

***i got into my car and drove home shit i forgot to check up on her again eish i finally arrived and my guys where still there and i told them to go rest il take it from here so they left i got in and punched a code in the alarm system so that it wont go off and wake the whole neighbourhood and scare kedi and i locked and went upstairs i found her sleeping like a baby and i went to shower and lotioned and got into bed next to her and held her from behind really tight ***

Kedi:(with a sleepy but sexy as hell voice)you back

Me: yeah i love you my heart

kedi: i love you too my king

me: sleep my queen

i woke up and checked the time and it was around 5 i got out of bed and went to shower and left a note for kedi that i had an early meeting and that il see her later and that she's off for the rest of the week from work since she only took a two days leave and i took a full bottle of Irish scotch and headed for the slaughter housei arrived there and jay,muzi and snakes were already there

Me: majita

Them: thaaa

Me: you're ready for a show

Snakes : more than ever

we laughed mxm this guy mara

Jay: you missed out last night

Snakes : dont rub it in joh

Me:lets go in i wanna finish up here to go be with my woman

Muzi: someone is whipped majita

Me: tsek

we went in and he was already strapped in an electric chair naked i looked at jay

Jay: I knew it was your part 3

*i shook my head smiling and this fool was crying silently nx i injected alcohol in his tongue and scrotum with him screaming like a bitch to induce seizures from being electrocuted and also injected him with a muscle relaxant to minimise physical injury also for when hes being electrocuted then i started to electric shock him he was screaming and shaking uncontrollably and he peed on himself mxm when it was about to get too much i would stop for about 5 minutes and continue then stop...it

went on and on for over an hour then i told muzi to check his heart beat and he said it was fine under this circumstances ***

Sam: please its enough man im sorry please forgive me il leave her alone il go back home please im begging you

*** he was crying loud with tears mixed with mucus on his face he looked disgusting i continued to electric shock him and he screamed loud shaking... . shit this fucker continued to pee on himself nx i stopped the guys were standing at the far corner quiet except for snakes he was laughing his ass off especially when sam screamed and peed on himselfmxm this guy mara ...i was done with him for now i asked the guys to take him to where he was kept and tie him to the chair again so that i can go prepare the devils bed for him ***

Jay: how is she

Me:we didn't talk much she was asleep

Jay :so are you gonna tell her about what that bastard said

Me: i don't think so bafu it will kill her shes been through hell eish entlek i dont know

Jay: eish but one thing for sure those people need to pay for what they did to her and her parents

Me:i won't rest until they do...let me check up on her

i took out my phone and called her

Kedi:jase

Me: what happened to my king

Kedi: cause i woke up and you weren't next to me if it wasn't for the note you left me i would have thought i was dreaming last night or this early morning when you held me

Me: i had an early meeting my heart but tonight

im taking you out for dinner so be ready by 8 pm sharp

Kedi: umm wow ok what should i wear

Me: nothing formal and no heels

Kedi: ok my king i love you neh

me: and i love you more my heart..i have to go ill check up on you after two hours or soo ok

Kedi : ok bye

me:bye

i dropped the call and i called a friend of mine who is s chef i told him what he needs to do and the location and i went inside the slaughter room and he was already strapped to the bed still naked with a drip already put on him and a BP machine on and an oxygen mask already on his face and muzi was busy preparing what il need to perform this operation

Muzi: you ready kray

Me:yeah lets get down to it...so he'll feel every thing

Muzi : yeah while you busy il monitor his blood pressure

Me: ok the only thing il do is cut him and you'll do the rest

muzi: sure...i wish i didn't kill that bastard that raped and killed my sister i should have tortured him like this first then killed him

Me:yeah eish

jay and snakes walked in

Jay: pls dont tell us you guy were gonna start without us

Muzi:never spilo i know you and snakes enjoy this kinda shit

Snakes :you bet we do

***we all laughed and this bastard was still crying silently nx.... i wore gloves and a

butcher's apron and i took a scalpel and grabbed his dick and cut it off jay and snakes cursed and this bastard sam screamed so loud he tried to move but he was strapped in the bed i held his dick to his face ***

Me:let me see you rape again you piece of shit
***the machine started beeping loudly then muzi sedated him and also injected him with morphine ***

Me: take over im done with him for now
***i took off the gloves and apron then walked out i went outside ***

Jay: you ok bafo

Me: for now yeah

Jay: you really fucked him up yeses

Me:(laughing a bit) im not done with him

.

.

.

#hit-like -pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/05, 13:23] Nor: INSERT.....29

.

.

.

JASE' POV

***my phone rang it was ma so i answered ***

Me:ma

Ma:nkosi what is it that i hear ukuthi you
insulted and kicked mamdluli out because of a
girl

Me:is that what she told you ma

Ma: NKOSI THIS IS NOT HOW I RAISED YOU TO

INSULT OLD PEOPLE

***i kept quiet cause i didn't wanna shout back at her and seem disrespectful ***

Ma: talk boy why would you ruin the good relationship i have with her over a girl

Me: so ma your relationship with mamdluli is more important than my happiness right you'd rather save face to that woman than to see your son happy huh

***she kept quiet ***

Me: she called the woman i plan on marrying evil and a witch all because shes tswana in front of me on top of it in my house she even said my family will never accept her since when do we discriminate against other tribes huh

Ma: (she signed) that's not how she said things happened

Me: ma... who actually came with the idea of us having maids

Ma: your aunt phindile she said you need house helpers cause you probably live on takeaways and shes right i worry about you two everyday and what you eat

Me: you dont have to worry about us ma i have kedi and shes domesticated even jay eats at my house we dont need house helpers

Ma: so her name is kedi

Me: yebo ma you'll love her she has a pure heart just like you and shes respectful and kind hearted

Ma:mmmh but I'll have to judge for myself if she is

Me: trust me she is

Ma: are you happy though

Me: yes i am ma she brings the best out of me infact im crazy about her

***i said giggling ***

Ma:wuuuh shame i think its high time i meet this girl thats making you giggle like like a teenager inlove

we both laughed one thing i love about ma is that shes got me and jay's back no matter what even though she scolds us when we mess up she always have our backs

Me:i love you ma please take care of yourself and princess and baba

Ma: (laughing a bit)you know i always do now you and your brother should take care of each other always ok

Me: always

Ma: ok bye baby tell nkosenye il call him later i know you always together.. before he starts complaining that i call you more than him....you know how crazy he gets sometimes

Me:(laughing)ok ma il tell him i love you bye

Ma:i love you too my baby

***she ended the call i wonder what phindile is up to nx i went inside and the guys were busy arguing about something ***

Me: muzi is that fool still breathing

Muzi: yeah hes in the recovery room give him four days he'll be up and ready for your final blow at him

Me: use some steroids on him to heal faster i wanna deal with that family fast so i can concentrate on my queen

Muzi: sure

Snakes: kray tupac or notorious big

Me: tupac

Jay: i told you

Muzi: mxm it doesn't count cause you guys are twins

Me:thats not fair

Snakes : yes it is you two think alike so its

obvious you'll choose what he choses

Jay: thats bullshit and you know it

***my phone rang and it was my heart i walked away from this fools ***

Me:my heart

Kedi:my king im gonna go to the mall to buy something to wear tonight and some groceries

i kept quiet if it were up to me she would stay in the house and whatever she needs would be brought to her

Kedi:baby are you still there

Me:(clearing my throat)yeah love umm il send a driver for you

Kedi: there's no need baby you know i can drive now right

Me: i know baby please lets not argue about this im sending a driver

Kedi: its no use arguing about this with you fine

but make it snappy i wont wait for him all day
bye

***she dropped the callok she sounded
annoyed but she'll have to be strong cause i
want her safe and sound and her roaming
around the mall alone is a no no for me...i call
her back ***

Kedi:jase

Me: dont you ever i mean ever drop a call on me
no matter what i dont care how angry or
annoyed you are but never ever drop a call on
me i hope i made myself clear

Kedi: is that all

***fuck eish this girl ***

Me:KEDI(i shouted)

Kedi: you made yourself clear jase can you drop
the call since im not supposed to

Me: you testing my patience kedi

***she kept quiet ***

Me: bye

i dropped the call and called one of my guys to go and be her bodyguard for the day and went back to the guys now they were arguing about soccer mxm anyway we discussed some business and jay went to buy something to eat....he came back and we ate 4 hours later it was around 4 i went to check on that fool sam and he was still out of it nx so i told the guys to let me know when hes awake and i went home...i got there and went inside and i found her in the kitchen cooking

Me: babe

Kedi:mmmm

Me:i thought i told you we going out tonight so why are you cooking

Kedi: so i should starve myself all because we going out tonight

***she snapped at me and i raised an eyebrow and walked towards her and snuggled my arms around her waist from behind ***

Me:you look pissed off

***she kept quiet ***

Me: and i guess im to be blamed

Kedi: you said you'll send a driver not a bodyguard do i look like Mitchell obama to you

i laughed my ass off....ok i must admit i didn't expect that from her

Me:no you dont cause you more beautiful and sexier and younger than her

Kedi:mxm

Me: im sorry my heart i just wanna keep you safe thats all

Kedi: but a bodyguard jase don't you think its a bit extreme

Me: no its not il tell him to keep his distance but

hes not going anywhere

she stopped stirring the pot and turned to look at me

Kedi:is it because of (she signed) sam

Me: yeah you can say that

Kedi: ok

Me:just like that

Kedi: yeah i almost had a heart attack when i saw him at the mall that time so atleast il feel a bit safe with a bodyguard close by

ok shes really scared of this useless bastard i guess he installed fear in her when he used to beat her up and force himself on her nx i can't wait until he commits suicide so she can be free...i don't wanna be the one to kill him i want him to take the cowardly way out cause thats what he is a fucken coward...i pulled her face towards me and kissed her and she pulled out of the kiss

Kedi:im sorry for dropping the call on you

Me: dont ever do it again

Kedi:ok i promise i wont and you should apologise for shouting and scolding at me

Me:i didn't shout kedi come on

Kedi:(she tried pushing me of her)jase please ok you did and i hate it i grew up being shouted at and scolded so i dont need to experience that with you

i pulled her closer and smashed my lips on her at first she didn't kiss me back but she eventually did when i sucked on her lower lip gently the kiss went on and on until she pulled out catching her breath

Me:am i forgiven for shouting and scolding you now

***she smiled and nodded damn shes beautiful and her contact lenses bring out her beauty even more one of the many things i love about

her is that she doesn't need all those long lashes ,long nails and heavy make-up to look beautiful shes just simple and natural***

Kedi:am i also forgiven for dropping the call on you

***i switched the stove off and scooped her up and went upstairs and threw her on top of the bed and took off my clothes and also took off hers and inserted myself and groaned out loud shit she also moaned out loud we made love slowly and blissfully only our moans and groans filled the bedroom after our love making session we cuddled ***

Me:does that answer you question

*** she nodded and we talked about everything that came to mind i also told her about my childhood with jay and about all the troubles we got ourselves into***

Me:whats on your mind

Kedi: my parents i miss them i just wonder how life would have been if they were still alive

Me: when last did you visit their graves

***i felt my chest getting wet eish she was crying i held her tight ***

Kedi:the day they were buried

***she said with a breaking voice ***

Me: why

Kedi:step mother forbid me from going to their graves

Me: what?why would she do that

ok that woman is beyond evil the day i get my clause on her she'd wish she was the one who died in that car accident instead of kedi's parents

Kedi:i dont know im sure they think i abandoned them and that i don't care about them anymore

Me:(i pulled her chin up)hey they know you love

them and trust me they see everything kedi they know why you haven't being visiting their graves....you know what we'll go visit their graves one weekend

Kedi:we can't thato's mom said if i ever set my feet back home il be beaten to death and burned

i sat up straight and looked at her

Me: why would she say that

***she also sat up straight ***

Kedi:she said im to be blamed for her daughter's death she said if i didn't run away to go stay with her she'd still be alive

***she wiped her tears ***

Kedi:can you believe she called me a murderer she said im cursed how can i kill the only person who cared about me,who sacrificed alot for me ,who had my back all the time she was the only family i had

she cried loud

Kedi:SHE EVEN BANNED ME FROM COMING TO HER FUNERAL I DIDN'T EVEN SAY MY GOODBYE TO HER

she continued crying and i pulled her towards me and held her tight

Kedi:its not fair life is not fair i should have died with my parents

Me:hey dont say that what about me kedi i can't imagine my life without you i breath for you my heart i live for you...you breaking my heart kedi dont talk like that

Kedi:im sorry jase is just that....

i interrupted her by smashing my lips on hers then pulled out

Me:can you do me a favour

***she nodded ***

Me:please accept that you in a good place now

and that il castrate anyone who hurts you or who even try you've suffered enough now its time for you to be happy...dont fight it

kedi:(smiling)i love you jason nkosi khumalo

Me:i love you too kedibone tamarsha malapane

***we kissed and i got between her legs and entered her slowly and we made love again this time with too much emotions involved i held her tight when i felt my body tense up and she screamed out my name and i felt her body tremble and i thrusted into her deeply and faster and fucked her throughout her orgasm then i smashed into her hard and emptied all the sperms that were stored in my balls into her and i shook uncontrollably and let out the loudest growl ever and gasped for air and i collapsed on top of her damn...after we caught out breath we went to shower and i got dressed and went downstairs to get something to drink then my phone rang it was a restricted number i

knew it was granddad so i answered walking into the study***

Me:baba

Baba:is she the chosen one

shit so ma told him eish

Me:yes she is baba

Baba: and how do you know she is

Me:because the beast has already killed for her

baba: but the beast killed for that coloured girl

i kept quiet...ok how the hell does he know that and about candice

Baba: dont keep quiet i know everything nkosi

me: that time it was me in control than the beast but this time the beast was in full control it only stopped when it saw her crying it was like her tears tamed it and that time with the "coloured girl" i took out that fool cause he defied my orders and kidnapped candice even

after i warned him to keep away from her

Baba: did she see everything that happened

Me:no she didn't she went temporary blind
when the beast wracked havoc on that bastard

baba:mmmh good you know what will happen
if she ever leaves you and be with another man
now that you have found her right

me:(taking a deep breath)yebo baba il run mad
or die

Baba:any other man interested in her

me: kani's son nathi

Baba:that family never learns first it was with
your mother now its your chosen one nx

me: shes tswana baba her name is kedibone
malapane

baba:ok why do you emphasise that shes
tswana your mother was coloured after all

me: is just that mamdluli said you'll never

accept her cause shes tswana and that they are evil and they use witchcraft

Baba: nx you mean that witch said that to you listen her and phindile wants you to marry her useless gold digging whore of a daughter which will never happen over my dead body and plus the beast has chosen the right one for you so dont mind what she said i was even curious to why all of a sudden your grandmother sends maids to you boys until i called dlamini and he told me mamdluli, phindile and mamkhize's sinister plan of having you and nkosenye marry both mamkhize and mamdluli's useless daughters but he told me to relax cause they'll fail dismally now i see why they failed cause you found her and as for nkosenye you know him

***bab'dlamini is grandfather's trusted traditional healer ***

Me: phindile will never learn she better stay

away from kedi or i swear il unleash the beast on her if shes not careful

baba:dont worry about her il handle her....look you better bring her next month at princess's party and its not up for discussion

shit i hate it when he uses his authoritative tone

Me:ok baba

Baba:good.. take care of her and keep her safe

Me:i will

then he cut the call ok that went well i went out of the study and i called out kedi

Kedi:kitchen

***i walked in and what i saw was out of this world she was wearing a beige long sleeve lace short tight dress with some cream white sandals and her weave had some curls now cause earlier on it was straight without any curls and she put on a bit of make-up but not

too much and those contact lenses were doing wonders to her new look damn ive never seen her like this before even my dick was hard as a rock even throbbing***

KEDI'S POV

*** this week has been a roller coaster ride jase has been busy going to endless meetings even at night but hey i have to learn to trust him i mean he wouldn't call me every 30 minutes to check up on me if he was with another woman right and eish his controlling ways and being over protective sometimes gets to me but somehow i understand where hes coming from i mean sam is still out there and im sure hes still looking for me so yah atleast il be safe with the bodyguard he brought for me.... the love making session we had earlier on was out of this world i think our souls were connected

what he made me feel was unexplainable with words even the way he growled when he came it was scary it was like there was a lion in the room anyway right now im standing here looking at this perfect creature standing not far from me with his mouth and eyes wide open and my eyes wonders down below his belt and he has a huge and hard boner gosh i guess its this dress its short which is something i never wear and will probably not wear anytime soon cause i feel naked and uncomfortable but today i wanted to be free and unpredictable and different cause il be safe with him i know no one will touch me inappropriately or force themselves on me so yah ***

Me:my king are you ok

Jase:ummm i hope you'll never wear this dress without me around you look dashing my queen absolute perfection

***i blushed ***

Me:well thank you and you look handsome my king

he was wearing a blue ripped jean ,sneakers which looked expensive a v-neck short sleeve shirt which was showing his muscles and tattoos and a cap with the front of it at the back gosh he looked yummy his dress code was simple but yummy as hell

Jase:thank you my queen

***he walked towards me with his right hand holding his boner on top of his jean while biting his bottom lip he grabbed my waist tight pulling me towards him closer to his body and his other hand went to my thighs gosh this man he kissed my lips while brushing my thighs gently and holding my waist tighter ***

Jase:you look sexy my heart how the hell do you expect me to concentrate tonight

Me:just try ok

Jase: mmmmh try neh

Me (i giggled)yeah

Jase:im one lucky son of gun you know that eish lets go before i tear this dress into tiny pieces and have you right here on this cold floor

he took my hand bag on top of the kitchen counter and we walked out of the kitchen until he gave me my hand bag and ran upstairs and seconds later he came down with a fresh towel

Me:and what's with a towel

jase:(smiling)its for our dessert later on baby the things im gonna do to you tonight nc nc nc

***he said pulling me to the door...i have myself to blame i chose to wear this stupid dress after all im sure by tomorrow i wont be able to walk properly mxm i wonder what he had planned for us tonight ***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/05, 13:23] Nor: INSERT.30

.

.

.

***NARRATED ***

***three days later sam woke up and he was a mess in fact that was an understatement he was fucked he wished they should have killed him instead the torture was one thing but kray as they called him when he cut of his manhood he actually killed his soul like he said he would now he couldn't call himself a man cause he had nothing to show for it...he wished death

upon himself but he knew he didn't have the guts to do it so jase injected him with nyaope drug and when he'd be high muzi would withdraw it from his system and when the withdrawal symptoms would kick in he would pee on himself and even shit on himself they would promise him the drug if he cleaned his mess and he would a day later they would give him a fix this went on an on the whole day for three days until they released him and dropped him off in front of his home high as hell right in front of the gate around 4 in the morning ... one off the neighbours on his way to work spotted him laying flat on the ground he tried to wake him up but he was out of it he checked his pulse and he was still alive he screamed out for help and took out his phone and called an ambulance and also called Sam's mother since no one in the house came out when he screamed for help***

Sam'mom: hello

***she said with a sleepy voice ***

Man: susan come out to your gate now

Susan : jacob is this you man man man do you know what time it is ai ma...

he interrupted her

Jacob: nx its your son woman come out now

Susan : huh my son where..what ok im coming

***she said getting out of bed and wearing her gown while screaming for her daughters to wake up and come outside...she got outside and she saw a couple of people standing there and she opened the gate while her daughters were running after her she took two steps outside and she saw her son laying there motionless and she screamed so hard while walking to where sam was laying ***

Susan: ohh my God what happened to my son...baby whats wrong please wake up baby please

she was crying loud

Jacob: i already called an ambulance look i have to go i dont wanna be late for work il check up on you later

with that he left Jacob is one of the guys sam's mother sleeps with occasionally the ambulance finally arrived and he was taken to hospital

Karabo: mom what happened to him

Susan : i don't know my baby but whoever did this to my son will pay dearly

Lebo: im scared mama he looked so pale

she said wiping her tears off

Susan: im also scared baby but i know my son is strong so he'll pull through

***after a couple of hours the doctor came out and asked them to follow him to his office and they did the got in and sat down ***

Doctor: im doctor ledwaba and i must say since i became a doctor I've never seen what i saw in your son's body

Susan: wh..what do you mean doctor

Doctor: mam it looks like you son was tortured severely

Them: what?

Doctor : thats not all

***he took a deep breath ***

Doctor : we found a lot of drugs in his system especially the one in simple terms is called nyaope and his manhood was cut off

Karabo: wh..what?

lebo just cried out and Susan was just numb as for karabo tears just streamed down her cheeks while she wept silently

Doctor: whoever did that to him was a professional he doesn't have any infections its

like he was treated after he was cut but he also have injuries all over his body which shows that he was severely tortured

Susan : ohh my God who could have done this to my precious son who

she cried so hard after talking to the doctor they asked if they can see him and he agreed so they went to the ward he was in and he was sleeping

Karabo: abuti what happened to you who could have done this to you

***she said crying silently ***

Susan: im gonna find whoever did this to you and il deal with them...NO ONE I MEAN NO ONE MESSES WITH MY SON AND GETS AWAY IT

***she said wiping her tears...after a while they left cause visiting hours were over she immediately dropped off the girls at home and drove to her witch doctor peter's house she got

there and they went inside***

Susan: makhosi i want you to find out who did what they did to my son

***he didnt ask questions he just threw the bones down and what he saw traumatized him instantly ***

Peter: what? no no no

*** whatever peter saw with his bones confirmed what he dreamed about for days now after having that dream of seeing people or a person mutilate someone on top of a table while he was still breathing he consulted the bones but they didn't show him anything now he knows why he was scared shem now he knew who ever hurt Susan's son will be coming after them the bones showed him death and someone confessing their past evil deeds and a girl***

Susan: WHO DID THIS TO MY SON TELL ME MAKHOSI I WANT THEM DEAD (she shouted)

Peter: i told you to kill that girl along with her parents now living her alive has come to bite us in the ass

Susan: what does that cockroach has to do with my son being tortured and mutilated

Peter: whoever did this to your son know what he did to her and it looks like your son confessed everything he knows about our involvement concerning your husband and his wife everything

Susan: what no no no my son would never say anything he wouldn't throw me under the bus just like that im his mother

Peter: its the truth and they are coming for us what if they go to the police maybe they recorded him as evidence shit no no no you need to make a decision Susan its either him or you by you i mean us

Susan: o batla goreng pila pila huh (what are you trying to say exactly huh)

Peter: you know what im trying to say Susan and im sure Harold will agree with me

Susan: wa gafa (you are mad) if you think il kill my son to save myself... to save you two

Peter: im not going to jail because your son couldn't keep his mouth shut you hear me and im sure Harold will agree

Susan: nx

she stood up and left she got into her car and cried hard his precious son's manhood cut off and him tortured like that broke her to the core....whoever did that to his son did it to protect and avenge for kedi and her parents she wondered who that could be...she called Harold he didn't answer the first time but the second time he did

Harold:susan im busy right now can we talk later

Susan :(sniffing)they tortured him harry

Harold: they tortured who

Susan : your son Harold sam

Harold : i don't understand what you saying
susan please be clear

Susan :sam was tortured jacob our neighbour
found him passed out barely breathing in front
of my house on his way to work

Harold :WHAT? WHERE IS HE PLEASE TELL ME
HES ALIVE SUSAN PLEASE TELL ME MY SON
IS ALIVE YOU KNOW HES THE ONLY CHILD I
HAVE AND WILL EVER HAVE (he shouted)

Susan: hes alive but they almost killed him
Harry (she cried hard)

Harold:where are you now

Susan :peter's house

Harold: give me 15 minutes tops il be there

***he dropped the call and Susan put her head
on the steering wheel and she continued to

cry...you see sam is harold's son Susan never loved her first husband so she cheated with Harold cause he looked alot more like kedi's father since she couldn't have him until she fell pregnant she told him but he wasn't ready for marriage and commitment he then told Susan to pin the pregnancy to his other brother who she was dating back then "kedis uncle " so since he was inlove with her and believing that the pregnancy was his he paid lobola for her and they got married and year's later they had karabo and lebo but Susan didn't love him she just tolerated him for the sake of her kids Harold left for Durban and told susan he would come back for her and their child but he never did until when sam was 16 and he came back cause he was involved in an accident and he was told he couldn't impregnate a woman anymore....his wife cheated on him after finding out and eventually left him so he decided to comeback and claim his son back susan was

happy to see him cause to her it was like she saw kedi 's father so they plotted to kill her husband and they did Susan poisoned him they thought the elders would choose Harold to take over his older brother's household cause kedi's dad was in Johannesburg but they were wrong cause the elders chose kedi's dad...Susan was over the moon to the news but Harold would hear none of it he wanted both of them to kill him but Susan refused until kedi'dad said he wanted to take a second wife after a few years of marriage he saw how kedi's dad loved the second wife he was so inlove with her it was sickening to her even though he tried to show some affection and also tried to treat them equally it wasn't enough for her one day when kedi was 12years she overheard them talking kedi'mom was pregnant again as for her they tried for a baby for years but nothing happened so she went to her witch doctor and he told her shes carrying a boy thats when her

hatred, jealousy and anger escalated and emerged she finally agreed that they kill both kedi's mom and her dad and she kept kedi alive to abuse her and break her as punishment to her dead parentsHarold finally arrived and they went inside***

Harold: what happened to my son Peter

Peter: your son went to Pretoria to look for your niece hes so obsessed with her to a point that it lead to him being tortured like this...the people or person who did this to him are or is connected to her in a way that its mysterious their connection to each other is so mysterious that even death cant break the connection

Susan: what? is she blood related to this person or people

Peter: the bones dont say

Harold: something is bothering you Peter what is it

Peter: like i told susan...your son told this people or person about what really happened to your brother and his wife that it wasn't just an accident but that we killed them

Harold: what? no no no no

Susan:my son wouldn't do that to me

Harold: SHUT UP!.... YOUR SON RAPED HIS COUSIN FOR 11 YEARS HE WAS TOO MUCH OF A SISSY TO GET A PROPER GIRLFRIEND HIS AGE INSTEAD HE CHOSE TO FORCE HIMSELF ON A 14 YEAR OLD NOW WHAT WOULD STOP HIM FROM SINGING LIKE A CANARY WHEN HE WAS BEING TORTURED HUH(he shouted)

Susan: my son wouldn't sell me out

Peter: WELL HE DID AND IF THOSE PEOPLE DONT COME AFTER US KNOW THAT THEY MIGHT HAVE RECORDED HIM AND THEY MIGHT SEND THAT RECORDING TO THE POLICE AND I CAN'T GO TO JAIL (he also shouted)

Susan : WELL YOUR BONES ARE LYING My SON W...

***she didn't finish her sentence ***

Peter:CONTINUE INSULTING MY ANCESTRAL BONES AND IL MAKE YOU RUN MAD THIS INSTANT. ..I DARE YOU WOMAN(he roared)

Susan kept quiet angry as hell

Harold :susan go outside and breath before Peter looses his cool

Susan :what?you are not discussing my son without me

Harold : dont piss me off susan im not in the mood leave now

Susan: nx

she left angry as hell instead of going out to calm down she got into her car and went home

Harold:calm down peter tell me what to do

Peter: (he took a deep breath)Harold this people are dangerous the bones says so and i can also feel it we in deep shit my brother i told Susan to kill that girl along with her parents but because she wanted to punish the dead now her being alive has come to bite us in the ass we have only three options to run away or to take out your son cause his testimony to the police might send us to jail for life or they might come after us so we wait for them to strike and defend ourselves cause we can't do anything in my part cause it seems like they are protected or some sought from witchcraft

Harold: shit i can't loose my son Peter you know hes the only child i have

Peter : they fucked him up Harold hes broken my brother hes still alive cause there's still air in his lungs but hes as good as dead they killed his soul...hes a walking corpse they even cut off his manhood

***Harold stood up quickly his whole body shaking not his son he couldn't believe what he was hearing ***

Harold: the...they did what

it came out as a whisper

Peter: i can't even say it twice my brother those people are heartless...i saw it in my dreams and it scared the shit out of me...i didn't see their faces or the face of the one that was being cut but now i know that dream was about sam shit eish

Harold: let me go home and think

Peter: ok you'll let me know what you decided

Harold went out with his head spinning he couldn't believe everything that was happening and what happened to his son it was just too much he got into his car and drove straight to the hospital to see his son

KEDI'S POV

***its been almost a week now since that special night i had with jase yho it was amazing he had dinner set up in a roof top of some building he said he owned everything was just beautiful there were romantic lights everywhere a romantic table set in the middle of the roof top close by there was what looked like an aero space mattress with pillows and blankets ok i knew this guy was crazy there was no way in hell we were going to sleep there but hey who was i fooling mxm we slept there...after the delicious food we had we danced around to some slow jams after we were tired of dancing we layed down on the aero space mattress and talked about silly things hehe the way this guy made me laugh that night yho shem it was like he was some comedian i swear he was on another level shem i've never laughed like that before i was in

stitches almost all night anyway we made love...
ok let me be honest he fucked me yho the
things he did to me and the positions he
introduced to me were out of this world i even
ended up giving him a bj... yep i did ...i dont
even remember how many rounds we had it
was like he drank some viagra pills or mpesu
im telling you even in the morning i woke up to
him pounding me hard and groaning like an
animal with both my legs up on his chest i was
numb from my waist down the only thing i felt
was his dick going in and out of my pussy... the
rest of my body was painful and as for my
vijay jay it was swollen and painful but i must
say i enjoyed every bit of it....after that we
headed home and we slept almost the whole
day i couldn't even walk he would carry me
around the house to wherever i wanted to go
on his back and he didn't mind shame he
actually enjoyed it even around 9 at night when
jay came to check up on us and of course eat

he laughed his ass off when i told jase i needed to pee and he carried me on his back to the bathroom...he said im turning his brother into a softy and a sissy...so anyway jase said nextweek friday or Saturday we going back to northwest to visit my parents graves i protested because of what thato's mom said will happen if i come back home but he would hear none of it he even threatened to "fuck me up" his words not mine if i dont stop finding ways to back out so yah i guess i dont have a choice eish***

JASE'S POV

***the dinner date went well and what happened after we ate was out of this world the things i did to her and the things she did to me was just epic i think its safe to say im deep in love with kedi to a point of no return and i know

she feels the same way i can see it in her eyes and in her soul and through her actions it shows she feels the same way and i also told her we going back to her home town to visit her parents graves she protested reminding me about what her late friend's mother said about her never setting her feet there well il burn that entire village or township down if anyone is as much as look at her in a bad way even if that bastard sam will still be alive by next weekend i want kedi to see him at his worst i know that will motivate him to take the cowardly way out and just fucken die so my queen can be free...still talking about that fool sam he finally woke up and i injected him with the nyaope drug and muzi would withdraw it from his system and when the withdrawal symptoms kicked in he would pee and shit on himself nx anyway i tortured him for three days after i was satisfied i let him go my boys dropped him off at his crib and i told them to tail him and his

mother until further notice and they didn't
disappoint they got me a picture of sam's
mother and uncle and a house number of the
witch doctor they went to visit after sam was
admitted in hospital...mmmm im gonna have
fun with this witch and her two wizards snakes
is busy doing some research on them i can't
wait to get my hand on them nx***

.

.

.

#hit-like -pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/05, 13:37] Nor: Diary ya kedi:the chozen one

INSERT.....31

.

.

.

***NARRATED ***

***Harold arrived at the hospital and went straight to Sam's ward and saw him laying there looking pale and weak he held his hand and a tear escaped his eye and he wiped it quickly ***

Harold: im sorry my son i wasn't there to protect you...im sorry i didn't tell you who your real father is maybe if i did i would have raised you better and showed you the right path i would have also stopped you from hurting your cousin all of this is happening because your mother is a selfish bitch who didn't want to tell you who your real father is

another tear escaped his eye and he wiped it

Harold: she should have stopped you the first

time it happened but no she chose to punish
the dead nx none of this would have happened
of it wasn't for her

sam opened his eyes slowly

Sam: uncle(he whispered)

Harold: son how are you feeling

Sam: wa..water (he whispered)

***Harold made him sit up a bit and helped him
drink the water after he was done he helped him
lay back again***

Sam: where am i and how did i get here(he
whispered again)

Harold:you're in hospital and jacob found you
laying there almost dead infront of you mother's
gate

***sam kept quiet and started shaking and
tears came rushing out as events of him being
tortured,raped and his manhood cut off came
flooding in***

Harold:sam are you ok

***he didn't answer he continued shaking and crying so Harold called for help and nurses came in and they sedated him Harold was devastated to see his only child like that he left the hospital with a heavy heart...two days later he was discharged but the doctor advised them to admit him to a psychiatric hospital cause his condition worsened he was now talking to himself after he was discharged a day later his mother early in the morning found him hanging from a tree that was in the backyard dead... he took the cowardly way out and hanged himself

A WEEK AND A FEW DAYS LATER

***sam was finally put to rest the following week on saturday his death hit his mother and sisters hard more soo because Harold blamed

her for Sam's death things were really bad between them to a point that Harold wanted to be the one to bury his son...the truth about Sam's paternity finally came out and everyone was shocked and a war between Harold and Susan emerged until the elders intervened and they convinced Harold to let Susan bury Sam because it definitely won't bring him back whether he's buried by him or by Susan they told them to bury Sam in peace first then they can continue with their squabbles....during the funeral there were tensions everywhere the girls were angry at their mother for lying about Sam's paternity for all these years and Harold blamed Susan for his son's death and Susan wasn't coping with his son's death and the elders saw Susan as a whore who cheated on his husband with his younger brother as for Harold he was seen as a betrayer and a disgrace to the Malapane family so everything was in shambles...everything was falling apart for them***

JASE'S POV

last week friday i got a call from my boys tailing sam, his mother and uncle saying that bastard finally committed suicide anyway good riddance to bad rubbish so today he was being buried nx....one down three to go..... around 6 in the morning i woke up and went to run the shower and went back to the bedroom to wake my queen up and trust me its a struggle she really doesn't want to go but unfortunately she had no choice jay decided to come with us he said we need his protection mxm

Me: baby wake up come on jay will be here anytime now

Kedi:mmmm jase im not feeling well

***shes right she hasn't been feeling well lately she has headaches,she sleeps alot and shes

gaining a bit of weight too but on the right places you know, now my dick gets excited when i look at her now growing butt and also growing hips and she eats alot this days but i choose to keep my mouth shut cause she's also a bit moody and short tempered and her crying tendencies have escalated now but i love her even more in fact she drives me insanely crazy***

Me:come lets go shower

Kedi:jase cant we postpone to maybe next year around march

Me:o dakiwe (you drunk) come on lets go and shower

Kedi: my king please

Me: not going to work kedi come on get up

***i dragged her out of bed fuck she was naked i didnt allow her to get dressed after the epic love making we had last night and i swear i

became hard instantly i carried her to the bathroom while her eyes were still shut shame she was really sleepy i put her down inside the shower and warm water hit us***

Kedi: jase I'm still sleepy can i go back to bed please

Me: not gonna happen kedi we have to go

Kedi: but jase..

***she didn't finish her sentence i pushed her towards the wall and pulled her leg up and smashed into her hard shit it felt good but the main purpose was to wake her up....i started with a fast pace and she moaned loudly and i groaned louder my other hand was holding her leg up while my other hand was wrapped around her waist tight i continued going in and out of her fast with my grip getting tighter until i felt her body shake and she screamed out my name... i wasn't far behind i felt my body tense up and i slammed into her hard and i released

and growled out loud shit that was good after our session i knew she was wide awake now so we showered and got dressed while she was busy fixing her hair i made the bed and headed downstairs and i found jay eating mxm this fool mara and Masibiya busy with our breakfast...Masibiya used to work for me for years until a year ago when her husband got sick so she had to resign and go take care of him unfortunately he passed away so after the mamdluli saga i didn't want kedi working like a slave busy cleaning this huge house alone so i decided to call her and she was available and she was also done with her mourning so she started last week Thursday and shes been great even kedi is already fond of her and they get along just fine and that makes me happy ***

Me: morning ma

Masibiya: morning son

Me: jay how is it that you eat breakfast before

the man of the house eats

Jay: we are twins so im also the man of the house

Masibiya: you too will never change shame

she laughed which also made us laugh

Kedi: morning mama

Masibiya: morning baby

Kedi: hey jay

Jay: makoti

Kedi: please dont start with me tuu

Jay: but you are my sister in-law mos khante why are you moody this days

Kedi: no im not

Jay: yes you are is like everything and everyone pisses you off this days

Kedi: i dont know what you are talking about anyway did you get my message last night

Me: what message (they ignored me)

Jay: shit i forgot look we'll buy it when we leave

Me: what message(they ignored me again)

kedi started crying... and now?..she cried loud and stood up and started hitting jay with her tiny fists ok whats going on now

Kedi: WHAT THE HELL DO YOU EXPECT ME TO EAT HUH IF I KNEW YOU WOULDN'T BRING MY TWISTER I WOULD HAVE TOLD JASE TO GO BUY IT FOR ME WHEN HE WOKE UP BUT I TOLD YOU CAUSE YOU WERE COMING HERE THIS MORNING...WHY WOULD YOU DO THIS TO ME HUH WHY(she shouted)

God she was really crying i just stood here dumbstruck shocked as hell and jay was scared as hell

Kedi: i want my twister jay i want it now(she continued to shout)

*** i walked towards her i held her in my arms

and she didn't protest she just continued to cry silently***

Me: my heart jay will go buy it now as in now ok... right jay

i said looking at him

Jay: ummm yeah sure il go buy it right now ok

he said raising his eyebrows looking at me and i just shrug my shoulders he stood up and grabbed his car keys

Kedi: please also buy me a MacDonald's big mac burger and a milkshake and make it two twisters

***me and jay just looked at each other shocked ***

Jay: ummm sure

***he walked out shocked as hell i wanted to laugh at him but i was still dumbstruck i wanted to ask her if shes ok but i was scared she'd start crying again or better still snap at me as

for masibiya she was smiling none stop looking at us and she looked like she was also holding a laugh ***

Kedi: i need to pee

*** she said whispering while she was whipping her tears off and pushing me off her gently and she ran upstairs***

Me: what just happened

Masibiya: you are about to be a father that's what happened

Me: what?

Masibiya: shes pregnant i saw her the first time you introduced us she was glowing and she still is and today jay experienced the full wrath of her hormones ...

and then she laughed i just stared at her trying to process what she just said

Me: how do you know

Masibiya: i have 7 children and more than 10 grandchildren so i know a pregnant woman when i see one even if your grandmother was here she would tell you the same thing im telling you that you are about to be a father in a few months

***i just sat on a barstool with my elbows on top of the counter and my hands on my head...so kedi might be pregnant fuck i didn't know whether to cry or to just laugh or to scream out of happiness i know it was a matter of time before i got her pregnant on purpose but now it looked like fate took charge again ***

Kedi: baby are you ok

***she disturbed me from my thoughts touching my shoulder i got off the barstool and pulled her to my chest and i held her tight while kissing the top of her head ***

Me: you scared me earlier on what happened

*** i couldn't tell her that she might be pregnant

shes a bit crazy she will think i got her pregnant on purpose so its better she finds out herself but i must say i hope that she is pregnant***

Kedi: i dont know i felt myself get emotional and hurt that he forgot my twister and i just couldn't control myself im sorry jase

Me: you dont have to apologise my heart its fine

Kedi: i hope jay will be as understanding as you

Me: trust me he will

Kedi: ok il wait for my twister in the lounge those eggs smell horrible

she said that and walked to the lounge..minutes later jay walked in carrying a paper bag

Jay: is she calm now i tried to be quick

Me:(chuckling)yes she is look bafo masibiya says kedi is pregnant and i think so too all the signs are there they are abit similar to mom's when she was pregnant with princess

jays eyes popped out

Jay: what?

Me: yeah

Jay: shit did you tell her

Me: no i want her to find out by herself you know how crazy she can be she might think i impregnated her on purpose

Jay: wow so im gonna be an uncle/dad

Me: a what?

Jay: we are twins so im gonna be an uncle/dad

Me: (laughing)you know what im not even gonna comment

Kedi:jay did you get them

jay got abit startled and i laughed

Jay: yeah here they are

**he gave the paper bag to her and she checked inside and eish her smile just brightened up the

room jay and i ended up smiling looking at her***

Kedi: thanks jay ooh and im sorry about earlier on i don't know what got into me

Jay: dont worry about it

Kedi: so we cool

Jay: always makoti

***she just laughed and shook her head and i smiled like a retard God i love this woman ***

Me: my heart you'll have to eat in the car cause we have to go

Kedi: ok let me go get our bag

Me: dont worry about it il go get it

Kedi: ok

***i went to take it and told masibiya we off and i found them already in the car and we drove off...i watched her through the review mirror and she was really enjoying her food after she

was done she just looked out the window and kept quiet..i could tell she was nervous about the trip back home***

Me: you ok my heart

Kedi: (she took a deep breath) yeah

Jay: you're safe with us kedi dont worry about anything nothing will happen to you

Kedi: i know jay im scared of the condition il find my parents graves in the last time i was there was the day they were buried and im sure no one made time to go clean them

she said in a low tone

Me: now if that's the case then we'll clean them up or find someone to clean them

Kedi: thank you guys for this and for always having my back

Jay: its a pleasure kotiza anything for you

Kedi:(laughing)now im kotiza im no longer

makoti

Jay: yeah i think kotiza sounds better

she laughed by the time we reached mabopane highway she was fast asleep...we stopped at a filling station and kedi was still asleep so i decided to let her sleep i filled the tank while jay went to buy snacks and drinks after filling the tank i went and parked at the parking lot and jay came back right then my phone rang i checked and it was a call from some girl i fucked as a one night stand that week i didn't see kedi after i slapped her..shes just some loose panty a none factor in my life i rejected the call and she kept on calling

Jay: aren't you going to answer that

me: its that bitch i fucked few weeks back

Jay: i hope you haven't been fucking that loose thing kray

Me: of course not it was a mistake the first time

and i swore on mom's grave il never hurt kedi
like that again i regret it each passing day even
though she doesn't know i know she'll leave me
if she does and i can't have that man now its
even worse cause she might be pregnant infact
she's pregnant i can feel it

Jay: good

my phone started ringing again nx

Me:what is it

Caller: hi

Me: i asked you what is it

Caller: jase we need to talk its important can we
meet please

Me: listen here you stupid bitch i don't have
time for you bullshit im busy with my wife now
say what you want to say now or forever hold
your piece

Caller: w...wife

Me: i don't have time for this

i dropped the call

Jay: what did she want

Me: i don't know and i don't care...lets go

we got inside and jay got in the driver side while i went to the passenger side and we left after a while we saw a board saying Centerville so i woke kedi up and she looked scared suddenly she took a bottle of still water and gulped it down she had tears in her eyes she was trying to fight them back

Me: jay pull over

he didn't ask why he just did..i got off and opened her door and pulled her out and held her tight in my arms and she let out a sob

Me:baby nothing will happen to you ok you need to trust me and jay when we say nothing will happen to you

Kedi: i know jase but still im scared this place

brings really bad memories I'd rather forget

Me: deal with those painful memories and confront them first then you can move on with a clear mind and healed soul baby

Kedi : its not easy jase trust me its not

Me: it may not be easy but baby now you have support now you not alone like before you are jase's woman and jay's kotiza so you dont have to be scared anymore because of some puppets you have a full force behind you my heart so walk tall and hold your head high show them they only made you stronger with their abuses

she smiled while wiping her tears off

Kedi: what have i done so great to deserve you

Me: you bumped into me and called me an arrogant jerk and ohh you called my grandfather the founder of boko haram

she laughed so hard

Me: come on lets go i can't wait to see where my inlaws are layed to rest

she smiled and we got into the car and we went into her hood she directed us to the cemeteryafter this im going to visit the next victims of kray and spilo's wrath and deal with them in a special kinda way the info i got on them from snakes will make us have fun with them before they also take the cowardly way out

.

[08/05, 13:41] Nor: INSERT.....32

.

.

.

KEDI'S POV

we finally arrived at the cemetery and we drove in and i took a deep breath i needed to be strong today breaking was not an option

Jase: you ready my heart

***i just nodded they both got out and jase opened the door for me jay locked the car and we walked further down i still remembered where they were buried they were buried under the biggest tree in the cemetery but what i wasn't prepared for was to find them in this state they were in there was long grass everywhere and they were flat to the ground not even a bump on them showed that they were graves ..the only thing that showed that there were graves there were stones surrounding the graves and dad's favourite coffee cup i brought for him for his birthday with mom's help and one of mom's favourite table charm's tea cup on top of their used to be graves i swear ive never cried like this before the pain i felt seeing my parents graves like this broke me to the

core im sure they think i abandoned them jase tried to console and comfort me but i was broken shem and the hate i felt towards Sam's mother escalated***

Jase: dont worry baby il fix this ok please calm down my heart its not good for the ba.....for you baby

jay was busy talking on the phone while jase's arms were holding me tight

Jay: some boys are on the way here to clean the graves

Jase: thanks bafo (he looked at me) lets go to the car

***we went to the car and sat at the back while jay was busy talking on the phone a few minutes later a van pulled over and three guys got out and went towards jay and jase kissed my lips and got out of the car and went to them after a while the guys took out their garden tools and went after jay and jase walked

towards the car and got in***

Jase: are you ok my heart

Me: yeah

***his hand went to my belly and he rubbed it gently...ummm yho ok.. while his other hand pulled me towards him and he pecked my lips

Jase: will you be ok here

i nodded

Jase: ok

***he went out and walked towards where jay was while those guys were busy on the graves...i sat here thinking about my parents what hurts the most it that i dont even remember their faces correctly i mean i was 12 when they died and my evil step monster burned all the pictures i had of them and plus the traumatic experience i had i think also affected my childhood memories but one thing

il never forget about them is their voices...mom had a sweet and calm voice while dad's voice was hoarse and a bit deep like jay's i was interrupted from my thoughts by someone cursing***

JASE' POV

while the boys where busy cleaning the graves they dug out what looked like two dolls male and female with their heads cut off with pins all over them and tied together and a bottle filled with a red substance that looked like blood

Me: dont touch them

***i took out my phone and called baba and i told him what i have found ***

Baba: take those things and take them away from the graves and your chosen one and break

that bottle and pee on them then set them ablaze make sure you dont touch them anyhow

Me: ok baba

Baba: son take care of my daughter inlaw and great grandchildren make sure absolutely nothing happens to them

Me: how did you kn..

he interrupted me

Baba: i told you i know everything...il call later to check how everything went now give the phone to nkosenye and go do what i told you

Me: ok

***ok how did grandad know kedi is pregnant and he said grandchildren fuck does it mean shes carrying twins... i went back and gave jay the phone ***

Me: it baba

he took the phone and walked away

Me: majita do any of you have a lighter

Guy1: sure here it is

he gave it to me

Me: how about petrol

Guy2: yeah we have it in the car

he left and came back with a 2liter bottle filled with petrol

Me:and why do you walk around with a 2liter bottle filled with petrol

Guy1: aow bozza to fill the tank

Me:with 2liters come on joh it wont get you anywhere

Guy2: we mix it with water

Me: ok you know what im not gonna ask any further

*** they laughed..i used one of their shovel to pick those things up and went further down the graveyard and placed them down and i looked

around for a plastic and covered the bottle and smashed it with a rock and it broke and i lifted the plastic a bit with the shovel to expose the red liquid and i peed on top of the liquid and dolls then i poured the petrol on them and burned them...i watched as they burned to ashes and i went back and i told the guys to continue that its safe***

Guy1: bozza im telling you ke boloi fela moo (this is witchcraft)

Jay: i hope you didn't touch those things

Me: ofcourse i didn't

Jay: good i can't have a raving mad twin brother
we both laughed

Me: well you'll have one if kedi finds out about the moment of weakness i had cheating and she leaves me***

Jay: then we better make sure she never ever finds out

Me: well for her to never find out is if that bitch dies

Jay: that can be arranged

***i kept quiet and the thought of loosing kedi crept up on me and i felt my stomach knot..i can't loose her... i remember dad going on a killing spree when mom disappeared and everyone thought she left dad only to find out later that she was actually kidnapped by kani's eldest son who claimed she belonged to her...the thing was mom was a lecturer so was kani's eldest son amongst other things he was a lecturer so they became friends but i guess kani's son fell for mom but mom told him shes married and will never cheat or leave dad but kani's son would hear none of it...it got so bad that mom resigned and chose to be a housewife instead but dad didn't want that instead he opened a boutique for her and called kani to put his dog of a son on a tight leash or face burying him but i guess that drove that son

of a bitch crazy and he kidnapped mom we were 17 years that time we were already part of the mafia but we were not fully equipped with depth of it we were just doing minimal jobs when mom was abducted by that bastard dad changed he became a monster he killed anything and almost everyone that was related to kani until he surrendered and i guess he ordered his fucked up son to released her and offered a peace treat between two families but dad would hear none of it he wanted kani's eldest son's head ...then kani decided to send his son into hiding but dad found him and the beast ravaged him it tore him into pieces and then after he accepted the peace treat...kani didn't know it was dad who killed his son cause his body was mutilated i guess he thought it was some animal who did that... but the truth of the matter is once you've found your chosen one you'll go to any length to protect her and keep her safe you'll even go to the end of the

world for her...besides thousands and thousands of enemies i have ,nathi and that bitch i fucked are the most important ones they the ones that can make kedi leave me even though i will never let her go but the thought of her even attempting to leave me scares the shit out of me...if that bitch tells kedi what happened she'll run to nathi and i can't have that plus shes been through enough i dont wanna see her hurt ever again especially by me...i walk towards the car to check on her and i find her sleeping at least now i know her reason of sleeping too much...i go back to the guys and they almost done***

Jay:bongs did you bring what i told stix to give to you

he says to one of the guys and he nodded and went to their van and comes with two steel boards and give them to jay

jay: its for their names

i nod and take them to kedi and i wake her up and tell her to write her parents names on each board and she does then the guys place them there and jay goes to the car and comes back with a stack of money i think it was R10 000 and give it to them and the look on their faces says they've never touched such money before

me: you work for us now you even lucky to have seen our faces in person but know that we don't take kindly to betrayal and backstabbing and especially snitches

Jay: have you heard of kray and spilotro

they both nodded like retards frozen with their eyes popped out

Me: right now you are all standing before the angels of death you know what we are capable of and whatever you heard about us its true we have eyes and ears everywhere you fuck with us you entire family will be wiped out including

your relatives and friends

Jay :now go to stix he'll give you further instructions you'll take orders from him or us understand?

they nodded and left without saying anything they looked shit scared mxm i called my heart to come and talk to her parents she came out with a bottle of water and knelt before their graves...jay and i decided to give her some privacy and we went stand farther away under a tree

Me: do you think those fools will be ok they looked shit scared

***i said chuckling..jay laughed ***

Jay: i think one of them pissed on himself

Me:i hope they make it through their initiation

Jay: yeah i hope so too you know its not childs play you can get killed through the process and plus they begged stix to take them under his

wing so their wishes are granted ofcourse with severe consequences ahead

Me: mmmh

Jay: you think she'll be ok

Me: she's stronger than she looks she has made it through hell and came out alive so this is nothing

Jay: yeah you right now its time to make that witch and those wizards pay

Me: yeah and that witchcraft they left here thats messed up these people have gone to far now

Jay: dont worry about them we'll deal with them

i saw kedi standing up and walking towards us wiping her tears and i met her half way and held her tight while kissing the top of her head

Kedi: thank you for this my king....every day i used to ask God what have done to deserve all

the pain i endured each and every day but today
im asking him what i have done soo great to
deserve a selfless soul like you

***i cupped her face and planted a kiss on her
soft lips then stared into her eyes***

Me: i also ask God the same thing every day but
every time one answer comes to mind

Kedi: what answer

Me: that you are the chosen one for me...that
fate brought us together and wants us to be
together in this lifetime and the next

***tears streamed down her cheeks while she
smiled and i wiped her tears and kissed her
forehead***

Kedi: i love you mr khumalo

Me: i know

Kedi: JASE!

i laughed

Me: i love you too miss malapane...lets go and feed you

we walked towards jay

Jay: you good

***he said looking at kedi and she nodded and got out of my grip and went to jay and hugged him ***

Kedi: thank you for what you did for me today i really am blessed to have you two in my life

Jay: anytime kotiza

*** he said smiling we walked to the car and got in***

Kedi: my heros / bodyguards am i lucky or what

*** we laughed then drove to brits mall and went to spur to eat while talking about useless shit laughing our asses off after we were done we searched for a guest house and found one closer to the mall and took our luggage and

went to our designated rooms...i put our bags on top of the bed and took out our toiletries and went to run us a shower after that we went in and showered....it started with just kissing and me rubbing her clit the next thing i was on my knees eating her pussy while her right foot was on top of my shoulder she was standing captain Morgan style while she was moaning loud and screaming my name i felt her body shaket then she released all her juices on my mouth i stood up and kissed her wanting her to taste herself and she pulled out of the kiss and tempted to go down on me but i couldn't let her i wanted to be inside her already***

Me:baby i dont wanna cum in your mouth i wanna cum inside you

***i said that pulling her leg up and entering her tight pussy she moaned out loud while i groaned i started with a fast pace hitting each and every corner in her i went on and on until we both came at the same time....we finished

showering and dried ourselves, lotioned then she only wore her underwear while i wore my boxers and we got under the covers and she laid her head on my chest while i held her tight***

Me: my heart

Kedi: yes my king

Me: be my wife

Kedi: huh

she said that while lifting her head up and looking at me with a shocked look

Me: marry me kedi

she kept quiet and continued to look at me shocked

Me: i love you and i wanna spend the rest of my life with you..so what do you say make me the happiest man alive and be my wife

***she kept on looking at me while breathing

heavily and now tears were coming out***

Me: baby

kedi: are...are you sure

she said with a breaking voice

Me: more than sure my heart i may not have a ring now to propose with and i may not be on my knee asking you to be my wife but kedi i mean every single word from the depth of my soul

Kedi: you wanna marry me with all my baggages

Me: i can handle them very well so yeah so will you please marry me

Kedi: ye...yes I'll marry you

Me:(i breathed out in relive)thank you baby
thank you

***i pulled her face towards mine and kissed her hard then took off her underwear and took

off my boxers and entered her slowly and made sweet love to her all night long***

****KEDI'S POV****

***i woke up in the morning to a feeling of something pushing through my throat wanting to come out and i got out of bed quickly and rushed to the bathroom and vomited like ive never vomited before i kept on throwing up until i felt a hand brushing my back gently after i was done my throat was painful jase flushed the toilet and i went to rinse my mouth with water then mouthwash after i brushed my teeth...i felt sick and weak but jase didn't panic at all after i was done he scooped me up and took me to bed and we both got under the covers and he held me tight with my head on his chest my throat was painful from all that throwing up he kept on brushing my back up and down gently

until i fell asleep...i was woken up by someone planting kisses all over my face and i opened my eyes only to be met by jase's handsome face with a smile on his face and his cute dimples showing***

Jase: wake up my beautiful fiance and eat you breakfast

Me: i dont feel well baby please let me sleep

Jase: my heart come on its already 10h00 and we have to check out of here and plus we have another place we need to visit before leaving this place

***before i can say anything back i got off the bed and ran to the bathroom lucky i made it in time and i threw up until i felt like my insides were about to come out of my mouth with tears coming out khante whats happening to me after i was done jase flushed the toilet i didn't even hear him come in and i rinsed my mouth with mouthwash and wiped my tears my

throat was painful then he scooped me up again and put me on top of the bed ***

Me: jase what's wrong with me

my voice was a bit hoarse

Jase: (he took a deep breath) i think you are pregnant

Me:what?ummm no im not

Jase: baby the vomiting,always feeling tired and sleepy, craving certain food,you mood swings do you want me to go on

Me: ohh my God jase i swear i didn't do this on purpose i swear im not trying to trap you with a baby

***i cried ohh my God what if he leaves me cause he thinks im trying to trap him with a baby and how the hell did i fall pregnant im on prevention for Gods sake i got off the bed and i ran to the bathroom and locked myself in and cried ...i hear him banging on the door saying i

should open up but i dont want to i can't face him***

Jase: kedi open this damn door before i break it down

***he sounds angry gosh i stand up to open the door last time he really broke a door down when i refused to open i wiping my tears off while others were coming out it was just useless i opened the door to find him standing there breathing heavily with a scary look on his face ok now im scared ***

Me: im...im sorry jase i didn't get pregnant on purpose i swear

he walked towards me and grabbed my upper arms tight and looked at me

Jase:if you weren't pregnant il smack you right now what on God's name would you say this bullshit you saying to me huh WHEN ARE YOU GOING TO ACCEPT THAT I LOVE YOU AND THAT YOU ARE THE CENTER OF MY WORLD

THAT MY FUCKEN WHOLE WORLD REVOLVES
AROUND YOU HUH WHY THE FUCK WOULD
YOU AGREE TO BE MY WIFE IF YOU BELIEVE
THAT I DON'T LOVE YOU I LOVE YOU DAMN IT
AND IF I EVER HEAR YOU SAY THIS TRAP
BULLSHIT AGAIN IL FUCK YOU UP KEDI I
SWEAR ON MY MOTHER'S GRAVE I'LL FUCK
YOU UP(he was shouting)

***i cried hard and i started hitting him on his
chest with my tiny fists... i dont know why but i
was hurt and mad that he was shouting at
me***

Me: DONT SHOUT AT ME...DON'T SHOUT AT
ME

***i kept on saying that over and over until he
grabbed my hands and pulled me to his chest
and held me tight i cried until i calmed down
then he cupped my face and stared into my
eyes**

Jase: im sorry for shouting my heart im sorry ok

i was just mad that's all

Me: you promised to never shout at me jason
you promised

he wiped my tears

Jase: i know my heart im sorry and its jase or
your king to you call me jason again and il
continue shouting at you...come on lets feed
the three of you so we can get going

me: the three of us

Jase: yeah i believe you carrying twins

Me: and where and how will those twins come
out i can't carry twins

jase: the same way they got in

we both laughed

Me: my punani will loose its elasticity jase so
dont say im carrying twins

Jase:(laughing)your punani will never loose it
elasticity baby do you even know how tight you

are nc nc nc if only you knew

me:(i laughed) mxm

***we ate and showered luckily i didn't throw up
im gonna ask them we go past the mall so i can
buy pregnancy tests...finally we check out and
find jay waiting for us busy taking to some girl
they looked cosy aarg anyway we drive out as
soon as he indicates and turn left my heart
almost stops this twins can't do this to me***

***NARRATED ***

Its sunday a day after Sam's burial and things
are still tense in the yard susan has been
locking herself in her bedroom crying for sam
she still couldn't believe he was gone and his
daughters where still mad at her also Harold
wanted nothing to do with her....last night she
had a really scary dream she was being chased
by a huge animal and Sam's voice kept on
saying they are coming for you mom you

brought this upon yourself then another voice that sounded like her first husband's kept on saying they gonna break you....you gonna die then they both laughed she would wake up panting and sweating when she tries to sleep again the same dream will occur she got out of bed and went to make something to make something to eat and her phone rang it was Harold aarg she wondered what he wants since hes been treating her like shit she answered ***

Susan : harold

Harold : peter is raving mad hes running on the streets naked shouting we killed them and they are coming for us

Susan : wh...what ...how...what happened

Harold : i dont know susan look i have to go atleast he doesn't say any names so i think we safe

***he dropped the call and Susan started shaking everything was just falling apart all of

them at once she didn't know what to do anymore right then she was disturbed from her thoughts by a knock on the door she went to open and she was shocked to see who was standing by the door***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/05, 13:41] Nor: INSERT.33

.

.

.

***NARRATED ***

*** susan saw kedi standing at the door with

two guys who looked identical they looked like twins she was shocked beyond words she could see she looked beautiful and she even gained a bit of weight she looked beautifully different and that made her angry and hate her even more***

Susan: what the hell are you doing here remember you are banned from setting your filthy feet here

Jay: are you the mayor of this township or maybe the queen

Susan: mmmm i see you brought your bodyguards with you heh

jase pushed her aside roughly and pulled kedi inside and jay followed

Jay: nice house you got here

Susan: get out of my house before i call the police

Jay: we own the police and isnt this her father's

house and i thought your house is that one
your useless brother stays in

Jase: ooh and i heard he turned it into a crack
house nc nc nc i wonder what will happen if we
send an anonymous tip off to the police "that
we own "mmmm

Susan: ho..how did you know that

Jase: we know a lot of things about you dear
Susan even your deep dark secrets

***he whispered the "deep dark secrets "
part...susan got scared abit she looked at
kedi***

Susan: what do you want you whore

***she didn't see it coming she only felt it when
jase slapped her so hard she fell on her bum on
the floor shocked ***

Jase: CALL HER THAT ONE MORE TIME I DARE
YOU (he shouted)

Susan: you..you have the rotten nerve to lay

your filthy hands on me in my own house

***this time jay bend down and slapped her on her other cheek with the back of his hand ***

Jase: YES WE DO SO NOW WHAT

tears streamed down her cheeks she couldn't believe she was disrespected in her own house in front of the one person she most hatedthe door opened and lebo and karabo walked in and they saw their mother on the floor crying

Jase: ooh evil sisters welcome

Lebo: who are you and what do you want...wait kedi...is this you

***karabo went to her mother and helped her stand up ***

Karabo: what are you doing here kedi huh you are not wanted here so o batlang (what do you want)

Susan: YOU GOT MY SON KILLED NOW YOU'RE

HERE TO GLOAT YOU WITCH

Jay: khante whats with the name calling jase

Jase:these people are getting on my last nerve...evil sisters is this your father's house or is it her fathers house (pointing at kedi)

***they kept quiet ***

Jase: I FUCKEN HATE REPEATING MYSELF
....ANSWER MY FUCKEN QUESTION (he
shouted)

Lebo: its her father's house

Susan: shut up lebo he was your father ok he
raised you so he was your father

Jay:ohh so he was their father but what about
kedi

Susan: i dont care about this witch i only care
about my kids

Jase: mmmm ok i see

***he chuckled then his face went cold as he

stared at her. .. Susan felt uneasy the was something about this men that didn't sit well with her it was something she felt from the pit of her stomach but kedi interrupted her from her thought shes been quiet since she got here she knew kedi was scared of her so she was shocked when she spoke ***

Kedi: i see you still a bitter bitch since i last saw you

everyone was shocked to hear her say that especially the brothers

Susan: what did you call me

Kedi: are you fucken deaf i also hate repeating myself witch

***everyone gasped...kedi had soo much anger in her that she kept locked up somewhere inside of her seeing that Susan was still the same old witch she left months ago and the fact that she still hated her for God knows what ignited something in her and plus her hormones

also helped with this new courage she just encountered***

Susan:HOW DARE YOU SPEAK TO ME LIK...

she interrupted her

Kedi:SHUT UP!

Jase: baby...

Kedi: jase please stay out of this

***she snapped at him he raised his hands in defeat ***

Kedi: you see fam i used to ask myself why yall hate me this much but now i just dont give a fuck anymore looking at you all now i feel pity on your pathetic lifes cause there's this chick her name is karma.. Susan dont worry your evil daughters will explain to you who she is and the thing is shes a bitter bitch and she never forgets an address and right now i know shes on her way here to deal with you accordingly...you may have thought you made it

in life when you used to make yourself feel better and worthy by abusing me but guess what you made me stronger

Susan:all of you get out of my...

she interrupted her again

Kedi: SHUT UP AND LISTEN IM NOT DONE..you messed with the wrong person you pathetic loser...you blame me for your useless dead son's death but you forgetting that you messed with thabo and boikanyo's daughter (her parents) you still gonna suffer this pain you're feeling of losing that waste of a life you called a son will be nothing compared to what karma is instored for you you not gonna die no no no death is too easy for you...you gonna rot while you still alive and maggots will eat you alive until you take the cowardly way out and commit suicide nx

***she was spitting fire and jay and jase were shocked as hell they thought they'll do all the

talking and threatening but kedi came out of her shell and did that for them as for susan and her daughters they couldn't believe that this was the ever crying and vulnerable kedi***

Kedi: and you two dont forget you are both women just like me and remember that this witch is not gonna live forever and since you walking on her foot steps proudly know that karma will visit you too....you all gonna pay i dont know when or how but you will pay for each and every pain you caused me nx

she looked at jase and jay

Kedi: you'll find me in the car im done with this pathetic beings

***with that being said she took the car keys from jay and walked to the car wiping the tears that were now coming out ***

Jay: wow i didn't know she had it in her

Jase: i told you she's one of a kind

they both laughed

Jay: yeah its true that she is even this witches are still shocked

Jase: enough with the games now lets get serious...ooh susan did you tell this puppets you call daughters who killed their father

they saw susan turn pale instantly and shiver with fear

Lebo: dont talk about my father you know nothing about him

Jay: ooh is it...Susan dear should i tell them or would you like to do the honour of doing so

Susan: please leave my daughters out of this

Jase: did you leave kedi out of the beef you had with her parents ...ummm no so dear talk or i will

Karabo: mom what are they talking about

Lebo: they just messing with our heads sis dont

mind them

***jase chuckled ***

Jase: ntombazana i dont have time to waste
busy messing with those empty heads of yours

***those words hit lebo hard that she stood up
quickly ready to attack jase but he slapped her
so hard she stumbled back until she lost
balance and fell on the floor susan stood up
cursing ready to attack them until jay pulled out
a gun and hit Susan with the back of it on her
jaw and she fell on the ground karabo
screamed rushing to her sister and mother***

Jase: shut the fuck up.....you see Susan you
messed with kray's woman by the time I'm
done with you you'll wish death upon yourself
nx (he cleared his throat) ladies
mantombazana you mother here is evil itself
wrapped in an old lady do you know that her
and your uncle harold killed your father and
kedis parents

Karabo: you...you are lying mom wouldn't do that to dad she loved him

Jay:did she say she loved him

the both laughed so hard

Jase: ok ok ok look ntombazana she killed your father and i dont give a fuck if you believe me or not what i give a fuck about is the fact that she killed kedi's parents and abused her and for that she's gonna pay hand fully

Susan's phone rang and she answered

Susan: hello

Caller:suster its Charlie i have bad news

Susan: whats wrong Charlie is my brother ok

Caller : he hes dead suster he was shot by the police...they raided his place and apparently there was a shoot out between the police and him but he was shot dead im sorry

***susan felt like her soul was being sucked

out of her lungs***

Susan: NOOOOO! Please no my brother cant be dead please he can't be no he can't be

jase walked to her and whispered into he ear while she stood there frozen with tears gushing out of her eyes

Jase: this is just the beginning susan by the time im done with you nc nc nc you'll have absolutely nothing to live for nx

*** the brothers walked out leaving total chaos behind as for susan she started feeling dizzy and it was lights out for her***

KEDI'S POV

i woke up when i felt hands lifting my head up a bit and it was jase

Jase: you didn't lock the doors kedi

Me: im sorry i forgot you guys took your time in there and i was feeling sleepy

***i said sitting up and jase got in and pulled me towards him and held me tight ***

Jase: at least now we know the reason you always sleepy this days

***he said smiling the car started moving ***

Jay: ohh before i completely forget...congratulations on your engagement and pregnancy kotiza

Me: thanks you know it still hard to believe that im gonna be a wife and a mother

Jase: you better believe it my heart cause im never letting you go ever

Jay: yeah we're never letting you go ever

we laughed out loud geez jay is just something else

Jay: about what happened earlier are you ok

Me: I'll live jay i feel a lot lighter now i can move on and let karma deal with her since its dealt with her son

Jay: yah karma neh

jase made me look at him and he smashed his lips into mine and we kissed passionately then he pulled out of the kiss and looked deep into my eyes

Jase: im proud of you my heart you really did good in there to a point that you shocked both me and jay and i think and those witches too

Kedi: i said what ive been holding in for years now that its out i feel a lot lighter

Jase: im glad

***he kissed my forehead and held me tight jay's phone rang and he answered ***

Jay: yeah

*he listened *

Jay: ohh she is

*he listened *

Jay: great now proceed with stage two and give me feed back of how it went down asap

*he listened *

Jay: good keep me updated and it should happen before end of today

*he listened *

Jay: shap

he dropped the call

Jay: bafo things are going according to plan

Jase: good eish lets go home i miss my whiskey

Me: really my king of all things you miss your whiskey

he whispered in my ear

Jase: and your pussy im even hard as fuck right

now

*** ok... he doesn't shock me anymore...we finally arrived home it was around 3pm damn i forgot to buy those pregnancy test mara its ok il buy them tomorrow ***

Me: baby im going to take a shower and by the time i get down i better find Romans pizza waiting for me neh

***they both laughed ***

Jase: ok my queen

Me: jay thanks for today il never forget it

jay: there's no need to thank me if i could il do it all over again family sticks together especially through hard times dont ever forget it ok kotiza

i smiled and nodded then perked jase's lips and headed upstairs

JASE 'S POV

***kedi shocked me today i thought she'll break down and cry and let those witches insult her and belittle her but she stood her ground and defended herself which made proud...my love for her gets deeper and deeper and im afraid now it has reached the obsession stage even though i hate to admit it to myself but it already has as for her step mother and step sisters whats coming for them is huge especially susan..eish that woman is so evil and bitter to a point that its sickening nx well she better enjoy her last days on earth cause death is nearer and its gonna be as painful as hell and i wont be the one to kill her but something more dangerous than me will jays phone rang ...

jay: stix hold on a minute let me go somewhere private

we went to the study and he put him on loud speaker

Jay: talk

Stix: its done she was injected with that virus

Me: good now have some boys tail her

Stix: sure bozza

Jay: and that fool harold or whatever they call him i want you to rob his house clean take everything you can do whatever you want with them

stix: rob his house not him right

Jay: yah

stix: ok bozza yami

Me: what about the new recruits

stix: i only see potential in two of them but the third one ai we shall see

Me: you know what to do right

Stix: yah bozza

Jay: now since that useless amateur drug pimp

is dead go on full force to take over his place and also take full control of that place..you have three months to do that or else we will have serious problems

Stix: you...you want me to head the operation

Jay:you've earned it so dont disappoint us stix you know we hate disappointments

Stix:i wont disappoint you bozza yami i promise

Me: rule number one as a leader

Stix: never ever let power get to your head or you'll be taken out permanently

Me: good now make us proud and stix always remember we have eyes and ears everywhere....we know everything

Stix: sure boss i wont disappoint

Jay:you have three months

Stix: sure bozza

then jay dropped the call

Me: this boy better not fuck up or il wipe out his entire generation

Jay: he knows what we do to weaklings in this business so hes gonna perform

Me: when did muzi say that virus will start feeding

jay: immediately

Me: good

Jay: what about that harold guy

Me: snakes cleaned out his accounts and business accounts too this morning hes broke as hell and in debt and blacklisted ooh and he made sure to tarnish his name in every bank and stores in the country and he also used his name to purchase some expensive shit using his name before he cleaned him out so yah hes in deep shit and its only the beginning

Jay: yah neh they messed with the wrong

woman

Me: indeed brother they did

Jay: what about those evil sisters

Me: if they dont reform and change their ways
im also gonna deal with them

***we heard a knock on the door and jay went
to open***

Kedi: where is my pizza

***she asked with a straight face....shit we
forgot ***

Me: on its way baby

Kedi: ok

***then she walked out and i took out my phone
and place an order quickly***

jay: no no no this pregnancy its too much
manje no no no we can't live in fear like this

***i chuckled ***

Me: why are you complaining im the one who lives with her and also sleeps on the same bed with her

Jay: well good luck then

we both laughed then my phone beeped it was a message and i recognised the numbers..the message was from buhle the girl i had a one night stand with and i opened it"jase im pregnant and you are responsible and im also keeping it please lets meet up and talk please"

Me: fuck nooooo this is not happening

Jay: whats wrong

i gave him my phone and he read it and cursed

Jay:HOW THE FUCK CAN YOU LET THIS HAPPEN JASE DO YOU KNOW WHAT IS ABOUT TO HAPPEN FUCK JASE FUCK(he shouted)

lucky my study is sound proofed

Me: its not mine bafo i swear on mom's grave
its not i used a condom bafo shes lying

Jay: HOW WILL YOU EXPLAIN THIS TO KEDI
HUH

Me: shes gonna leave me bafo i cant have that i
just cant...THAT BITCH IS LYING JAY IM NOT
RESPONSIBLE FOR THAT PREGNANCY IM NOT

jay: fuck

***we sat in silence....i can't loose kedi i can't
...fuck this is not happening***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/05, 13:41] Nor: INSERT.....34

.

•
•

KEDI'S POV

***its been a week and half since we went to see muzi at his private practice and he confirmed that i was pregnant 12 weeks to be precise and he also confirmed what jase suspected that i was carrying twins so yah since then jase has been clingy and fussy he also proposed on his knee with a beautiful diamond ring yho and it looks expensive he proposed at a restaurant two days after we came back from my hometown he took me out to dinner i couldn't believe it when he went down on one knee and asked me to be his wife in front of people yho shem that was the highlight of my life but there's something else that has been bothering me about jase hes

been distant emotionally its like something is bothering him at night he tosses and turns and sometimes he wakes up panting and sweating and he would say its just a bad dream i shouldn't worry and when we sitting in the lounge watching tv i would catch him staring into space when i ask him whats wrong he would just say its work related so i shouldn't worry myself he'll be ok...the truth is im worried about him and about us he hasn't made love to me in 5 days whenever i try to kiss him and touch him places he would say hes tired he just want to cuddle then he would hold me really tight, even if we sweat at night he still wouldn't let go of me so im worried my woman instinct is on full force telling me something is definitely wrong im scared it might be another woman...what if he doesn't see me attractive anymore....what if he thinks he made a mistake when he asked me to be his wife maybe hes found someone worthy to be his.... someone

from his league or level i don't know but im
scared I'm interrupted from my thoughts by
him***

Jase: baby are you ok

***i just nod i don't even look at him i feel my
cheeks and eyes are wet gosh this stupid
hormones maybe its not the hormones maybe
its the fact that im hurt***

Jase: then why are you sitting out here alone
crying

***i just shrug my shoulders and wipe my
tears***

Jase: kedi i had a long day at work i don't have
to come home to this please

***he snaps at me i forgot to mention that its a
habit of his now to snap at me ...i just keep
quiet then he clicks his tongue and walks away
yah neh this is my life shame...i continue
sitting in the cinema room with a paused movie

on this huge screen....i think i fell asleep cause i woke up with the need to pee and i looked around and i was in the bedroom aaarg he always does this mxm i go to the in-suite bathroom and pee and went to bed it was already early in the morning and he wasn't even in bed mxm i get inside the covers and the door opens and he walks in with breakfast ***

Jase: sit up and eat my heart

Me: im not hungry

***he gives me a look i dont understand then takes a deep breath ***

Jase: im sorry about last night for snapping at you

i just look at him confused wondering what is wrong with him cause one day hes cold another day hes hot mxm

Me: what going on with you jase

Jase: its work my heart its stressing me out

Me: ohhh and its making you not to make love to me too right

***he looks down and breathes out hard ***

Jase: kedi can we not fight or argue please i made the three of you breakfast in bed now please eat up

i just look at him and tears stream down my cheeks i remember he once called me nag...maybe he doesn't love me anymore maybe hes still with me because im pregnant maybe hes found someone better...i get out of bed and go prepare myself for work leaving him there with his stupid breakfast nx

Jase: kedi eat first please

Me: leave me alone jase i dont need your stupid breakfast nx

***i enter the bathroom and do my morning routine and get dressed with him watching i also do my make up and tie my huge afro into a

neat bun***

Jase: baby come and eat your breakfast i know you mad but my kids need to eat

Me: im not hungry

Jase: well my babies are hungry

Me: are you the one carrying them or is it me

i snap at him

Jase: kedi

Me: il see you tonight thats if you decide to come home early

***i go downstairs to the kitchen and i take a couple of fruits and left i get to work and do what im being paid to do 30 minutes before lunch i see a delivery man from spur walking towards me he asks if im kedibone malapane and i agree he gives me the paper bag and leaves i look inside and its ribs ,French fries, onion rings and a 1liter of peach juice mxm i know they are from jase so i continued with my

work until lunch time came gosh im hungry so i start digging in until my phone disturbs me mxm it was jase so i decided to answer***

Me: jase

***he kept quiet a bit and then breathed out ***

Jase: im sorry...im sorry for everything my heart...i miss you like crazy but i miss your smile and laughter more

Me: whats bothering you jase and please dont say its work cause i can tell its not

Jase: my heart its work believe me im sorry i have been taking out my stress out on you

Me: call me back when you ready to talk to me cause now you telling me what you want me to hear not the truth you think i cant see gore its another woman i may be poor and an orphan but im not dumb jase im not like one of those women who keeps quiet all in the sake of keeping peace and being scared to loose you

whether i keep quiet and ignore the signs and not be a nag wont stop you from leaving me or cheating or even treating me like i dont matter anymore

he interrupted me

Jase: please calm down you getting worked up for nothing is not good for my kids kedi and no im not cheating and i will never leave you nor will i let you leave me im just stressed out kedi thats all please

Me: whats stressing you out be honest jase

Jase: STOP IT KEDI WHY DO YOU WANT TO KNOW EVERYTHING HUH I TOLD YOU ITS WORK RELATED NOW FUCKEN STOP NAGGING AND CONCENTRATE ON BEING A GOOD FIANCEE AND TAKING CARE OF MY KIDS IN YOUR WOMB

***jase just shouted at me wow i just dropped the call and cried luckily there's no one in here everyone went out for lunch i cried until i

couldn't anymore after i was done i take out my glasses and take off this contact lenses and wear the glasses since my eyes are a bit puffy and red i finished my lunch and went back to do my work i know its still lunch time but i need to keep busy or else il go crazy....a couple of minutes later the door from the office i share with three other colleagues opens and jase enters and stands there looking at me mxm i got back to what i was doing he can stand there until he turns into statue i dont care....i hear his foot steps i look up and hes standing next to my desk looking at me with a frown on his face mxm***

Jase: come lets go home and talk

wa gafa(hes out of his mind)nx i just ignore him and continue working

Jase: kedi

Me: just leave me alone jase please i dont wanna talk to you

Jase: im sorry for shouting please lets go home and talk

Me: im working jase please leave

Jase:kedi i own half of this damn company now lets go

Me: if you want to fire me do it already but i dont wanna talk to you or go anywhere with you leave me alone

***he keeps quiet and looks at me then go around the table and grabs me roughly and pulls me up and smashes his lips on mine and i pull out quickly and tried to push him of me but hes too strong ***

Jase: im sorry for shouting at you i know you hate it the same way i hate it when someone drops a call on me while we still talking...(he takes a deep breath)im not cheating kedi but i can't tell you whats bothering me cause its work related please respect that and try to understand i dont want you getting worried over

nothing please

i just look at him i know hes lying but pushing him over the edge and fighting him will make things worse so right here right now i decide to concentrate on my pregnancy and just let him be you can't force a horse to drink water in a river if it doesn't want to so yah whether hes cheating or not but the truth will come out eventually cause nothing stays hidden forever in this world

Me: ok can i get back to work now

Jase: please lets go home i miss you and i wanna make things right between us

Me: i can't i have to work jase please il see you later

***he just stares at me and lets go of me and i sit down then he bends down a bit a kisses my forehead while rubbing my belly and says he loves me but i dont say it back i just nod and he sighs and walks out then tears ran down my

cheeks and i cried silently***

JASE'S POV

***my life is as mess i dont even know what to do i called back that chick buhle and met up with her and i took her to see muzi and he said shes six weeks pregnant meaning she fell pregnant the same week i slept with her meaning the pregnancy could be mine even though i used protection with her the thing is condoms break maybe it did or maybe it didn't so i told her to never contact me until she gives birth so that i can do a DNA test to confirm if that baby is mine even though i think im not responsible for her pregnancy i maybe heartless sometimes but not to a point of telling her to abort i mean what if that baby is mine i mean how will i live with the thought of killing my own child so i told her il send her

money every month for her upkeep and thats about it i told her i dont love her and will never ever like or love her cause my heart belongs to one woman only and if the baby is mine il have a relationship with him or her only and that i want absolutely nothing to do with her she cried but i stood my ground and left since then ive been a total mess i can't even sleep i have nightmares of kedi leaving me some of them i tell her about buhle and the pregnancy and she loses it and freak out to a point that she has a miscarriage every time i wake up panting and sweating....i can't risk her losing the babies that will kill me so im gonna tell her after she gives birth in the mean time i have to get hold of myself and not break apart i know i have been distant emotionally and have been taking out my frustrations out on her trust me i don't mean too i love kedi more than i love myself more than i love life shes my reason for breathing and i can't loose her i know her pregnancy make her

emotional,moody and angry but i just can't help it sometimes it gets too much cause im also stressed out and i get annoyed and i snap at her.

..i have no one to blame but myself i became weak and i gave what belongs to kedi to another woman i dont even know...after my earlier not so good encounter with kedi i decided to head back to the office and bury myself with my work and also think about how il fix things between me and my queen and jay budes in my office mxm***

Me: dude really can't you knock just once

Jay: no...so hows my sister in law

i sighed and brushed my hair roughly

Jay: that bad

Me: she can tell something is up and she can tell that im lying when i say its work related...im scared of losing her bafo how the fuck did my life get to this this is the time i should be happy with my fiance enjoying our pregnancy but here

i am expecting a child with a one night stand chick while my fiance is also pregnant

Jay: i still say tell her bafo she loves you she'll be angry and hurt but i think she'll eventually forgive you imagine her finding out you knew since the girl was 6 weeks pregnant huh

Me: i can't risk her losing our babies jay what if everything gets too much for her and she suffers a miscarriage no no no i can't have that i just can't

Jay: then stop treating her like shit by shouting and snapping at her cause i know you when you this stressed you get annoyed and rude easily fix things between you two and stop fucken stressing her cause she might end up having a miscarriage due to your ill treatment

***i buried my head in my hands and sighed heavily i didn't mean to hurt her or push her away im just stressed and scared of losing her...after my chat with jay i packed my things

and headed home i got there and i found her eating in the lounge***

Me: baby

Kedi: hi

Me: can we talk

Kedi: only if you gonna tell whats bothering you if you cant tell me then no we can't talk

i sighed loudly eish

Me: why are you this pushy huh il tell you when im ready for now im not why can't you just respect that and stop being nosy its fucken irritating

Kedi: you know what jase its fine do you and il do me im being 'pushy' as you say cause whatever is eating you up is affecting me and our relationship well since you say i should fucken stop cause its irritating il stop and mind my own business

***she said that standing up and walking away...

shit i did it again ...i just sit on the couch and bury my head in my hands when im this stressed out and this pissed off i need to fuck hard and rough and i can't have that with her il hurt her plus shes been raped before so fucking her like that will awaken buried feelings of her rape ordeal and i can't have that i love her too much to do that to her which is the main reason i haven't been intimate with her ever since i went to a doctor's check up with buhle cause im afraid im gonna hurt her sexually i wont be making love to her il be fucking her and once i loose myself in her i wont be able to stop hence thats why im in this predicament im in right now...after i slapped her that time i was devastated by what i did to her so the following day later i went to a bar and i met buhle and we talked and she suggested we go to her place and fuck trust me i wanted so say no but i was stressed,angry at myself and fucken scared that i might loose kedi because i layed my hand

on her something i vowed il never do so i didn't decline instead we went by the garage and i bought condoms and we went to her place and we fucked i didnt even kiss her i just couldnt and when i say fucked i mean anal sex just everything that has to do with sex i did to her i didn't fuck her for enjoyment no but to release that anger and hurt and guilt i had after i was done with her i left later the following day she called me and told me she misses me and shit, thats when i realized that she's actually a whore i mean how the hell do you call back a man who fucked you like you are nothing no kissing whatsoever just being fucked like a prostitute so i told her it was just a one night stand and she should stop calling me cause i don't intend on having any form if relationship with her so she stopped until a week ago but im not about to add fuel to an already burning fire so I'd rather go to a gym release all this frustration i have in me than cheat on kedi

ever again...so i went to our in-house gym i punched that punching bag until i couldn't punch anymore after i was done i went upstairs and found her sleeping i stood not far from the bed and stared at her sleeping peacefully then the fear of losing her crept in and i felt myself having a bit of chest pain the pain went on and on until it stopped so i went to the bathroom and had a quick cold shower as i was drying myself i heard my phone ring and i went to take it in the bedroom and went back to the bathroom to answer it cause i didn't wanna wake kedi up it was jay***

Me: bafo

Jay: are you ok

Me: im ok considering... why?

Jay: im feeling a bit uneasy the same feeling i have when something is wrong with you

Me: i had a bit of chest pains but the pain has stopped now

Jay: take it easy bafo everything will work itself out wena just go to the gym and release that anger and make your queen happy

Me: yah eish

Jay: we'll talk tomorrow shap

Me: shap

i dropped the call and lotioned and wore my boxers and got under the covers and held kedi from the back and pulled her towards me and held her tight while kissing the back of her head until i dosed off..i woke up panting and sweating again i had that dream again where she had a miscarriage when she found out i cheated

Me: fuck what have i done to us

i said that to myself

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/05, 13:41] Nor: INSERT.....35

.

.

.

KEDI'S POV

I woke up feeling nauseous and i got out of bed and ran to the bathroom and i threw up after i was done i showered and dried myself and went to the bathroom and got dressed and did my make up and hair and took my hand bag and went downstairs only to find jase busy making breakfast

Me: hi

Jase: my heart i made breakfast for my three favourite beings

Me: ok

Jase: im sorry for what happened last night

***i just kept quiet i was done arguing with him my unborn babies are more important ***

Jase: my heart please say something

Me: im tired with your stupid sorries and your moods im tired jase like i said do you and I'll do me

i stood up from the barstool and took my things ready to leave i even lost my appetite

Jase: kedi please i wanna fix things let me make things right between us i love you kedi infact i live for you im sorry ive been an jerk towards you

Me: jase you promised me happiness and what I've been getting lately is pain and heartache... (i took a deep breath) i have to go to work bye

i walked out leaving him looking down breathing heavily...i arrived at work and did my work before lunch time the same delivery man from spur arrived and i had my lunch i was super hungry he came with two take aways this time mxm after eating my lunch i went to the restroom and did my thing and came back i found one of my colleagues mandisa sitting on her desk

Me: you back early

Mandisa: yeah i have lots of work to finish before the end of the week

Me: ok

Mandisa: why are you always by yourself you eat alone and i dont see you hanging out with friends or your colleagues

Me: i like being by myself

Mandisa: ooh and thats not creepy at all (she said in a sarcastic way)you know people who

like being by themselves are those internet old guys who are fat with big bellies, a huge beard and yellow teeth not a hot girl like you

Me: (i giggled) i guess you right is just that the only friend i had was killed and another one anelisa she used to work here well she turned against me just because i refused to date her cousin

Mandisa: well with the first one im sorry for your loss but as for the second one fuck her
***i laughed ok this chick is crazy ***

Mandisa: you know we can hang out after work im going out with my friends join us

Me: i dont think is a good idea

Mandisa: and why not

Me:(i sighed) im pregnant

Mandisa: girl you are pregnant not sick or disabled yho look we going out and thats final

***i just giggled looking at this crazy chick
maybe shes right i need to get out more i mean
my life revolves around jase and since hes
changing on me i need friends to keep my mind
off things and stress***

Me: ok

Mandisa: great

***i just smiled...an two hours before knock off
time i send jase a message telling him im going
out with friends for an early dinner and drinks
and that i dont need his permission i was just
letting him know nje he called immediately
mxm***

Me: jase

Jase: you not going ill come pick you up

Me: im going jase i dont need your permission

Jase: I DONT CARE IF YOU NEED MY
PERMISSION OR NOT MY DECISION IS FINAL
YOU NOT GOING (he shouted)

Me: you know what jase this fucken engagement its over im done with you you dont deserve me and im moving out nx

i dropped the call wiping my tears i dont know if i meant what i just said or maybe its the hormones but im just hurt jase keeps on hurting me not minding that im pregnant he shouts at me knowing fully well that i hate it i dont understand why hes acting like this hes supposed to be my happily ever after but i guess happiness is not for me...he kept on calling and calling until i switched my phone off then my office landline rang i know it might be him but its my work line so i have to answer

Me: hello

Jase: im on my way there we need to talk ked...

i dropped the call before he can finish his sentence i know he hates it but right now i dont wanna talk to him....20 minutes later my desk landline rings

Me: hello

Caller: miss malapane this is mr Khumalo's PA
please come to mr Khumalo's office
immediately he wants to talk to you asap

***i take a deep breath by mr khumalo she
means jase and i dont wanna see him ***

Caller: ooh and you better hurry up hes not in
good mood dont dare keep him waiting

***then she dropped the call nx i take my phone
and went to the 7th floor where the CEO's
office is i get there and this rude PA points to
the huge door before i could say anything i
knock and no one answered***

PA: GO IN ALREADY (she shouted)

*** bitch...khante whats with people shouting nx
so i open the door and i get in and the room is
huge Jesus there's couches and a table like in a
living room with a tv ,dvd and an explora Dstv
and on the other side there's a dinning room

table or maybe i should say a boardroom table with a couple of chairs and straight ahead there's a table and those big leather chair and two other chair on another side everything in this room smells expensive...i see him standing by the window wearing a nicely cut expensive suit with a glass of whiskey on his hand***

Me: you called for me

***i said to him but he didn't even attempt to look at me ***

Jase: come closer

he sounded cold there's no way im going anywhere close to him he sounded angry his voice said it all so i dont move an inch

Jase: i hate repeating myself kedi

i took few steps towards him and stood behind him with my heart beating fast....he turned and stared at me for the longest time

Jase: say what you said on the phone to my

face

he said with a straight face i swallowed hard and looked down scared as hell now i was regretting what i said his face was full of anger and hurt i swear its this hormones that made me say its over

Me: i cant

it came out as a whisper

Jase: you had the guts to say it on the phone now say it to my face

Me: jase please

Jase: i know i hurt you kedi i know i act like a jerk sometimes cant i make mistakes i mean im only human and i will make errors every now and then

***he kept quiet and closed his eyes then opened them again they were now red no tears were coming out but his eyes were blood shot red now i truly regretted saying its over and that

he doesn't deserve me***

Jase: lets go home so that i can feed you three

huh

Me: jase im so...

Jase: shhh its ok i pushed you to say those words to me but never again i swear kedi il try and be better i can't loose you just because i can't control my stupid emotions when im stressed out

he kissed my forehead then perked my lips and rubbed my little bump on my belly

Jase: they are growing

i just nodded

Jase: i love you my heart il make things right i swear to you...you gonna be happy again im making it my mission

***he kissed me again ok he might mean every word but the truth is he changed alot after he

proposed at that restaurant so im just gonna leave a room for disappointments***

Jase: go and take your things il wait for you at the parking lot

Me: ok

i went back to my desk and took my things and went to the parking lot and found him waiting for me ..gosh even though hes been an ass lately but the truth is this man is handsome and well built shem and his dimples melts my heart yho i pray my kids have their daddy's dimples...he opened the door for me and i got in and we drove home with his right hand on the steering wheel while the other one was holding my hand tight

***NARRATED ***

***its been a week and a couple of days since

Susan was admitted at the hospital after she fainted when she heard her brother is dead.... later that day she was admitted she had a reaction her heart stopped for a second but they managed to revive her they couldn't understand what caused it cause she was admitted because she only fainted but after a few tests and exrays the doctors found parasites inside her "flesh eating parasites "so the doctors are busy doing their best but every couple of hours they multiply she has already went to theater for the one that was close to her heart to be removed but its like they did nothing cause others have reached her heart and her heart is slowly getting weak and her health is deteriorating each passing moment even her doctor and other specialists called to assist with this special case are shocked and out of solutions on how to save her life they are giving her 3weeks tops to live unless they find a solution fast but what they dont know is this

parasites are created in a lab underground by the mafia meaning only the mafia have an antidote but luckily its not contagious once she dies the parasites dies too***

Lebo: mama i dont know what to do anymore is this the punishment for abusing kedi and also turning a blind eye when sam raped her...first it was sam now it might be you are we next mama is this the karma that kedi was talking about mama please tell me are me and karabo next

***she cried resting her head on top of the hospital bed after the visiting hours were over she left and went back home it was around 8pm she was driving her mother's car when she got home she heard sounds coming from karabo's bedroom she got closer she heard karabo moaning out loud and saying baby go deeper deeper...gosh she was having sex lebo couldn't believe karabo had a man in her bedroom having sex while their beloved mother was

dying in hospital tears ran down her cheeks...ever since susan was admitted karabo's attitude changed she partied more and changed men like she changes her underwear worse part is they are both hiv positive when they started dating their mother took them to the clinic to prevent but they were stupid enough to not use protection when they were busy opening their legs to every dick around the neighbourhood until one of the older guys they had a three sum with after he promised them a shopping spree if they both agree to sleep with him died and rumours said he had aids and they both knew no condoms were used that night they had a three sum so they went for hiv tests and they came out positive so now karabo is changing men everyday as if the world is coming to an end.....lebo went to her room and threw herself on top of her bed and cried she regretted every bad thing she ever did especially to kedi cause now it looked like nemesis was

surely catching up with them....as for harold he was robbed at gun point in his house and the robbers took everything in the house after that they beat him up but they didn't kill him he also found out his account including his business account was cleaned out completely hes now in debt and his company is liquidated he has nothing now hes in massive debt he was arrested for fraud apparently he bought a painting worth R500 000 in an art gallery in cape town with marked money that was stolen during a cash in transit heist 5 weeks back in brits Courtesy of snakes the black mama****

JASE'S POV

***i woke up today feeling lighter and hopeful even though kedi said somethings this morning that were true and that hit home i was still hopeful and ready to stop acting like a jerkass

but more like the man she fell in love with jay was also right stressing kedi up might result in her having a miscarriage so i need to stop acting like a bitch but act like a man her man so i went to the office and buried myself in my work until my phone rang it was an unsaved number only to find out it was that bitch buhle she told me she misses me and that shes horny so since i got her pregnant i should help her out i was fuming with anger cause i told this thing not to contact me until she gives birth i told her to fuck off and dropped the call nx the things we get our into but thank God the one my heart beats for is the chosen one for me and yeses shes an angel send to earth just for me yes shes stubborn but i love her with her stubbornness.... few minutes later an sms was send to my phone and it was from that psycho bitch buhle she said if i dont give her what she wants she'll ruin my relationship with kedi she said she has damming information and proof

that will make kedi hate the side of me and damage our relationship but i told her to go fuck herself cause i will not be threatened by a useless prostitute i guess calling her a prostitute made her angry cause she called with another number and she cursed and swore at me telling me im gonna pay for calling her a prostitute i just laughed at her until she dropped the call after that i realized jay was right again that i should tell kedi everything before she hears it from someone else or from this bitch buhle since she threatened to ruin my relationship with my queen i think coming clean to her and pray she forgives me is the best option now my phone beeped and a message came in it was from my heart she told me she was going out with some friends for drinks i wasn't gonna allow that i wasn't gonna allow her to change into someone shes not because of my doings so i called her and told shes not going but she retaliated by saying its over and

that i dont deserve her i immediately went to her work and tried my level best to talk to her in a calm manner ...i knew she said that out of anger but on another hand i was scared that she might have meant it but luckily she didn't but i was still scared of how she'll react when i tell her about buhle and the pregnancy eish so we went home and i cooked we ate and finally i made love to her it wasn't my best cause i kept reminding myself that im making love to her and not fucking her after we were done she dosed off in my arms with her head on my chest"the best feeling ever"i didn't want to fall asleep immediately because of those nightmares i have been having so i snuggled myself out of her and went to the study to do some work a call came in it was jay***

Me: bafo

jay: i swear im gonna kill her

Me: kill who

Jay: that evil witch phindile i swear bafo im gonna unleash my beast on her

Me: what did she do

Jay: il give you all the details tomorrow i can't tell you over the phone bafo you know somethings we can't talk over the phone so il see you tomorrow prepare yourself bafo

Me: ok...i have a feeling im not gonna like this anyway il see you in the morning

Jay: shap

he dropped the call and i continued with my paper work

***NARRATED ***

Buhle: aunty im sorry but i can't continue with this he hates me can you believe he called me a prostitute no i can't be disrespected like that even my blessers dont disrespect me like that

Aunt: buhle since when are you weak huh all you need to do is make him fall inlove with you then marry you...you made him sleep with you now why are you failing this simple task of winning his heart do you know how wealthy he is huh you wont have to have to sleep with different men for money anymore you'll have it at the palm of your hand

Buhle: aunty i can't im sorry plus mandla apologized to denying the pregnancy he said he'll take care of us and i don't have to worry about anything plus him and his wife are having problems

Aunt: you wanna go back to that rubbish huh what will happen when him and the wife fix things huh ...what?.. dont be stupid buhle you are driven by money ...you'll get your money and a stable home for your child and il get my revenge its as simple as that

buhle: i love mandla and hes the father of my

unborn child im sorry aunty

Aunt: buhle please you my only hope

Buhle: im sorry aunty I've already told ma that
im out bye

***she dropped the call and huffed she loved
her aunt she was actually her mother's friend
but she called her aunt because shes always
been nice to her but now she's more scared of
mandla than she loves money as for jase she
had something planned out for him to teach
him a lesson to never disrespect her again but
what she didn't know was she was dealing with
the devil himself so she was in for a shock of
her life***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/05, 13:41] Nor: INSERT.....36

.

.

.

JASE'S POV

i was busy in my study at around 2 in the morning as i was busy concentrating on what i was doing the door open slowly i pulled my gun that is strapped under the table and put it on top of my thigh then kedis head popped in eish

Kedi: i knew il find you in here

Me: why are you up at this time

Kedi: I'm hungry im actually on my way to the kitchen

Me: mmm

Kedi: and wena why are you working at this time

of the night leaving your pregnant fiancée all alone in bed

Me: im sorry my heart i couldn't sleep so i came here to do some work

Kedi: ok

she left i closed my laptop and put my gun back to where it was and went after her she was opening the fridge taking out mayonnaise,tomato sauce,mustard,cheese spread,French polony and she went to the bread bin and took out bread and went to the cupboard and took out peanut butter yho i was shocked she smeared everything on a slice of bread and one slice of polony and put another slice of bread on top and ate i sat here shocked as hell i mean who eats that...she raised her head and found me staring at her shocked

Kedi: what?

Me: ummm nothing

Kedi: then dont look at me like that its what your kids wants to eat hao

Me: ok baby

she ate while i put back everything that was on top of the counter back to where it was.. after she was done eating we went upstairs and got inside the covers and i held her tight...i woke up before her alarm rang and i didn't have that bad dream eish mntungwa was up and hard as hell so i pulled down her short pyjama pants and took off my boxers and got between her legs and entered her slowly i groaned out loud and she also moaned out loud damn i had my morning glory and it was epic after that we went to shower after showering she bend down and threw up in the toilet eish it broke my heart seeing her like that after she was done she rinsed her mouth with mouthwash and we went to the bathroom and lotioned and got dressed

Kedi: you going to work dressed in a jean and a golf shirt

Me: no my heart il work from home today i have no meetings today plus i dont feel like going to work

Kedi: mmmh perks of being the boss neh

Me: you got it right

i perked her lips and brushed her belly then i started having a bad feeling like something bad is about to happen eish

Kedi: are you ok

Me: yeah...il drive you to work today and il also pick you up ok

Kedi: ok my king

wow i thought she'd tell me hell no...anyway she made the bed while i checked my emails

Kedi: im glad masibiya is back

Me: house chores getting too much for you

Kedi: khumalo you know you live in a mansion hao at least now things will go back to normal ill clean the bedrooms while she cleans the rest of the house

i laughed

Me: you cleaning the bedrooms is when you indirectly telling masibiya to keep out of this bedroom

Kedi: you know me like they say "love them all but trust no one"

Me: ok my heart lets go so you three can eat

we went downstairs and found jay eating

Me: bafo

Jay: foza...ao kotiza you glowing those two ninjas in there are treating you well neh

***kedi giggled ***

Kedi: yeah they are and how are you sbari

Jay: udakiwe sbari my left foot... im you second husband without the perks of being a husband ofcourse not like jase so dont call me sbari please

Me: my heart dont mind him it looks like he didn't take his medication this morning

Jay: voetsek

we all laughed shit i missed this i mean this atmosphere here the love and laughter filling this kitchen right now and to think i almost contaminated this house with anger and sadness i fill like slapping myself now anyway we ate and i drove her to work and drove back home and found jay busy on my laptop

Me: the are naked pictures in there of my wife and i

Jay: point of correction your soon to be wife and im busy checking my emails not watching pictures of you sucking your soon to be wife's tits

Me: mxm sometimes you forget that im older than you

Jay: by what? a few seconds mxm the thing is you think you're older than me cause you came out first but you see i was conceived first and you were conceived second thats why i was deep inside and wena you were closer to the entrance/exit

Me: ai voetsek jay man

we both laughed nx this fool mara

Me: lets go and talk and stop talking nonsense i was right you didn't take your medication this morning ukhuluma amasimba nje (you talking shit)

Jay: yeah you right i didn't take my medication being my morning glory i was too stressed to fuck anyone

***i just laughed shaking my head mxm i have a lunatic as a twin... we went to the study and

we sat down***

Me: talk to me

Jay: phindile and that bitch buhle are working together

Me: what? How

Jay: thats not all...buhle is mamdluli's daughter the one grandad said shes plotting with phindile to have you marry her daughter

Me: but we did a background check on her

Jay: yeah cause shes using her father's surname skhosana not mdluli being her mother's surname

Me: shit shit shit

Jay: i had her tailed and shes been meeting up with some guy called mandla alot it looked like hes her boyfriend and we hacked into her phone shes been exchanging calls with phindile

Me: when did you do all this

Jay: since you started acting like a bitch and stressing about losing kedi instead of finding solutions

Me: so buhle could be working with phindile on whatever sinister plan shes busy cooking

Jay: yeah i had my boys pick her up shes at the warehouse as we speak

Me: wow thanx bafo

Jay: we twins jase and more importantly we have each others backs no matter what remember the stolen diamonds saga so we dont thank each other using words a bottle of the most expensive scotch will do

i laughed.. fuck i didn't see this one coming

Jay: i wont be shocked if that pregnancy is not yours remember you said you used protection so i have this feeling that pregnancy is not yours and that it was used to trap you and for

them to use it to get or do whatever they wanted to do

Me:i swear jay some people are about to die and a very cruel death

i said that standing up and pacing up and down im angry but more at myself how can i just give in and accept that pregnancy so easily more importantly i hurt kedi for nothing for absolutely nothing nx i took the glass that was on top of the table that had whiskey that jay was drinking and i threw it to the wall and it shattered and fell on the floor and i went to the wall and i punched it repeatedly until jay pulled me back

Jay: KRAY STOP IT

me: I WAS PLAYED BY A BITCH BAFO A WORTHLESS BITCH....I ALMOST LOST KEDI BECAUSE OF THAT THING WORSE OF IT ALL I HURT HER FOR NOTHING NOTHING BAFO I MADE MY BABY CRY FOR WHAT HUH

NOTHING I SWEAR ON MOM'S GRAVE THEY ALL GONNA PAY WITH THEIR FAMILIES IM GONNA WIPE OUT THEIR ENTIRE FAMILIES I SWEAR ON MOM'S GRAVE IM GOING ON A KILLING SPREE AND NO ONE IS GONNA STOP ME (i roared)

Jay: you need to calm down so we can go interrogate that thing

i tried to do a breath in and out but i couldn't calm down so i took the bottle of whiskey and downed it down until i felt it burn my throat then i put it down and walked out and i took my car keys and went to my car and jay went to his while driving to the warehouse i called kedi her voice is the only thing that can calm me down now she answered on the third ring

Kedi: my king

you see what i mean already im smiling hearing her call me her king

Me: my heart you good

Kedi: yeah just tired and horny

***i chuckle ***

Me: i can drive straight there now and we can have it in jays office

Kedi:(giggling)its a pity i have lots of work to finish its Thursday and my supervisor will want our weekly reports tomorrow but atleast im almost done

me: you need any help you know i dont want you over working yourself dont strain my cubs

Kedi: cubs jase really

she laughed which made me laugh too

Me: yeah im the beast and they my cubs my heart

Kedi: oohk if you put it like that then yeah i agree gape the things you do to me when we make love yeses so yah you are the beast

***we laughed what she didn't know was i

really have a mystical beast in me***

Kedi: khumalo let me get back to work il see you later i think il need a massage tonight

Me: i got you babe you'll surely get it ooh and baby im on my way to the office there's a client some old fool who decided to pop in the office and demand a meeting without an appointment

Kedi: ooh

Me: yeah im gonna give him a piece of my mind he thinks hes more important than other clients

Kedi: ok my king but please make sure you come home early please remember you were not supposed to go to work and plus i want my massage and other things before i have my early night sleep

Me: ok my heart i love you ok too much

Kedi: i love you too and your cubs love you too

***we both laughed ***

Me: i love them too

Kedi: ok bye

Me: bye love

***then i dropped the call i know i shouldn't lie to her like this but i couldn't tell her where im really going...we finally arrived at the warehouse and i got out of the car and headed inside ***

Jay: you way calmer than you were earlier

Me: kedi happened just hearing her voice calmed me down instantly

Jay: good cause we need information on her before you make her meet her ancestors

*** we went inside and she was tied to a chair she looks like shes been crying she was wearing pyjamas nx i took a chair and sat in front of her so did jay then i took off the tape on her mouth ***

Buhle: jase whats..whats going on

me: tell me about phindile

***her eyes popped out ***

Buhle: i don't know what you talking a...

she didn't finish her sentence i slapped her so hard and grabbed her by her weave and made her look at me

Me: answer my fucken question or il bring your stupid mother here and let jay mutilate her in front of you im sure that will make you talk

Buhle: please leave my mother out of this

me: jay this bitch is getting on my last nerve im about to loose my cool

Jay: didn't that witch phindile tell you who we are and what we are capable of

Buhle: jase you wouldn't hurt the mother of your unborn child

me: yes you're right the mother of my unborn children is at work working her butt off cause

shes not a gold digging whore like you

***she cried and i slapped her again she better start talking i dont have time for crocodile tears

Me: talk

Buhle: look i dont know what you're talking about

***she said sniffing ***

Me: jay tell the boys to bring her useless mother we have all day so we will wait kzn is not that far and start taking out your knives

Buhle: stop ok il talk il talk...phindile is my mom's friend she asked me to lure you in and sleep with you and get pregnant and that she'll use her status as your aunt and force you to marry me then...

Jay: then what

***she kept quiet and i punched her on her face and she fell back along with the chair shes tied

in...jay pulled her up a bit of blood was coming out of her mouth she was crying ***

me:TALK!

Buhle: th..then we will kill you...poison you and then il own everything that belongs to you she said il get the money and she'll get her revenge after you she will move to your brother

*** jay laughed and i punched her again but this time she didn't fall on her back***

Me: YOU WANTED TO KILL ME BUHLE AND WHAT IN GOD'S NAME MADE YOU THINK IL FALL FOR A DOM KOP LIKE YOU A WORTHLESS PROSTITUTE

Buhle: dont call me a prosti....

Me: VOETSEK YOU PIECE OF SHIT

***she kept quiet crying silently ***

Jay: so mandla is the one responsible for that thing in your stomach mmmmmm

she nodded and i punched her again she cried loud

Me: you know bafo im gonna enjoy killing this bitch and her useless family

Jay: and her organs will make us good money in the black market

Buhle: please dont kill me please il help you save your relationship with your woman please spare my life please

Me: what are you talking about

Buhle: give me your word that you'll spare my life and my family first

Jay: talk and I'll spare your mother and your little sister's life yours is just useless

she cried her lip was swollen so is her right eye it was swollen and closed

buhle: i send her a video of us having sex and a letter telling her about the pregnancy

Me: what video

Buhle: i recorded us having sex im sorry jase im sorry im sure she received them by now please forgive me it was phindile who made me do this please spare my family

i felt my blood boil and i slapped her again and told our guys to guard her and we rushed to my car and drove out in speed i prayed she didn't watch the video and read the letter after a while we arrived and rushed inside and found her sitting on the couch with my laptop on her lap and tears running down her cheeks....fuck im screwed *

KEDI'S POV

*** things have been hectic here at work yho i

had to eat my lunch while working thats how bad things are anyway jase and i are in a good space now hes behaving like the jase i know and fell in love with***

mandisa: so girl since you bailed out on me are you game today

Me: im afraid i can't i need to rest today was hectic

Mandisa: mmmmm and i guess our boss will surely massage you tonight

i raised an eyebrow looking at her

Me: stop beating around the bush mandisa ask away

mandisa: so is it true you dating mr khumalo and that pregnancy is his ooh and you're engaged

me: not that its any of yall's business but yes

Mandisa: yes to which one

Me: all of the above

Mandisa: yho and why are you working here

Me: what do you mean

Mandisa: i mean you should be doing shopping sprees monday to monday at paris not working as an administrator come on girl you should be home doing your nails waiting for hubby to come home not this i mean your fiance owns this company

Me: your right he owns this company not me and plus i want to be independent i dont want to be a liability to him to depend on him to do everything for me

***she looked at me shocked everyone looked at me as if im mad or something mxm gold diggers ***

Mandisa: what planet are you from....girl you two are engaged for God's sake and you are pregnant yho ai shem you see why i say you

need friends you are thinking like a village girl
im sure even village girls have improved their
thinking

me: please dont insult me ok first of all im not a
gold digger i actually love him and not because
he has money and secondly not every women
are moved by money some of us like to work
our way up and not sleep our way up (i snapped
at her)

Mandisa: yho chill girl i didn't mean to offend
you

*** nx i kept quiet and continued with my work
the other two of my colleagues that i share the
office with gasped nje and kept quiet an hour
later a delivery man entered but he was not
from spur he asked for me and mandisa
pointed towards me he came to me and gave
me a cd and an envelope and i signed for them
and he left i decided to open them at home
cause now im busy so i put them in my hand

bagmy day went on until it was knock off time then i received an sms from jase saying hes still in a meeting so my driver is on his way mxm i packed my things and left on my way out mandisa asked if we could talk so i stopped and listened to her ***

Mandisa: kedi im sorry about my comments earlier on i didn't mean to offend you

Me: why are you bothered that im working here while my fiance is the owner

mandisa: it just doesn't make sense

Me: why

mandisa: because hes wealthy so you dont need to work

Me: you see why i dont have friends because of this kind of thinking my late best friend would have advised me to register to study at a university and get myself a degree or something not this things you are saying

***after saying that i walked away leaving her standing there mxm some girls are just useless they think with their vaginas instead of their brains mxm just because your fiance is wealthy that doesnt mean you should render yourself useless nje aarg enough about her i got to the parking lot and found my driver waiting so i greeted him and got in the car and we left when we arrived i went inside and went to take a long bath after i was done i wore my pyjamas since i was gonna have an early night then i remembered the cd and envelope i received today i took them downstairs and went to the study i took jase's laptop mxm i wonder why i dont have my own laptop maybe its because i always use his and he doesnt mind but its high time i got myself one anyway i went to the lounge and put the laptop on top of the table along with the cd and envelope and went to the kitchen and made myself a sandwich and poured myself some ice tea in a glass and went

to sit down in the lounge i took one bite from my sandwich and i opened the envelope and read it""on this cd its a video of your soo called boyfriend satisfying me the day we created our bundle of joy Jason junior (jj) for short you think hes just yours shame hes ours bitch and soon to be mine only i thought i should let you know since im gonna give him an heir that you should do yourself a favour and leave him for me and his son i don't like sharing a dick so you better leave or I'll make you trust me you dont wanna take me on bitch yours sincerely buhle soon to be mrs khumalo ""no no no it cant be true i was breathing heavily so i put the cd on and played it and it was homemade video it started playing and my body froze it was jase fucking another woman his face was showing clearly and the tattoos on his body showed it wasn't photo shopped he was busy going in and out of her fast while groaning out loud and the girl was moaning louder calling jase's name.....

Jesus why me mara why....i zoned out and sat here frozen i couldn't move i wanted to stand up and run to where exactly i dont know but to just run but i couldn't move an inch what i feel this instant is worse than what i felt growing up being raped and beaten every single day i wanted to close the laptop but i couldn't move instead i closed my eyes as tears ran down my cheeks i kept hearing them groaning and moaning over and over until i felt the laptop being lifted off my lap i opened my eyes and looked up and i saw jase and jay their facial expressions showed fear jase moved and sat next to me all i kept hearing were their moans and groans ringing in my head finally my body moved when i tried to turn and look at him he had his hands on his face and his elbows on his thighs i stood up i ready to leave or run or scream or something but i just stood here breathing heavily with tears gushing out i felt like i was losing my mind until i heard jase

screaming i turned and i saw blood where i was sitting down the next thing jase scoops me up quickly and runs to the door***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/05, 13:41] Nor: INSERT.....37

.

.

.

JASE'S POV

***i rushed to the car and put her on the back seat and also got in so did jay he was the one

driving he drove out in speed... her head was on my lap and her legs were open she was holding her stomach crying out loud with her eyes shut God her screams and cries pierced through my heart like a sharp object ***

Me: ba..bay we almost there hold on you gonna be ok

*** i looked between her legs and i saw a whole lot of blood God no my babies tears fell down from my eyes i couldn't stop them i kept on kissing her forehead then i heard jay talk his phone was on loud speaker ***

Jay: are you on duty

Muzi: yeah im about to knock off

Jay: we on our way there kedi is bleeding

Muzi: fuck...il be waiting for you

the the call was dropped

Jay: kedi hang in there im almost there

he was driving like a maniac overtaking cars like crazy...we finally arrived and i quickly got out and took her out of the car fuck the car seat was filled with blood i carried her running towards muzi and two nurses i put her on a stretcher and they quickly wheeled her away i looked at my hands and i had blood on them God what have i done i can't loose them i just cant i walked away to find the restroom since jay went to fill in some forms i found them and i washed my hands kedi's screams still ringing in my ears after i was done i went back and waited for muzi i sat down and put my face in my hand with my elbows on my thighs i sat like that until i felt a hand on my shoulder squeezing it

Jay: shes gonna be ok

Me: my..my kids jay i killed them i killed them and shes gonna leave me jay she will

***a sob escaped my mouth...jay kept quiet and took a deep breath i started having chest pains

Jay: jase whats wrong

Me: chest pains

Jay: eish try to calm down bafo kedi will needs you healthy and strong to help her through all this

Me: she gonna leave me i might as well die right now

Jay: dont fucken talk like that jase please you can't be giving up now.. stop

i kept quiet thinking about all that blood and her screams she looked like she was in serious pain we sat in silence two hours passed we stood up when we saw muzi walking towards us his facial expression showed pain right then i knew my babies are gone that chest pain became more painful i bend down with one hand on my chest and another on my knee muzi rushed to me

Jay: bafo

Me: pain

Muzi: you need to calm down jase now is not the time to be admitted in hospital kedi needs you

the pain went on an on until it stopped

Muzi: lets go so i can check you up

Me: it stopped... how is she

i wanted to ask about my babies but i was scared of the answer he was gonna give me

Muzi: lets go talk in my office

Me: MUZI JUST TELL ME HOW MY FIANCEE IS DAMN IT

Muzi: my office jase

***he said that walking away mxm we followed him and entered his office and we sat down ***

Me: now talk

Muzi: (he took a deep breath) im sorry jase she lost one twin

Me: wha...wha..what do you mean

Muzi: she lost one of the twins but the other one is still ok its heartbeart is still there but the other one didn't make it

Jay: is that even possible

Muzi: very

Me: how is she

***it came out as a whisper while looking down

Muzi: (he took a deep breath) we had to sedate her cause she was losing it and her BP was rising extremely fast

i stood up but i felt like i was just stabbed by a sharp object on my chest i fell on my knees with one hand on my chest another one on the floor and i groaned feeling soo much pain...muzi and jay rushed to me

Muzi: bafo breath

Jay: jase dont do this to me

i started coughing out blood struggling to breath

Muzi: fuck... jay lets put him on top of the bed

***they did and i felt the beast awakening with full force shit whats happening to me ***

***NARRATED ***

jase started breathing heavily with a deep voice it sounded like a lion was in the room he was also shivering his eyes turned blood shot red instantly muzi was shit scared and jay took out his phone quickly and called his grandfather the only time he saw something like this was when his late uncle died

Baba: nkosenye you know you supposed to call

this number when its an emergency

Jay: baba its nkosi the beast is trying to take over like the way it did with uncle jabu

Baba: shit...where are you...what happened

Jay: at the hospital with muzi and nkosi kedi had a miscarriage and lost one baby

Baba: put me on loud speaker

jay did

Baba: muzi sedate him and make the dosage double and restrain him...find cuffs and handcuff him then take him out of that hospital immediately to mamelodi il send you an address to take him too

Muzi: ok baba

Baba: make sure no one sees him like that im leaving now for the airport im coming with dlamini il see you when i get there..now sedate him and leave now

*** then he cut the call...muzi rushed outside and jay remained with jase he started coughing out blood again and breathing heavily like an angry animal then his eyes turned white like he was possessed his skin turned pale and visible black veins started showing on his skin and he started shaking jay tried to restrain him but he was just too powerful luckily muzi rushed in and injected him on the neck with a sedative then they cuffed him and muzi opened the door and pushed in a stretcher and they put him on it and covered his whole body then they wheeled him out using another exit and put him in the car and drove to Mamelodi on their way baba sent them an address they suppose to take him to muzi was driving like a maniac on the road they are lucky there were no traffic cops on the road...20 minutes later they arrived to their destination and the gate was opened so they drove in and parked the car and two men rushed to the car and opened the door and

pulled jase out and rushed to the rondavel at the back and jay and muzi followed they got in and put him in a circle they drew on the floor with white chalk and lit candles and the room was filled with smoke of an ancestral herb (mpephe) jay's phone rang it was his father***

Jay: pops

J.dad: jay how is he

Jay: not good pops his skin has already turned pale with visible black veins

J.dad: shit...what happened

Jay:(he sighed) kedi miscarried one twin after finding out jase cheated he blames himself for the baby's death

J.dad: and how is she

Jay: sedated but muzi said she'll be ok

J.dad: im on my way to you but il arrive tomorrow since its a twelve hours flight

Jay: ok

J.dad: be strong for both of them he'll be fine
bab'dlamini knows how to deal with this im
alive today cause he fought and brought me
back after the beast almost took over and killed
me so your brother will be fine

Jay: i hope so cause i feel useless now i wish i
can help him find his way back

J.dad: you two are cut from the same rod you
are him and he's you....you'll find a way to help
him find his way back look im about to board
the jet il see you in a couple of hours be strong

Jay: ok pops

then he cut the call and went back inside

Jay: pops is coming

Muzi: ok good we need all the help we can get

Jay: yeah

Muzi: i need to get back to the hospital and

keep an eye on kedi her pregnancy is in a critical stage i need to keep a close eye on her so when jase wakes up i should give him positive results

Jay: thanx bafo

Muzi: bros for life he better fight this and wake up or im not getting married in four months time

Jay: then you better have your will updated ohh and leave that Ferrari of yours in my name and that collection of your expensive scotch as my inheritance cause natasha will kill you

***they both chuckled jay turned and looked at jase with nothing but pain on his face ***

Muzi: hes a fighter

Jay: yeah

Muzi: let me get going please update me

Jay: sure

then he left jay sat there and looked at his brother and anger filled his heart he thought of how he was gonna make buhle and phindile pay for this four hours later his grandfather and bab'dlamini arrived with muzi

Baba: nkosenye

Jay: baba

Baba: dont worry my boy dlamini and i are here now he'll be fine

jay nodded he wasn't about to cry he needed to be strong for his twin

Jay: bab'dlamini

Dlamini: popeye

*** jay just smiled shaking his head he always called him that and called jase spinach cause they are always together and they act crazy and make stupid jokes and tease each other and they are always arguing about stupid shit which always turn into jokes***

Bab'dlamini: muzi wake him up

*** JASE'S POV***

one moment i was having chest pains and the next thing i was in a dark place i couldn't see anything the only thing i felt was something breathing on my face like an animal.... like a werewolf or a lion i tried to move but i couldn't my body was stiff it was like i was tied up tight but i couldn't feel any rope tied around me i could smell an ancestral herb (mpephe) in the air and it was strong khante what fuck is happening am i dead and in hell or whatafter a while i felt the heavy foot steps of whatever that was breathing on my face walking away to say i was shit scared was an understatement

KEDI'S POV

i opened my eyes only to find my mom and dad looking at me smiling from ear to ear i couldn't believe it the last thing i remember is muzi telling me i miscarried one of my babies and i lost it and started screaming and crying hysterically then i felt weak and it was lights out now im here in my old room back at home on top of my bed with my parents sitting next to my bed smiling wait am i dead

Mom: you are not dead my munchkin

Me: mom,dad is... is this really you

Dad: yes my beautiful princess

*** i started crying i couldn't believe it i got of the bed and tried to hug them but i couldn't touch them they were like an illusion ***

Mom: you can't touch us baby

Me:why

Dad: cause you are not dead princess

Me: huh. .. but im here with you in my old room

Dad: you needed to see us so that you can be strong and ready to face the ordeal and pain of losing a child and the betrayal you just encountered by the one you gave your heart to

Me: let me die so i can be here with you forever

Mom: no munchkin its not yet your time

Me: mom please it is my time i want to be with you and dad here

Dad: princess remember i once told you you are destined for greater things

Me: (sniffing) yes

Dad: well you are about to experience them your chosen one will make you soo happy to a point that you'll see all the challenges,pains,trials and tribulations you encountered as mere tests that God made for you to test your patience,strength,faith, love and trust in him

remember God never gives you burdens he knows you cant handle and also remember Gods delays are not his denials

Me: he hurt me dad and i trusted him with my life

Mom: and baby hes paying handsomely for hurting you trust me he is

Dad: what hes feeling right now is worse than the pain you are feeling

Me: i can't forgive him dad he lied and betrayed me hes supposed to be my happily ever after but he chose to hurt me like this he doesn't deserve me

Dad: princess he deserves you and you'll soon find out why im saying this i trust him with your life yes he messed up remember hes human...princess always remember to aire is human but to forgive is devine

Me: dad i miss you and mom soo much please

let me stay here with you

i continued to cry

Dad: shhh dont cry we are always with you
always and we love you soo much.... baby now
its time to wake up

Me: huh

Mom: wake up munchkin....wake up

***i slowly opened my eyes and closed them
and opened them again and i looked around i
was at the hospital not in my room with mom
and dad tears streamed down i tried to stay
awake but my eyelids were heavy so i closed
my eyes and drifted to sleep***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/05, 14:50] Nor: INSERT.....38

.

.

.

***NARRATED ***

***muzi injected jase with a drug called Ritalin that is used to wake up a sedated person the beast woke up almost immediately to strangling muzi he was still cuffed but he was strong enough to jump on muzi but luckily jay and his grandfather restrained him for muzi to escape his grip then bab'dlamini blew a white powder on his face and he fell back and calmed down and went to a sleeping mode muzi was shit scared hes never encountered something even close to this in his life but he remained strong and composed so that he wont seem like a whimp....bab'dlamini took the clay bowl

that had the ancestral herb(mpephe) and walked around jase doing or saying incantations calling his ancestors and jase's ancestors to guide him into helping jase and for them to also help jase find his way back after he was done he took out his bones blew on them and threw them on the floor and looked at them nodding his head after a while he picked them up and blew on them and threw them again on the floor then stared at them and kept nodding then turned to look at baba ***

Bab'dlamini: we need to summon mkhululi

Baba: dlamini hes dead what good use will he be to us

Bab'dlamini: he started this whole thing mbulazi

Baba: can't we do things like the way we did with their father

Bab'dlamini: no we can't this time its different he wants to die cause he blames himself for the loss of his unborn child and he fears his chosen

one will leave him for betraying her

Baba: (he took a deep breath)how do we
summon him

Bab'dlamini: dont worry about that what we
need is a body he can use to communicate with
us

Jay: does it have to be a dead body

Bab'dlamini: no

Jay: then il do it

Baba: are sure son

Jay: yes baba

Bab'dlamini: i was gonna suggest you but you
just beat me to it things might go smoothly with
you cause you're his twin and we will use your
beast to connect with his for you two to
connect and mkhululi we are summoning him
to ask for his help

Jay: ok lets start jase needs to wake up

right then muzi's phone rang and he went outside it was the hospital after the call he went back inside they were busy preparing bab'dlamini was busy mixing some herbs and jay and baba were busy taking jase's clothes off leaving him with just his boxers and jay also took off his clothes remaining only with his boxers too

Muzi: baba it was the hospital shes awake i need to go and make sure that her and the baby are ok

Baba: ok son after you done with her come back here and bring along your medical equipment for when he wakes up i need you to do a thorough check up on him especially his chest sinse he was coughing out blood

Muzi: ok baba....jay bring him back

Jay: sure bafo

***they fist bumped and muzi rushed to the hospital....bab'dlamini called the two guys that

work for him they were outside to come and help bab'dlamini instructed the guys to make jase lay straight up and also instructed jay to get into the circle and lay next to his twin also facing up and he did...as for jase he was still out of it with his eyes shut but he was still breathing like an angry animal and loudly ..each of the guys had a clay bowl in their hand with a burned ancestral herb (mpephe) inside they were walking around the circle singing some songs then bab'dlamini poured some of the herbs he was mixing on jay and jase then made jay drink some and they forced jase to drink too even if its just a little after that one of the guys gave bab'dlamini that clay bowl and started beating the drum singing some songs while bab'dlamini was busy saying some incantations while he was standing next to the twins.after a while the room started to shake a bit and there was a bit of wind inside the rondovel then the candles surrounding the circle went off then on

again then jay started shaking uncontrollably as the room continued shaking and the candles also turning on and off then everything went quiet except for the drumthen jay's great great grandfather possessed jay's body and he opened his eyes and they were white then he started talking with a deep scary voice ***

Ghost : WHY AM I HERE (he roared)

Baba: we need your help

Ghost : YOU KNOW SUMMONING ME FROM THE DEAD IS A DANGEROUS MOVE RIGHT

bab'dlamini: your great great grandson needs your help the beast completely took over his body we dont know how to bring him back

Ghost : BOY STOP BEATING THAT DRUM ITS GIVING ME A HEADACHE

***The guy stopped.... shaking as hell this was some scary shit ***

Ghost : LET HIM DIE IM SURE LANGA YOU

TOLD HIM THE RULES ON WHAT TO DO AND WHAT NOT TO DO

Baba: he messed up baba and im sure he learned his lesson please help bring him back

Bab'dlamini: he has the chosen one and their baby to care for please dont let him die help him baba

Ghost : I DIDN'T SACRIFICE MY SOUL FOR THIS BOYS TO ACT LIKE HE-GOATS DO THEY THINK I ENJOY BEING STUCK IN A DIMENSION BETWEEN THE LIVING AND THE DEAD HEH IS THIS WHAT I SACRIFICED MYSELF FOR HEH LANGA(he shouted)

baba: no baba please forgive him they both still have alot to learn please forgive them

Ghost : HE SHOULD HAVE LEARNED FROM HIS UNCLE'S DEATH BUT NO NX.... LISTEN AND LISTEN GOOD I WILL NOT TAKE THIS RUBBISH ANYMORE TELL THEM TO BEHAVE OR IL CUT OFF THEIR LIFE SPAN SHORT AND HAVE

THEM COME JOIN ME HERE IN THIS HELL
WHOLE DONT TEST ME AND MY PATIENCE
BOY KEEP THEM ON A TIGHT LEASH OR ALL
HELL WILL BREAK LOOSE AND IL COME THERE
IN MY CURRENT FORM AND WIPE OUT YOUR
ENTIRE LEANAGE SINCE I SACRIFICED MYSELF
FOR NOTHING DONT DARE ME

***he roared even baba was scared the guys
that work for bab'dlamini where shaking with
fear..the room went quiet for a while ***

Ghost: I HOPE THIS IS THE FIRST AND THE
LAST TIME IM SUMMONED HERE BECAUSE OF
THIS I HAVE BETTER THINGS TO DO LIKE
COLLECTING PEOPLE'S SOULS WHO USED
THEM AS SACRIFICES THAN TO COME AND
HELP STUPID BOYS WHO CAN'T KEEP THEIR
DICKS IN THEIR PANTS IM SURE I MAKING
MYSELF CLEAR LANGA AND DLAMINI

them: yebo baba

Ghost:GOOD NOW IL CONNECT THEIR BEASTS

SO NKOSENYE CAN CONVINCHE HIM TO COME
BACK AND SHOW HIM THE WAY

***minutes later jase started shaking and his
eyes opened they were still white***

jase heard a deep scary voice talking

Ghost: BOY WHATS WRONG WITH YOU
UYAHLANYA (are you mad)

Jase: who's there...who are you

Ghost: IM YOUR GREAT GREAT GRANDFATHER

jase: am i dead

Ghost: YOU'RE LUCKY YOUR CHOSEN ONE
STILL LOVES YOU OR ELSE YOU'LL BE ON YOU
WAY TO HELL NOW

Jase: well she'll leave me so i might as well die
cause i can't live without her

Ghost: TALK LIKE THAT AGAIN AND IL PUNCH
YOU ON YOU FACE AND TRUST ME IT WILL
LEAVE YOU PARALYZED AND IN A VEGETABLE

STATE FOR THE REST OF YOUR LIFE SO DON'T
DARE ME BOY (he roared)

***jase kept quiet ***

Ghost: NOW LISTEN AND LISTEN GOOD
INCLUDING YOU NKOSENYE

jase:jay is here....bafo...

Ghost: SHUT UP!

GHOST: LISTEN BOTH OF YOU IF YOU EVER DO
SHIT LIKE THIS EVER AGAIN IL COME HERE
MYSELF TO KILL YOU AND TAKE YOU TO HELL
MYSELF DO I MAKE MYSELF CLEAR

them: yebo mkhulu

Ghost: GOOD NOW NKOSI THAT GIRL IS YOUR
CHOSEN ONE SO YOU SHOULD NEVER ALLOW
HER TO LEAVE OR ELSE YOUR ENEMY MIGHT
SNATCH HER AND MAKE HER HIS WIFE WHILE
YOU RUN AROUND MAD OR WORSE
DEAD...HER LEAVING YOU IS NOT AN OPTION
REMEMBER SHE WAS CHOSEN FOR YOU

BEFORE YOU WERE EVEN CONCEIVED SO
DONT TEMP FATE AND DESTINY OR YOU'LL
LIVE TO REGRET IT EVEN IN DEATH

***with that he left the land of the living going
back to where he was summoned from then it
was jase and jay remaining***

Jay: bafo you need to wake up kedi is awake
and your baby is doing well

Jase: what if she leaves me

Jay: continue talking this rubbish and mkhulu
will come back and punch you...stop this kedi
will leave you if you let her one thing i know for
sure is she loves you shes just hurting and
angry

Jase: im tied up jay i dont even know where to
go its dark everywhere

a voice told bab'dlamini to untie jase

Bab'dlamini: uncuff him

***they all looked at him including baba as if

hes crazy***

Baba: are you sure dlamini you know his beast will kill the three of you right if it attacks

Bab'dlamini: he wants to come back now uncuff him

baba did and they waited the twins were laying there still not moving with their eyes opened they where still white

Jay: only kedi can bring you back focus on her,your love for her and your baby in her womb....concentrate on them fight that guilt and pain thats overshadowing your heart remember you didn't kill your baby buhle and phindile did

***when jase heard those two names tears came out he felt soo much anger in his heart then he started shaking uncontrollably bab'dlamini's boys wanted to run out of the randovel but they stopped when bab'dlamini ordered them to stop as for jay and jase they

lost the connection cause the beast came back in that dark room remember it feeds of his anger and jase saw it his vision it was like an exray vision he could see it moving towards him right then his body felt loose so he stood up and then jay's eyes went back to normal and he blinked couple of times and baba rushed to him and helped him stand up and get out of the circle...as for jase he started fighting the beast for control and not emotionally or psychologically but physically in that dark room it was a fist fight jase had to win back his title of being in control instead of the beast...on the other hand bab'dlamini told the boys to start beating the drum and sing cause shit was about to happen while he was busy blowing that ancestral herb (mpephe) on jase saying his incantations while jay and baba were busy encouraging jase to fight and win for kedi and his unborn child after half an hour he stopped shaking and he screamed out loud then the

candles went off as if someone blew on them
the room went dark and everyone swallowed
hard and gasped they didn't know if jase won or
not what if the beast won and ready to kill the
room went quiet they even stopped beating the
drum ***

Baba: nkosi

silence filled the room again

Jay: jase say something please tell me you won
tell me you back

silence filled the room again

Baba: fuck...

Jase: KEDI! (He shouted)

***then the candles lit again the two guys where
shaking with fear they've never seen shit like
this before im sure they'll start going to church
now cause for them it was like they were in hell
or the devil himself was in the room they both
ran outside and started throwing up...jay rushed

to jase and sat down next to him and pulled his head up and lay it on his lap jase's eyes were no longer white but blood shot red and the black veins were fading away and his skin was going back to normal***

Jay: im glad you back bafo

jase: where's kedi

his voice was hoarse from all that growling and roaring he did his throat and chest was also painful but luckily he was gonna be fine the worst was over...his grandfather went to them and knelt in front of jase

Baba: if you ever scare me like that again know that il wake you up then kill you myself

jase: im sorry baba

Baba: rest and regain your strength and go fight for your woman and win her back

*** he nodded and drifted to sleep bab'dlamini came in with a sponge mattress and a pillow

and they put jase on it so that he can rest and they went outside it was already night time jay called muzi to tell him the good news and that they'll see him tomorrow morning at jase's house***

Baba: thanks dlamini for helping in bringing my grandson back

Bab'dlamini: we all did our part mbulazi

Baba: well next week we are going to Ghana for a holiday my brother we are old men we should be resting and enjoying our old age not fighting beasts and arguing with ancient ghosts

they laughed out loud

jay: aow baba i didn't know you can crack a joke

Baba: there's alot you dont know about me son

Bab'dlamini: one of the things being a comedian

***they continued laughing ***

KEDI'S POV

***i woke up to jase screaming my name out loud i looked around the hospital room and i was all alone mxm i might have been dreaming but it felt real like he was near just like that dream i had of my parents aaarg why im i even thinking about him i mean he hasn't even checked on us maybe hes with his other baby mama...i can't believe jase did that to me i can't believe he betrayed me like this i thought he loved me i guess i was wrong maybe i should have given nathi a chance and not him anyway now its just me and my baby....tears just ran down my cheeks i can't believe i lost my baby what did i do to deserve this maybe i am cursed now i need to be strong for my remaining baby he or she is the only family i have i just lost one baby so i can't loose this one as well so i need to try and stop stressing in my dream dad said God never gives you a burden he knows you

can't handle so as hard as its gonna be i need to be strong for my unborn baby and as for jase im done with him***

JASES POV

I woke up with a banging headache i felt like shit even my chest and throat were painful i got up from the sponge mattress and i found clothes neatly folded on top of the chair my sneakers on the floor it was a jean and a golf shirt i wore them and walked outside it was early in the morning i found jay, baba and bab'dlamini sitting outside with cups on their hands

Me: morning

they turned and looked my way

Baba: morning son

Bab'dlamini: morning spinach

***i just smiled and shook my heavy head will this old man ever stop calling me that ***

Jay: you look like shit

Me: i also feel like shit

Bab'dlamini: VUSI BRING A CUP WITH WARM WATER AND ANOTHER CUP OF COFFEE MAKE IT BLACK AND STRONG DONT ADD SUGAR

he shouted looking towards the main house a guy came out carrying two cups and jay took one cup and instructed him to give me another cup and i thanked him and he went back into the house i went next to the fence and rinsed my mouth and splashed some on my face after i was done i went to sit down with them and took the cup from jay and drank

Baba: what happened nkosi

***i took a deep breath looking down ***

Me: i cheated on her and she found out only for me to find out it was all a setup from phindile

and the girl i cheated with the girl claimed she was pregnant with my child but we just found out she lied the pregnancy isn't mine

Baba: phindile nx after i warned her she still went ahead nc nc nc

Bab'dlamini: that girl is digging her own grave nx

Me: i was weak baba i failed her and i contributed to her losing our baby i dont think she'll ever forgive me

Jay: she loves you jase dont give up fight for her

Baba: jason

fuck baba has never called me by my English name before

Me: ba...baba

Baba: in two weeks time on princess's birthday i'll be waiting to be introduced to my pregnant daughter in law i dont care how you do it but i

want her there introduced to the whole khumalo family and dont disappointment me boy i will not take kindly to you disappointing me with that

he stood up and looked at us

Baba: lets go im sure masibiya is done with preparing our breakfast

***bab'dlamini stood up and went inside the house and came out and followed baba to the car me and jay followed after them walking slowly ***

Me: i need to go see kedi

Jay: yeah we'll go after you showered and ate something

Me: what about that bitch

Jay: leave her to me this time im taking control of the situation wena just concentrate on kedi and our baby the rest I'll handle them myself her and phindile wont know what hit them ***i

just nodded i didn't have the strength to deal with them i was drained all i needed to do now is to regroup and win my queen back and the rest will follow.....we got in the car and jay drove to my house***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/05, 14:50] Nor: INSERT.....39

.

.

.

KEDI'S POV

***i was just drained nje i was woken up by muzi when he was doing his rounds im also mad at him cause i know he knew about the second baby mama cause hes the only doctor jase trust i could see that he felt the tension between us so he did his job without me saying a word to him or even answering his stupid question like if im ok or feel any pain il only just nod or shake my head after he left i dosed off to lala land i woke up to a feeling of someone looking at me only to find jase staring at me he looked different his face was a bit pale and his lips were a bit dry and he had dark patches under his eyes i looked away ***

Jase: forgive me my heart

*** his voice was different it was deep and hoarse anyway i didn't want to say anything to him but i was so angry at him that i couldn't control my emotions***

Me: stop calling me your heart im no longer

your heart

Jase: kedi please

Me: please what huh u know what jase we are over you hear me im done with your cheating ass go to your other baby mama and leave me the hell alone

*** he just kept quiet and just looked at me with a pained expression and i just didn't care...i took off my engagement ring and threw it at him it hit him on his chest and fell on the floor he just closed his eyes breathing out heavily***

Jase: hows my baby

Me: go ask the one you and your soon to be mrs khumalo killed

his face turned hard

Jase: she lied ok she not carrying my child kedi yes i cheated i know but im not marrying anyone else but you and you are the only woman i love i messed up my heart im sorry

please forgive me kedi and please dont leave me im sorry

he sounded emotional but its too late the damage has already being done i will never trust him ever again

Me: jase thanks for everything you've done for me but im done we will never be together ever again please leave

***i said that wiping my tears ***

Jase:kedi please don't do this im begging you you are my everything i can't loose you

Me: you lost me the moment you slept with her
***he bend down and picked up the ring and put it on his pinky finger and walked out i just continued to cry it hurt so much minutes later jay walked in ***

Jay: kedi please forgive him

Me: did you know

***ofcourse he knew but i wanted to hear it from his mouth**

Jay: yes

Me: ok you can leave now

Jay: kedi dont do this even muzi told me you've been giving him the cold shoulder

Jay: you, muzi and you cheating brother can go to hell i dont ever wanna see any of you stay the fuck away from me or il get a restraining order on each one of you you hear me STAY THE FUCK AWAY FROM ME

Jay: kedi...

***it came out as a whisper ***

Me: i dont owe you anything jay ok now leave before i have you thrown out

***he shook his head and walked out nx i continued to cry until i fell asleep...i woke up to a hand holding my hand tight and it was jase gosh his forehead was resting on top of the bed

khante is this guy deaf or what i tried to pull my hand away from his grip but he tightened the grip nx we sat like this in silence for almost half an hour until muzi walked in and cleared his throat and jase raised his stupid head and looked at him***

Muzi: kedi the nurse said you refused to eat your breakfast

Me: so

Muzi: kedi you need to eat so you can gain your strength back and plus you need to feed the baby

Jase: baby please muzi is right

Me: who's your baby jase didn't i just say its fucken over i dont even understand why you are here

Me: and you muzi please dont pissed me off ok you are my fucken doctor nothing else so stay in your lane nx

Muzi: jase talk to you woman you know i don't take kindly to being disrespected

Me: and what will you do if i continue huh what you'll inject me with empty syringe so that i can die a slow and painful death

Muzi: ok now shes losing it

Me: your mother is the one who's losing it nx

Muzi: askies

yho his face changed to extreme anger and jase rushed to him and he pulled him out of the room...God i dont know why im acting like this im just angry...angry at everyone ...angry at myself for trusting jase with my heart maybe i should be admitted to a mental institution cause i feel like im losing my mind i have soo much anger in me that i dont know what to do with it ...i just cried myself to sleep

***NARRATED ***

after jase pulled muzi outside he begged him to calm down

Jase: bafo shes hurting she didn't mean what she said

Muzi: i know bafo but I dont get why im being punished for what you did

Jase: she knows you are the only doctor i trust meaning i took buhle to you for a check up she feels betrayed she also took a jab at jay too

Muzi: eish

Jase: im sorry bafo

Muzi: dont worry about it il just wear earplugs when i do my rounds in her ward

Jase: lucky you

***they laughed... muzi left and jase sat in the bench and got lost in thoughts he didn't know what to do to win kedi back and the fact that

she called the engagement off hit him hard but he wasn't about to give up just like that he didn't come back from a mini hell for kedi to leave him

meanwhile nathi has been tailing kedi ever since that day she called him from the mall the thing is nathi is inlove with kedi and hes becoming obsessed with her...yes he has a girlfriend but his heart beats for kedi he would leave his girlfriend within a heart beat if kedi would just give him a chance but with jase still on the picture he knows he has no chance but he might if only jase could go back to his old ways of fucking anything in skirt his phone rang

Nathi: joe

Joe: boss shes admitted in hospital since last night

Nathi: what? Wh..what happened to her is she ok

Joe: apparently she was brought in bleeding heavily

Nathi: shit is she ok

Joe: yes the nurse i payed said she's ok but just hurtingthere's another thing boss

Nathi: talk

Joe: ummm she was pregnant with twins but she lost one but the other one is still alive

***nathi kept quiet breathing heavily thinking of kedi carrying that bastard jase's kid ***

Joe: should i make her miscarry the remaining baby

Nathi: you said shes really hurting because of the loss of one baby

Joe: yeah thats what the nurse said

Nathi: then lets wait a bit let her heal for this loss first

Joe: so i should continue tailing her

Nathi: yeah tell me if anything new happens

then he dropped the call and stood up from his desk pacing up and down worried about kedi he wished she could call him so he can be there for her cause he couldn't just show up in her ward she might be suspicious

Voice: i see you want to start war with the khumalos

Nathi: dad please ok not now please

N.dad: nathi that girl belongs to one of the khumalo boys stay clear of her trust me you dont wanna start war with them

Nathi: i love her dad i can't just switch off how i feel about her just like that

N.dad: how the hell are you gonna get over her if you keep tailing her

Nathi: dad i love her and there's nothing anyone can do about it so please just drop it

N.dad: nathi there are lots of girls you can pursue

please let this one go

Nathi: antlek dad whose side are you on what kind of a father would advise his son to leave the girl he loves for another man ...you were even there when your traditional healer said shes the best amongst the best that shes an uncut rough diamond shes priceless and you want me to leave her for that good for nothing khumalo boy

N.dad: you dont wanna mess with that family son they are dangerous

Nathi:im not scared of him

N.dad: well you should be nathi remember what happened to your brother

Nathi: THEY KILLED HIM THATS WHAT HAPPENED DAD AND INSTEAD OF KILLING ALL OF THEM FOR KILLING HIM YOU ARE BUSY SCARED OF THEM WHAT KIND OF A FATHER ARE YOU

N.dad: YOU BROTHER WAS KILLED BY A WILD ANIMAL

nathi:AND YOU BELIEVE THAT THEN YOU MORE STUPID THAN I THOUGHT THOSE BASTARDS KILLED YOUR SON AND YOU ARE DEFENDING THEM

N.dad: IM STILL YOUR FATHER NATHI SO YOU BETTER RESPECT ME OR

nathi:OR WHAT

nathi looked at his father with soo much hate he hated him for letting the khumalo's live after they killed his elder brother even though it was said he was killed my an animal but deep down he had a feeling that they were involved somehow but his dad was too chicken to even investigated mxm

Nathi: dad i think you should leave before we both say things we will regret

N.dad: stay away from that girl before you get

killed boy im not ready to bury another son
please

***with that he walked out nathi went to his
office Window and stared outside and thought
of kedi how he wishes he was there for her
holding her tight assuring her that she'll be just
fine but he couldn't because of jase...the day he
was gonna get revenge on them they wont
know what hit them he thought to himself ***

JASE'S POV

***seeing my father after so many months of
being away was great ...you see my father is
living in Colombia learning about each and
everything about being a mafia leader hes
gonna take over after granddad since hes
retiring in two years time so until next year hes
gonna go around the world making new and
strong connections and creating a name for

himself in the underworld..he stayed for two days and went to spend two more days in kzn with princess and Brandon we had fun just me, him and jay and he also gave us sound advice on how to make it in the business and how to balance love and the business without one overshadowing the other and like baba said to me he also said i shouldn't let kedi go no matter what even if she threatens me so that i let her go i shouldn't well he said alot of things and most of them made alot of sense now its been a week and two days since kedi was discharged from hospital and its been hell for me she wanted to move out but i just wouldn't hear none of it so i suggested that i move from the main bedroom to the guest bedroom just to give her space she has been giving me the silent treatment since then and she doesn't even want me to touch her even if it means brushing her belly so i haven't touched her or even hugged her for 9days and and 15 hours

and its been hell shit i miss her like crazy even though we live together il give anything just to hug her or even to hold her hand....i pack my things and as i was about to leave to go pick her up from work my door swung open and karen (one of my ex fuck buddies) walked in followed by my PA***

PA: sir im sorry i tried to stop her

Me: its ok you can leave palesa

she walked out and closed the door on her way out

Me: karen what can i do for you

karen: i miss you jase i miss us most importantly i miss your huge dick come on we had a good thing going we can make it work

she said that unbuttoning her shirt...yah neh the devil is really testing me here

Me: is that all

Karen: jase come on dont be like that ok

Me: listen here woman go tell who ever send you here even if its satan himself that you didn't find me and dont ever set you stinking feet here ever again now fuck off from here

she stood there shocked as hell i grabbed her by her arm and dragged her out

Me: FUCK OFF FROM HERE

Karen: jase please dont do this i love you

Me: palesa call security to come and take this thing out of here and tell them if this thing ever sets its feet here again they are all fired including you do i make myself clear

Palesa: ye...yes sir

***i left them there with palesa calling security and karen calling my name nx im being tested seriously i mean im busy trying to fix things with kedi and this happens especially now that i haven't had some in a week and few days but temptation will not win ever again i almost died

because of it anyway i drove straight to kedi's work place and send her an sms that im here in the parking lot after a while she came out walked to the passenger side and opened the door and got in***

Kedi: hi

***it came out as a whisper ***

Me: hey...how was work

***she kept quiet and just shrug her shoulders...i sighed and started the car and we drove off in total silence God i hate this ...this thing thats happening now i miss my ever smiling kedi by now she would be telling me each and every detail that happened today by now we would be gossiping about some of her colleagues ok ok she would be gossiping and il just listen and laugh and comment here and there mxm eish anyway we arrived home and parked the car and she got out and went inside i also got out too and went inside to the guest

bedroom and changed and i went to the main bedroom to ask her if she'll like anything to eat i opened the door slowly and got in she was on her knees praying and crying***

Kedi: God please help me i can't anymore its too much everyday its a struggle im failing God dad said you never give your children burdens you know they cant handle but God mine is too heavy i can't handle it(she sniffed) you know God i have this crazy thoughts of taking my life so i can go be with my parents and leave this evil life and world but then i remember killing myself is a sin and i might go straight to hell and not see my parents so please tell me what i should do i dont know what to do everything is just too much im suffocating God please tell me what to do or at least show me a sign then please

***she continued to talk to her God it didn't sound like the praying i used to hear mama do this is different its like shes talking to God as if

hes next to her physically eish just because i couldn't keep my dick in my pants now shes suffering i went and knelt next to her im out of options of how to help her heal and for her to forgive me maybe praying might help so i closed my eye***

Me: God you probably dont remember me its me Jason one of your lost sheep the last time i knelt before you was when my mom was admitted in hospital then she later died since then i have never prayed or attempt to im a sinner God that i know for sure now im kneeling in front of you for the first time in so many years pleading and begging you to help heal kedi shes suffering and hurting because of me i broke her God please if its possible transfer all her hurt and pain to me let me carry her burden God and also wipe off all those suicidal thoughts shes having please punish me God if its the only way she will heal...im sorry for what i did i was weak please forgive me and heal her

God i heard from my grandma that nothing is impossible with you so im humbly asking this from you to heal her heart and to transfer all her burdens to me including her pain and hurt please God i know i dont have the privilege of asking anything from you since i sin like its a new trend to sin but its for a good course please AMEN

i opened my eyes to find kedi staring at me with tears running down her cheeks i stood up and helped her up then i wiped her tears off

Me:im sorry kedi i messed up and i don't know how to fix us im out of options but one thing i know is im never letting you go ever

Kedi: im hungry

fuck hearing her say that meant alot to me i smiled like a retard i know it might mean nothing but to me it means everything the fact that she said another word except hi makes me happy

Me: lets go feed the two of you

***we went downstairs and i made her a sandwich so long while i cooked pasta and mince which is her favourite when i was almost done jay walked ***

Jay: kotiza

ked: its kedi for you me and your brother are over so please stop calling me that im sure his other baby mama wont mind being called that

***she said that in a low voice and she went upstairs eish ***

Me: will she ever forgive me

Jay: give her a bit of time she'll come around..so what are you cooking there

Me: pasta and mince

Jay: dude come on you know i love meat not this mince and pasta of yours

Me: im not cooking for you

Jay: mxm antlek where is masibiya

Me: she has flu so i gave her a few days off
she'll be back Sunday

Jay: you should have just told the poor old
woman that you want some alone time with
your queen mxm now im sure she thinks shes
fired because she contracted flu nc nc nc
shame poor woman

Me: im not even gonna try and comment cause
it clearly shows you forgot to drink you
medication today

Jay: voetsek

*** i laughed and he went to the fridge and took
out meat and defrosted it then marinated it and
started chopping onions ***

Me: yha neh i respect hunger straight

Jay: tsek

***i finished cooking and dished for kedi and
headed upstairs leaving jay busy boiling water

for pap i got to the main bedroom and she was laying in bed concentrating on her phone***

Me: sit up so you can eat

she did and i gave her the tray with a plate on top she closed her eyes doing a silent prayer then started eating i just pulled a chair and sat next to the bed and watched her eat

Me: will you ever forgive me

Kedi: i forgave you jase but i dont think il ever forget

Me: is the still a chance for us

she shook her head not even looking at me eish that cut right through my heart i closed my eyes and sighed then opened them again

Me: Saturday is princess's birthday you coming with right

she shook her head no

Me: please kedi i have already told them im

coming with you please

Kedi: just take your other baby mama im sure she wont mind

me: kedi that baby is not mine she told me so herself that she said its mine only to trap me i know i messed up big time but you are the only woman that is carrying my cub and the only woman i love more that i love myself i was weak kedi but ive learned my lesson i even lost a baby in the process please accompany me to the party please

she just kept quiet and continued to eat i stood up

Me: let me go check if jay hasn't burned down my kitchen hes cooking

she kept quiet i sighed and went down stairs


.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/05, 14:54] Nor: 

Diary ya kedi:the chozen one

INSERT.....40

.

.

.

JASE'S POV

i went to the kitchen and found jay busy stirring a pot

Me: smells good

Jay: better recognise

***we laughed ***

Me: what happened to that bitch

Jay: chopped into pieces and her useless butchered body send to phindile's house and my boys went to her house and took her passport, id even her birth certificate so that she doesn't leave the country they are even tailing her every move

Me: yho

Jay: shes even lucky i didn't torture her first

Me: you wont believe who came to my office today

Jay: who

Me: Karen

Jay: big ass and big hips with a tiny waist

Me: yeah

Jay: dont tell me shes also claiming to carry

your heir

Me: tsek nx...she said she loved me and she missed my dick can you believe it

Jay: i hope you told her to fuck off

Me: worse than that i dragged her out of my office like the bitch she is

Kedi: you should have fucked her that's what you good at right fucking whores me included since i grew up being called that by step mother

fuck both me and jay we literally froze she walked to the sink and washed her plate and dried it then put it where it belonged then walked out of the kitchen without us saying a word my heart was beating fast whatever that just happened right now made us take 10 steps back i can already feel it and we were making a bit of progress eish

Me: if this is not bad luck then i dont know what

it is

Jay: shit

*** i left jay in the kitchen and i went upstairs and opened the door and she was on the phone talking to someone while crying***

Kedi: im calling you cause i need a friend and not your i told you so

she said wiping her tears i wonder who shes talking to

Kedi: he wont let me leave

*she listened while sniffing *

Kedi: no nathi im tired i just cant anymore but he just wont let me leave i wanna go somewhere far away and start over

i felt my blood boil instantly and i rushed to her and snatched her phone from her

Me: IM WARNING YOU FOR THE FUCKEN LAST TIME KANI STAY THE FUCK AWAY FROM MY

WOMAN OR WHATEVER WILL HAPPEN TO YOU
I SHOULDN'T BE HELD RESPONSIBLE FOR IT (i
shouted)

Nathi: IL ONLY STAY AWAY FROM HER IF SHE
TELLS ME HERSELF OK WHO THE FUCK DO
YOU THINK YOU ARE

Me: DONT DARE ME BOY I SWEAR IL FUCK YOU
UP BADLY

nathi: YOU DONT SCARE ME YOU FUCKEN
BASTARD KEDI IS GONNA BE MINE IL MAKE
SURE OF IT

***i laughed like really laughed nx this boy ***

Me: i warned you for the last time next time my
actions will speak louder than my words

***then i dropped the call and paced up and
down trying to calm myself i was boiling inside
after a while i stopped and went to sit next to
her she looked scared nx***

Me: how long have you two been talking

she swallowed hard

Kedi: since i came back from the hospital

Me: have you two met recently

*** she shook her head no***

Me: listen to me if you ever talk to that bastard ever again whatever will happen to him will be on you his death will be on you i wont think twice before i put a bullet through his fucken skull...dare me and you'll see what im capable of

***i stood up tossed her phone on the bed and left the bedroom to the in-house gym i threw punches at that punching bag like my life depended on it i wasn't even wearing gloves i needed to get rid of this anger im feeling before i loose it and go on a killing spree after feeling satisfied i sat on the chair trying to catch my breath one thing i know is i dont blame kedi for calling nathi im the one who pushed her to him its like i keep fucking things up every chance i

get i wish i could undo the cheating my child would still be safe in her womb and we would be happy and i wouldn't have experienced the wrath of my beast nx...my phone disturbs me from my thoughts it was ma***

Me: ma

Ma: my son how are you

Me: im ok ma

Ma: ok now the truth

i chuckled eish this old woman mara

Me: i messed up and now im paying for it really hard

Ma: how is she

Me: baba told you

ma: yes he did

Me: she cries everyday ma i wish i can undo everything but i can't she even called off the engagement

Ma: what engagement nkosi

Me: ummm eish ...i asked her to marry me we were gonna announce it on Friday when we came

Ma: mmmm. .just give her time she'll come around

Me: shes drifting away i feel like im losing her ma and you know what will happen if she leaves me i love her ma soo much and it hurts seeing her hurt like this im supposed to protect her and not hurt her like this

Ma: just remind her why she fell in love with you in the first place and the rest will follow

Me: ok ma il try

Ma: shes coming on Friday right

Me: she doesn't want to come but there's no way in hell im leaving her here alone

Ma: good dont give up on her and on your relationship

Me: that will never happen ma i love her more than i love myself so there's no way im giving up on us

Ma: good il see you all on Friday then...tell your other you to answer his phone or call me

Me: ok ma i'll tell him i love you

Ma: i love you too baby

then she cut the call shit i love my grandmother she's always there when we need her and she never judged us i went to the lounge and jay was drinking his scotch while watching soccer

Jay: you ok man

Me: yeah ma said you should call her

Jay: ohh ok let me call her

***he stood up while dialling his phone i also stood up and went upstairs to the main bedroom and kedi was sleeping i bend down and kissed her cheek and she opened her eyes

slowly she was sleepy ***

Me: lets go and eat

Kedi: im ok i just ate

Me: that was a starter the main dish is waiting in the kitchen

my phone rang it was jay

Me: you know we are on the same house right

Jay: mxm look im leaving il see you tomorrow and make sure kedi doesn't go to work tomorrow she must go buy whatever she'll need for the weekend tomorrow cause we leaving around 10 on Friday

Me: ok shap

***then i dropped the call and looked at kedi she was sleeping again fuck she looked beautiful with her pouted lips i kissed her lips and she mumbled something in her sleep then turned to face the other way i kissed her cheek and went to the kitchen and dished for myself

and ate after i was done i went to the in-house gym to lift some weights***

KEDI'S POV

***things have been tough but what surprised me more than anything is jase praying and what he said to God really touched me now i know he really loves me but i dont think i can ever trust him with my heart and his reaction to what happened earlier when he found out ive been talking to nathi surprised me him threatening nathi like that really scared me but atleast he didn't go all psycho on me im surprised he didn't even shouting or lash out and I'm gonna stay away from nathi cause it looks like their hatred for each other is way deeper than i thought i mean for jase to threaten to kill nathi like that and he looked like he meant every word so yah i dont wanna get caught up in all that

anyway i just woke up from my power nap and i went to take a quick shower then headed downstairs i went to the kitchen and opened the pots atleast jay left some for us gape that guy can eat guys anyway i dished up for myself and warmed my food in the microwave i waited for it to finish then suddenly i felt hands holding me from the back then he rubbed my belly slowly then i felt his lips on my neck gosh that send shivers down my spine i tried to snuggle out of his hands but he tightened the grip***

Jase: i miss you kedi...i miss us.... i miss burying myself inside of you please lets fix things

***he whispered in my ear with his deep voice gosh i felt my clit twitch...i moved away from him finally the microwave stopped i tried to go take my food out but he blocked my way and i just stood there looking at him the same way he was looking at me i want to fix things between us but the fear of him hurting me again took

over what if he cheats again you know what they say once a cheater always a cheater i mean earlier on he said to jay a girl named Karen came to his office and said he missed his dick even though he dragged her out how long will he keep chasing them out until he gives in and cheat again im scared God knows i still love him but sometimes love is just not enough...i feel hands wiping my face i must have been crying gosh i must have zoned out he lift my face up making me look at him remember he's tall the next thing i feel his lips brushing against mine eish mara why is jase doing this to me mara i try to pull away but he doesn't let me he deepens the kiss but i dont kiss him back i just can't then he stops kissing me and he just stares at me the next thing i feel his hand squeezing my butt tight pulling my body closer to his then i feel his boner poking my stomach gosh this guy mara***

Jase: tell me what to do to make us ok again i

love you kedi more than i love myself please my heart lets fix things all you need to do is agree and il do the rest please my queen

Me: jase i can't i dont trust you with my heart anymore what if you cheat again im sorry i can't

Jase: kedi I've learned my lesson the hard way and i was punished severely just agree and let me take it from there please my heart

Me: i can't jase im sorry

he let go of me and brushed his hair roughly looking down then he looked at me with a hard face

Jase: so im not worthy to be given a second chance kedi

***i kept quiet cause i was getting emotional and pissed thinking about his sex video with that girl ***

Jase: WHAT MUST I DO FOR YOU TO FORGIVE

ME CAUSE IT CLEARLY SHOWS YOU LIED
WHEN YOU SAID YOU'VE FORGIVEN ME

***tears streamed down my cheeks ***

Me: disappear like the way siphon disappeared

***i said that wiping my tears his eyes popped out looking at me i just washed my hands in the sink then took my plate of food in the microwave leaving him standing like a statue breathing heavily and i went to the lounge to eat while i was watching tv...after eating that scrumptious food who i must admit jay can cook shem anyway i took my plate to the kitchen and jase wasn't there anymore so i washed the dishes packed the left overs in containers and put them in the fridge and washed the pots too and cleaned the kitchen after i was done i locked all the doors and switched off the lights and went to sleep ok ok i know i just woke up but this pregnancy is making me sleep alot i can't help it when i got in

the bedroom i found jase laying in bed facing up
it looks like he was in deep thoughts aaarg i
went to the in-suite bathroom and peed and
flushed then washed my hands and went back
gosh he was still in that same position ***

Me: jase please go i need to sleep

***he kept quiet ***

Me: jase

Jase: im not going anywhere

Me: jase we agreed to sleep in separate
bedrooms please go

***he got off the bed and stood up looking at
me with a hard face***

Jase: tell me kedi why does this bad thing i did
to you overshadows each and every good
things ive done since we met huh...i know i hurt
you....i know i killed our baby i dont sleep at
night kedi cause it haunts me that blood all over
the car seat haunts me cause that was my child

kedi our child ...I KILLED HIM OR HER ITS MY
FUCKEN FAULT I KNOW AND IM GONNA LIVE
WITH THIS GUILT FOR THE REST OF MY LIFE...I
CHEATED KEDI I KNOW I DONT EVEN KNOW
WHY I DID IT CAUSE YOU ARE EVERYTHING I
WANT AND NEED IN A WOMAN AND I KNOW
IM GONNA REGRET IT FOR THE REST OF MY
LIFE NOW TELL ME AM I NOT WORTHY TO BE
FORGIVEN AND GIVEN A SECOND CHANCE
HUH

***tears started coming out of his eyes God
noooo i started crying too ...***

Jase: tell me my heart am i such a bad person
that you can't give me a second chance huh im
trying kedi each and everyday i endure all your
silent treatment and tantrums even your cold
shoulder i take it like a man cause im the cause
of you being hurt like this and that im the cause
you miscarried you dont even let me touch you
even if i want to brush your belly to connect
with my cub you dont let me i fucked up i know

but kedi this is too much i know my mistake and i took full responsibility i didn't shift the blame to anyone else and i learned my lesson all im asking from you is for you to give me a second chance only and il do the rest...il win your trust and heart back...il make you happy again....il bring joy into your life again and take away your pain please kedi

***i shook my head no trust me i want to say yes soo bad but im scared to say yes but seeing him cry like this breaks my heart jase is a macho man serious and scary at times and romantic and loving most of the times but this vulnerable side im seeing now i dont wish to see it ever again it hurts me more than im already hurt by him cheating....he walks to the wall and switched the light off and walks to my side and opens the covers for me and i get in then he switches the side lamp and takes off his vest and sweatpants then walks to his side and gets into the covers and switches his side

lamp also and pulls me towards him and he holds me tight while brushing my back gently while hes busy kissing my forehead i want to pull out of his arms but i decide against it i think i fell asleep cause i woke up to my alarm ringing jase was holding me from behind gosh his hard dick was busy poking my butt and he was brushing my belly slowly and gently i reached for my phone and turned off my alarm and tried to get out of bed to prepare myself for work but he tightened the grip and pulled me closer to his body and his hard dick ***

Jase: you're taking four days off work

he whispered in my ear with his deep sleepy voice gosh my clit vibrated and his hard shaft poking butt wasn't doing any justice for me at all

Me: why?

Jase: you gonna go shopping for whatever you'll need this weekend and do your hair and

nails and whatever you girls do to pamper yourselves and buy princess a birthday present cause we leaving tomorrow around 10 in the morning and we gonna go past muzi's practice so he can check if the baby is ok

Me: jase

Jase: i love you

Me: jase stop ok and you can't just introduce your baby mama to your family wait until the baby is born then you can introduce him or her not me

he tightened the grip and kissed the back of my neck gosh this guy mara

Jase: you right im not gonna introduce my baby mama to my family but my soon to be wife,the mother of my unborn child, the center of my universe,the love of my life,my chosen one,my heart, my queen,my love,my hope,my....

i interrupted him

Me: jase eish

Jase: what..its the truth you're not just my baby mama but also all the things i just mentioned...im gonna win your heart again kedi thats if i haven't already.. ..you see my queen me and you even death cant and wont separate us so the sooner you accept that the better

Me: is that why you take me for granted and hurt me

***he sighed ***

Jase: never again kedi i swear on my late mother's grave and all my family members lives never again... ive learned my lesson and was punished and i also paid handsomely for my stupidity

i just kept quiet and he continued to brush my belly until i fell alseep again

***NARRATED ***

nathi was pacing up and down after jase warned him yesterday on the phone concerning kedi he tried to call her again but she didn't answer and hes been restless since then hes been happy since she called him but now she doesn't even answer his calls he was worried now and thought to himself if jase threatened her or something his phone rang

Nathi: joe

joe: they just drove out im tailing them now

Nathi: did you see her did she look ok

Joe: i didn't check if she was ok boss

nathi: ok let me know when shes alone

Joe: ok boss

he dropped the call

***in the mean time jase and kedi finally woke up and got ready to go to muzi's practice but a

few minutes after they drove out he noticed that they were being followed he called jay since he couldn't call snakes cause he went underground meaning he was busy doing a job for the mafia so he couldn't be contacted jay finally answered

Jase: do you have a pen and paper with you

Jay: ummm yeah i do now

Jase: NZE 507 GP take care of it

Jay: you're being tailed

Jase: yeah

Jay: shit..im on it

Jase: sure we are going to see muzi now

Jay: you with kedi now

Jase: yeah

Jay: she doesn't suspect anything right we dont want her panicking its not good for our baby

Jase: yeah eish tell me after its done

Jay: sure

he dropped the call and looked at kedi

Jay: you good

Kedi: yeah just hungry

jase: ok we'll go grab something after our appointment with muzi

Kedi: ok

***he kept on looking at the car through the review mirror and it kept on tailing them until they arrived at muzi's practice they drove inside and the car that is tailing them parked outside "fucken amateur" he said to himself ***

.

[08/06, 07:52] Nor: Diary ya kedi:the chozen one

INSERT.41

.

.

.

KEDI'S POV

***we arrived at muzi's practice and waited a bit since he was busy with a patient we sat on the couches and jase held my hand and kept on kissing it gosh after a while we went inside ***

Muzi: my favourite patient

i smiled faintly at him

Jase: bafo

Muzi: foza ugrand (you good)

Jase: never been better

Muzi: good to hear that...ummm kedi you still mad at me

Me: yeah now can we get this over and done with

Jase: baby please its enough now you've punished him enough

Me: jase please dont start with me ok...you,him and jay betrayed me and stabbed me in the back laughing with me while you were busy pushing in a sharp knife right through my back so please let me be

i feel betrayed by him i know his loyalty is with jase but still i saw him as a friend and now i dont trust him and the twins anymore

Muzi: ok tell me what to do to win your trust and forgiveness back

Me: i know your loyalty is with jase but still doesn't make what you did right

Muzi: i know his heart im sorry ok

Me: whatever can you just check the baby now

Jase: kedi

Me: fine....you are forgiven but i don't trust you anymore and il stop giving you an attitude

Muzi:(he sighed) ok thanks for the forgiveness
now lets go check the little one

***well he did his thing and we heard a very
strong heartbeat and he showed us a figure on
the monitor screen he said it was the baby jase
was holding back his tears he held my hand
tight after muzi was done we asked if e can see
the gender of the baby and he said he'll be able
to tell on my next visit so he printed a couple of
pictures for us then jase wiped the cold gel on
my belly and made me stand up and hugged me
for dear life after that he cupped my face and
kissed me i didn't kiss him back at first but i
eventually gave in and kissed him back the kiss
went on and on until i felt him squeezing my
butt tight while pulling me towards him i tried to
pull back but he wouldn't let me i was saved by
muzi shouting in the other room***

Muzi: I HOPE YOU TWO ARE NOT FUCKING IN
THERE PLEASE

jase smiled with his lips still locked with mine then he pulled out and kissed my forehead...gosh his boner was bad anyway he fixed himself and we went to muzi and sat down and he just shook his head then he gave me my vitamins and the next appointment date

Muzi: i guess il see yall tomorrow

Jay: you coming with Natasha

Muzi: yah

Jase: then dont forget to buy princess what you promised her or else all hell will break loose

***they both laughed then an sms came in on jase's phone he checked it then we said good bye to muzi and we left for the mall and jase was holding my hand all along after we arrived at menlyn park mall he opened the door for me and we went inside and i decided to start with the salon first then do some shopping we went to this upper class salon we walked in an i was

assisted immediately as i was looking through their catalogue Jesus the prices were mad high yho i closed it and walked towards jase***

Me: ummm we can go

Jase: i thought you said you'll start with your hair and nails

Me: jase the cheapest hairstyle here is R4000

i whispered to him and he laughed mxm mara jase

Jase: so?

Me: jase

he took out his wallet and gave me an American express card ohh my God

Jase: take there's no limit.... there's a million rand in this card so dont be shy just buy whatever you want "NO MATTER HOW EXPENSIVE IT IS"

***he specified the' no matter how expensive it

is' part mxm his phone rang ***

Jase: bafo

*he listened *

Jase: ok im on my way

then he dropped the call

Jase: my heart im gonna meet up with jay tell me when you done il be at mugg n bean

Me: ok

he kissed my forehead and left

Hairdresser: boyfriend

*** i didn't know what to say so i just nodded***

Hairdresser: hold on to him tight girl you know what they say about forehead kisses so he's a keeper

i just faked a smile at her and i chose a R8000 Peruvian weave

***JASE' POV ***

i got to jay

Me: jay who the fuck was that busy tailing me

Jay: some fool called joe

Me: ok do we know him

jay took a deep breath before he could answer me...my phone rang

Me: yah

Caller: kray

Me: mamba

Snakes: yeah bafo i only have a few minutes are you with spilo

Me:yah whats wrong

Snakes: put me on loud speaker

i did

Jay: you can talk now bafo

Snakes: eish i just did my routine check on all the trakers we've put on our loved ones since its been a while now since i checked them because of this work im doing for the organization and i just found that kedi's tracker on her phone has been hacked

Me: wh..what...how is that possible

Jay: tell me you found the source

Snakes: you know me i did and only one person can do that in gauteng besides me

Me: WHO

Snakes: that wannabe IT specialist mongezi

Jay: that bastard that worked for that old fool smith

Snakes: yeah and now he works for kani's son

Me: NATHI

Snakes:yeah

Me: i swear im gonna castrate that bastard he

just started a war with the wrong person

Snakes: i have to go il see yall on Saturday at princesses party il explain everything then ooh and jay i emailed you all the details concerning mongezi

Jay: sho

***then the line went dead then jay and i checked his email and we were shocked by the information snakes found... i dialled kedi's phone numbers to check if shes ok ***

Kedi: jase im almost done

Me: ok i was just checking up on you

Kedi: ok

Me: tell them to be fast i need to feed you and my cub

Kedi: im almost done

Me: ok i love you

***she kept quiet ***

Me: and i know you love me too

Kedi: jase

Me: im a patient man miss malapane soon
you'll be screaming those three magical words
out loud while im busy pounding on you hard

***she kept quiet but i could tell she was
blushing after a few seconds she spoke***

Kedi: eish jase bye

i chuckled and dropped the call

***NARRATED ***

***kedi was busy doing her nails now when
nathi walked in the salon and went straight to
her***

Nathi: thank God you ok

***kedi's eyes popped out she was surprised to
see nathi***

Kedi: and how did you know i was here

Nathi: i have my ways...you look good

kedi was feeling uncomfortable now cause she didn't understand how nathi knew she was in a salon unless...*

Kedi: are you stalking me nathi

nathi just stared at her he couldn't believe how beautiful she is and with this new hairstyle she looked different "beautifully different " all he wanted to do was smash his lips against hers and tell her how much he loves her

Nathi: is that a bad thing

he said that smiling ok ok now this is creepy the lady doing kedi's nails raised her head and looked at her with a raised eyebrow

Kedi: ummm nathi you need to go jase will be here any minute now

Nathi: can we meet up later

Kedi: nathi jase wont allow that please go before he finds you here

Nathi: babe please look when you get home tell him you forgot to buy something and you'll find me waiting at mugg n bean please

Kedi: nathi i can't do that

Nathi: kedi come on i want us to talk thats it please 20 minutes tops

Kedi: ok il see what i can do

Nathi: thanks babe

he went to her and kissed her forehead and walked out...kedi was shocked beyond words with nathi

Lady: i had an ex like him once

kedi just looked at her with her eyebrows raised

Lady: bad news girl just be careful

then she continued with her work

**** meanwhile at mugg n bean ***

Jay: you had to say that in front of me vele

Jase:(laughing) yeah you should have closed your ears with your hands

Jay: mxm...about that fool joe

Jase: yeah what did you find out from him

Jay: he works for nathi and hes been ordered to tail kedi

Jase: nathi is playing with fire and its gonna burn him

Jay: he also said something that is worrying me

Jase: what

Jay: that hes planning on making kedi miscarry our cub

jase stood up quickly and stared at jay with a really scary look everyone turned to look at them and jay knew he had to control the situation before jase looses it

Jay: calm down kray

Jase: HE WHAT? (he roared)

Jay: bafo sit down please and calm down

jase sat down breathing heavily angry as hell

Jase: that son of bitch is planning to killing my child

Jay: that's what that fool joe said before he met his ancestorshe also said nathi is obsessed with kedi so bafo we need to be careful and make sure we know where kedi is all the time infact she needs bodyguards

Jase: thats an issue we will tackle on later for now i want to know how we are going to deal with that boy remember our families made a peace treat after the whole abduction issue

Jay: he evoked the peace treat by playing on our territory

Jase: the things il do to that bastard will be

worse than what i did to that rapist sam

jay: dont worry we will deal with him when we come back from kzn

jay called a waitress and he ordered something to eat and jase only ordered coffee

Jay: dont tell me you on a diet

Jase: mxm il eat with my heart

Jay: so things are good now

jay: we getting there the fact that we slept on the same bed last night and cuddled means we getting there

jay: thats good

Jase: yeah eish and to think i almost lost her

Jay: tempt with fate and you'll see flames no more fooling around bafo

Jase: no more im done

jay: good

waitress came back with jay's food and jase's coffee after they were done eating while conversing on work related things jase remembered that kedi is all alone in that salon and nathi is busy tracking her

Jase: fuck...kedi

***jase stood up quickly and rushed out to the salon and jay paid the bill and rushed after jase...they arrived at the salon and kedi was at the till paying she didn't see them so they stood outside ***

Jase: eish i never considered telling the boys to watch over kedi in a distance cause when shes not at work shes at home

Jay: shes your weakness bafo you never had one before except for ma and princess who are protected by baba now you do so we need to tighten the security around her

Jase: yeah we need to be extra careful now

kedi called jase

Jase: im outside my heart

Kedi: ok

***she walked out and the twins stood there frozen and mesmerized by how beautiful kedi was they were surprised to see kedi looking so different she looked like a super model ***

Kedi: guys are you ok

them: ummm...yea...yeah

Kedi: ok we can go now im hungry

jase walked to her and kissed her forehead and rubbed her belly

Jase: you look breathtakingly beautiful my heart

Kedi: thanks

Jay: yeah you look beautiful this fool is one lucky son of a gun and he better cherish you

Kedi: thanks jay

Jase: voetsek i cherish her hao

Jay:mxm lets go and eat im starving

Jase: no no no bafo you just ate

Jay: leave me alone jase...kotiza lets go eat

***kedi wanted to caution him about the kotiza part but she decided against it since jay is as crazy as they come....they went to another restaurant and ordered food and ate talking about useless shit but only the twins were talking kedi was still distracted by nathi's behaviour and that lady that was doing her manicure 's warnings made her feel uneasy cause she was serious and plus she doesn't know much about nathi what if he's bipolar or he has that multiple personality disorder cause he was acting strange he wasn't the usual nathi she spoke to on the phone....jase looked at kedi he could see she was far away with thoughts she seemed distracted and bothered by something ***

Jase: my heart

***he held her hand and she came back from her thoughts ***

Kedi: huh

Jase: whats wrong

there's one thing kedi cant do to jase being lying to him he can see right through her shes that transparent to him

Kedi: ummm nothing

jase: try again

he said with a straight hard face

Kedi: really jase its noth...

he interrupted her

Jase:kedi

***he said with a commanding voice she took a deep breath ***

Kedi: nathi was at the salon earlier on

Them: WHAT?

jase: what did he want

Kedi: to talk

jay: talk about what

kedi: i don't know but he was acting strange i think hes stalking me i mean how did he know which salon to find me

jase was fuming inside and jay was pissed

Jay: what did he say

kedi: that...that we should meet up later on

Jase: did he touch you

kedi kept quiet

Jase: DID HE TOUCH YOU

Kedi: he kissed my forehead

***jase stood up quickly as if the chair he was sitting on just became hot instantly he pushed it

back roughly and walked away kedi tried to stand up and go after him but jay stopped her***

Jay: sit... hes going outside to calm himself down

kedi sat down and looked down she didn't understand what just happened especially with nathi she sat there in silence while jay was busy roughly typing something on his phone after a while jase came back his face was scary he was beyond angry the fact that nathi touched kedi moreover he kissed her forehead made him angry you know what they say about men that they cant handle another man pleasing or touching their woman anyway he took out a couple of hundreds and called the waitress and told her to keep the change she thanked him and he extended his hand to kedi and helped her stand up and took her hand bag and they left

Jay: beautiful people i have places to be so il see you later at home il bring take aways

jase: ok bafo

***they fist bumped and jay left ***

Jase: so where to my heart

Kedi: Louis vuitton boutique

Jase: ooh i didn't know you are a fan

kedi: i wanna buy princess a birthday present

Jase: ohk lets go

***they searched for it and found it then kedi bought her a Louis vuitton twist MM back pack and a pair of Louis vuitton millennium wedge sneakers and a pair of carimbo sandals she asked for them to be wrapped up since they are birthday presents after they were done they went to another boutique and kedi bought a couple of dresses,skirts and shirts and sandals and heels after she was satisfied they went to Woolworths and she bought new toiletries for

her and jase and new pyjamas and sleepers after that they went to a man's clothing boutique and she bought jase two pairs of sneakers and a pair of semi-formal shoes that she liked jase was just smiling when she bought them it was the first time a woman bought him anything even though the money was his but the fact that she didn't even ask if he would like to buy something she just picked what she like for him and just bought them without his permission he was impressed and falling deeper in love with her***

Kedi: im done i don't know about you

Jase: im also done im tired my heart lets go home

Kedi: what about you attire for Saturday

jase: my heart im a man i dont need new clothes for a 13 year old's party only women do that

Kedi: mxm lets go buy pizza

Jase: my love you just ate

kedi gave him a death stare

Jase: ummmm but...but my cub is probably hungry ummm lets go buy it

they bought the pizza and drove back home on their way kedi decided to ask jase the question that shes been asking herself lately

Kedi: jase why do you and nathi hate each other

Jase: his brother kidnapped my mother when we were teenagers and after my dad found her he was ready to kill him but his father hid him few days later it was said he was found in the bush dead they said it looked like a wild animal killed him but nathi blame my family saying we killed him as if we went to the wild and caught a lion and ordered it to find his brother and kill him nx

Kedi: ohh my God

jase: kedi you are my weakness I've never had one before but now i do remember you are carrying my child nathi might hurt our baby and you just to hurt me so please kedi for the sake of our cub stay away from nathi

Kedi: yeah il stay away from him plus he creeped me up today

Jase: good

*** he held her hand and kissed it repeatedly finally they arrived home and parked the car and got out and took what they bought inside kedi went upstairs then his phone rang ***

Jase:jay

Jay: where are you

Jase: my house

Jay: tighten the security in that house im on my way snakes just called me apparently nathi contacted dagger the sniper and hes in the country im trying to find out why but just tighten

the security and keep kedi safe im on my way

Jase: i think its high time i took out my big guns
im fucken tired of this fucken boy the war just
stared between our families i hope they will
stand the heat... let me call baba

Jay: shap

***he dropped the call and called his A-team
"the elite squad "then called his grand father***

.

[08/06, 07:55] Nor: INSERT.....42

.

.

.

*** JASE'S POV***

***as i was about to dial baba's numbers jay

walked in***

Jay: are they on their way

Me: yeah

then jays phone rang

Jay: yah

**he listened then looked at me then put his phone on loud speaker **

Jay: dagger what can we do for you

Dagger: im not taking the job hes paying \$200 000 for whoever is willing to take both of you out especially you kray it looks like he doesn't know who you really are so since i value my life i declined the offer

Me: \$200 000 is a lot of money im sure it can secure Emily's future

Dagger: how...how do you know about her

Jay: we know alot of things dagger including the school she attends even her boyfriend's

name

Dagger: ummm look i declined the job offer so please leave my daughter alone

Me: you have until tomorrow morning to leave south Africa or you become our enemy instantly and you know what we do to our enemies

Dagger: ok il catch an 8h00 flight

Jay: good i hope we never talk under this kind of circumstances ever again

Dagger: yeah

he dropped the call and jase called his squad and put his phone on loud speaker

Voice: boss

Me: scarface change of plans dont come to my house anymore send your boys instead i have an important mission for you

Scar: ok im listening boss

Me: dagger is in the country il ask someone to

send you the coordinates of where he is tail him and make sure he doesn't meet up with any of our enemies if he does take him down he has until tomorrow morning at 8 to leave the country if he does get on that plane call your contacts in USA to confirm he landed if he doesn't board the flight take him down also and bring me his head as confirmation

Scar: got it boss

Me: no loose ends or mistakes you were trained for this do it with perfection and remember dagger is dangerous if he spots that hes being tailed he'll kill you without thinking twice...now show me what you are made off

Scar: roger that boss

then i cut the call and called snakes and told him to send me information concerning dagger's whereabouts then i send those coordinates to scar

Jay: let me go take a shower wena go and

wake kedi up to come and eat

Me: you know im smitten at how much you care about her

Jay: shes like my younger sister im supposed to protect and care for and plus shes the chosen one for you ooh and she changed you from being a fuck boy to being a man

Me: msunu who are you calling a fuck boy nx

Jay: nawe msunu

Me: uzonya jay

***he laughed running upstairs mxm this fool i also went upstairs and found my heart sleeping i climbed the bed and got between her legs and kissed her lips and the tip of her nose then i went to her neck and blew on it she moaned softly fuck that stiffened my dick the reason im here is to wake her up to come down and eat and now im on top of her ready to make her scream out my name while she reaches her

climax but what if she stops me i mean what if she's not ready eish anyway my thoughts dont stop me from pulling up her pyjama top it looks like she just showered and i started sucking on her breasts shit she moaned out loud***

Kedi: ja...se ahhh yessss

*** she said that opening her eyes and biting her lower lip fuck i swear to God if she tells me she's not ready for us to make love il fucken cry....my dick is already hard and im sure vains are popping out i can feel its about to bust and its painful shit...i pull down her pyjama pants and shes not wearing any underwear eish yha neh i opened her legs wider and her pussy is dripping wet she is ready for mntungwa i went down on her and started eating her pussy hard while she's busy jerking up and down screaming my name i went on and on until she started shaking and crying out my name she released her juices and i liked her clean and i got off the bed and took off my clothes and

muntungwa was standing pointing north firm and hard as hell and dripping wet ready for her...i pulled her by her leg to the edge of the bed and made her sit up and picked her up and walked to the dresser table and made her sit on it while i was still between her legs i pulled her closer to me and rubbed my dick on her wet pussy and tried to enter her but she was just too tight i pushed in hard and i felt her pussy walls expand eish i stayed in that position i was scared to move the way her pussy was hot and tight i would just move once and release all my juices in her she moaned loud while i groaned louder than her fuck i missed her i missed being inside of her mntungwa missed his home... i kissed her and she kissed me back then i started to move with a fast pace i wanted her to climax fast cause im afraid i dont think il last longer than usual. .i started going in and out of her fast, hard and deeper our moans and groans filled the room God it felt like

heaven i hit each and every corner in her tight pussy while she was screaming my name out loud until i felt my build up... right then i felt her body tense up and her nails dug deeper in my back and she started shaking i wasn't far behind i hit it hard and fast until i felt a range of wild orgasms take over my whole body and i slammed into her hard and released my juices in her and shook uncontrollably then i let out a long deep growl fuck i swear that was the beast eish i can see it startled her a bit shit...we were both breathing heavily and sweating i raised my head and looked deep in her eyes and right then i saw my future i kissed her and she kissed me back and i broke it and pulled out and went to the bathroom and came back with a warm towel and wiped her then picked her up and we went to shower and had two more rounds in there after we were done we dried ourselves and lotioned and got dressed as she was about to leave the room i scooped her up and put her

on top of the bed and also climbed and layed next to her and pulled her towards me and held her tight***

Me: are you ok

Kedi: yeah im a bit sore down there but il live
i chuckled a bit

Me: thats what happens when you starve me for two weeks

***she giggled ***

Me:are we ok now my heart

she kept quiet a bit

Kedi: yeah one step at a time but jase the truth is i dont feel attractive towards you anymore

Me: WHAT

i pushed off me gently and raised my head so that i can look at her

Kedi: you always dated curvy girls so i thought they were your preference but when you told

me you loved me i thought maybe i was wrong but now you went for a curvy girl again when you cheated...yes i know you love me but i dont think i have all the qualities you want in a woman i dont have curves and a big ass which is your preference in a woman

i interrupted her

Me: stop ok please stop i wont let you do that to yourself kedi please you are what i want and need in a woman and more

Kedi: jase please lets be honest to each other here you are into curvy girls and im not curvy

Me: im not having this conversation with you ok its not happening and i wont let you loose your self-confidence because i was weak and i cheated its all on me not you

she kept quiet

Me: look at me

*** she shook her head***

Me: my heart please

Kedi: im starving lets go and eat

Me: kedi

Kedi: jase im telling you this because i can see you think im playing hard to get or just being difficult even if you try to touch me the thing is i dont feel attractive to you anymore i dont feel beautiful to you anymore when you slept with that girl i lost a bit of my self confidence along with a bit of my self esteem its how i feel jase its how i have been feeling since i saw that video...ive always had confidence issues due to how i grew up but when we started dating you made me feel good about myself...you made me love myself and now im back to square one

***she said all this while sobbing eish what have i done...how do i fix this i just kept quiet cause i didn't know what to say i was just lost for words ***

Ked: soon im gonna be huge with a big bump,

swollen feet and a big nose and i know il feel worse than how im feeling now

Me: i love you my heart only you and im gonna live to regret what i did

Kedi: its ok jase can we stop talking about this now can we go eat im hungry

Me: ok but there's something you should know

Kedi: what

Me: there are security details in the yard

Kedi: why

Me: to keep you safe like i told you nathi will hurt you and my cub to get to me so im not taking any chances

Kedi: ohhk

Me: just like that

Kedi: you are trying to protect your unborn child jase so me being all stubborn might put our unborn baby in danger and i can't loose this

baby jase ive already lost one

***i kissed her lips ***

Me: i love you

Kedi: i know jase

Me: then say it back

***she looked at me with her cute sparkling eyes and i just melted ***

Kedi: i love you too

Me: say it again

Kedi: eish jase can we just go and eat

i chuckled then i told her to go il be right behind her then i went to the safe and took out my favourite gun then i followed her downstairs to the lounge and i found jay watching a soccer match and he looked at me and shook his head while smiling i knew he heard our moans and groans mxm

Kedi: il go and dish up for us

Me: no my heart relax il go

Kedi: ok

she sat down and i went to the kitchen and jay followed

Jay: im surprised the poor girl can still walk

Me: tsek

***he chuckled i kept on thinking about that conversation we just had upstairs it was bothering me i never meant for her to feel like that but now i dont know what to do to make her see what i see when i look at her eish suddenly i started having a bad feeling ***

jay: you ok man

me: did you also feel that

jay: yeah

Me: eish anyway any word on nathi

Jay: not yet but I've just been informed that susan the step monster is dead

Me: good riddance to bad rubbish and what about Harold

Jay: hes someone's bitch in prison

me: good

***right then my phone rang it was one of my guys outside i answered and put it on loud speaker ***

Me: Morris

Morris: boss a guy by the name of carl is here asking to see you he says its important

Me: put him on the phone

and he did

Carl:kray its about nathi please i need to speak to you

Me: give the phone back to my boy

Morris: boss

me: do a thorough check on him and bring him through the secret door that lead to the study

and send an alert to the snipers to be on alert
and to scan every vehicle that enters the
neighbourhood

Morris: rodger that

***then i dropped the call and jay went to the
study and i dished up for kedi and took the
food to her and something to drink***

Me: my heart lets go upstairs you'll have your
food there

kedi: why...whats going on

me: il explain later please understand ***she
took a deep breath and stood up and we went
upstairs to the main bedroom ***

Me: my heart dont leave the bedroom until i
come back ok

kedi: jase whats going on

***i went to her and kissed her lips ***

Me: i need to take care of something its nothing

major il explain later ok please promise you wont leave this room until i come back il be 20 minutes tops

Kedi: i promise

i kissed her again and walked out and closed the door on my way out i wanted to lock it but that will just freak her out i went to the study and found jay, Morris and this fool carl

Me: we can start

Jay: that means talk

Carl: nathi has send a bounty for the both of you

Me: tell us something we dont know

carl: he approached me

Jay: and let me guess you declined

carl: yeah i value my life

me: then what the fuck are you doing here

carl: i...i thought i should come and tell you myself

***i looked at jay and he looked back at me alot
was spoken with our looks without anything
actually being said i pulled out my gun from my
back and pointed it at carl and Morris did too

Me: now tell me the real reason you are here

carl: kray please man i just told you the truth

Me: i shot him on the leg and he fell to the
ground

Jay: STAND UP BITCH

Me: I HATE REPEATING MY SELF CARL YOU
KNOW THAT NOW ANSWER MY FUCKEN
QUESTION

he was crying and in pain

Carl: he threatened my family man he said i
should find him a way to enter your house
without being noticed

Jay: i see so you are more scared of him than
you are of us neh

Carl : no please forgive me im sorry

me: forgiveness is between you and God my job now is for me to arrange the meeting

***then i pulled the trigger and shot him on the head ***

Me: clean this up

***i said looking at Morris jay went to the cupboard and came back with a two pairs of gloves and a body bag and him and Morris wore the gloves and put the body in the body bag ***

Jay: tell one of your boys to deliver this body at nathi's crib

Morris : ok boss

he pulled the bag outside through the secret door and came back and cleaned the blood and went outside again and i locked the secret door " it can only be opened from the inside "then jay took out his phone and dialled then he put it on speaker

Voice : nkosenye

Jay: baba we have a problem

Baba: talk

Jay: nathi took out a bounty on us

Baba: yes i know you know i want solutions not only problems

Jay: we are taking him out the peace treat is off

Baba: i dont care what you do to that useless bastard what i care about is you protecting my daughter in law and my great grandchild understand

Jay: understood

Baba: nkosi

Me: baba

Baba: i hope il finally meet my daughter inlaw tomorrow

me: yebo baba

Baba: good....oh there's another thing kani is dead and my guess is his stupid son killed him he called me last week saying hes not in support of his son's behaviour

Jay: this boy is more fucked up than i thought

Baba: see you tomorrow boys

***he cut the call then my phone rang it was snakes and i put him on loud speaker ***

me: mamba

snakes: kray be prepared you gonna have uninvited guests in a few minutes

Jay: don't worry we are covered

Snakes : good il keep tabs on nathi you deal with those wannabes

Me: sho

***then we cut the call and i ran upstairs to the bedroom and kedi was sleeping i scooped her up and went downstairs with her to the

basement there's a secret room there i put on the security combination and i entered with her and layed her on the bed***

Kedi: jase

***she said with her eyes still closed and with a sleepy voice ***

Me: yes its me baby go back to sleep

Kedi: ok

Me: i love you

Kedi: i love you too

i kissed her forehead and took a pen and paper and wrote that she shouldn't panic when she wakes up shes safe were she is then i put it next to her on top of another pillow then i left the room as soon as i left the basement i started hearing gun shots being fired but they weren't inside the yard but outside and not far i met up with Jay when i was about to go to the door

Jay: is she safe

me: yeah

jay: lets go have some fun its been long

me: yeah its been long

***then my phone rang it was snakes i answered and put it on speaker ***

Me: snakes

Snakes: I THINK ITS A FUCKEN DIVERSION

Jay: where is he

Snakes: his phone is still in his house but i doubt he is i send the boys to go check if hes still in there but i hacked into the airline system and delayed all flights including private jets so be on a look out im on my way now

***then he cut the call ***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 07:55] Nor: INSERT.....43

.

.

.

KEDI'S POV

i woke up to someone holding me tight from behind i caught his scent it was jase so i knew i was safe he was holding me in a protective manner i tried to get out of bed but he tightened the grip

Me: jase let go i need to pee

***he chuckled then he let go and i went to pee

then rinsed my mouth and went back to bed
and jase held me tight again ***

Me: what time is it

Jase: 6 in the morning

Me: is it safe to leave this room

Jase: yeah

Me: ok

i snuggle out his hands and got out of bed

Jase : and now

Me: lets go im hungry

Jase: my heart come on lets sleep for a bit

Me: jase lets go your baby is hungry

Jase: eish fine ke

*** he got out of bed and we left the room it
looked like we were in the basement we walked
up the stairs and went to the kitchen and i made
us some breakfast and we went to the lounge

and ate***

Me: where's jay

Jase: upstairs sleeping and snakes too

Me: snakes?

Jase: my other brother from another mother

Me: what kind of a name is snakes

*** jase chuckled***

voice: the kind that makes people tremble

***i looked behind us and there stood a tall,
dark, muscular handsome man***

Me: well not me

jase chuckled

Snakes: well it should cause i can make you
disappear just like that from the face of the
earth by just using my phone

Jase: bafo dont scare my woman

Me: baby dont worry im not scared of him he

looks like a mama's boy or a cheeseboy

***jase laughed ***

Snakes: cheeseboy or mama's boy neh

Me: yep

he went to sit in a one sitter couch and looked at me with a hard face and i swear i got scared ok yes hes handsome and all but there's something dark about him so i grabbed jases shirt tight

Jase: ai voetsek man snakes

he laughed and stood up and winked at me smiling

Snakes: not scared neh

he said that walking out mxm

Jase: i thought you said he looks like a mama's boy or cheese boy

Me: i said that cause you are next to me so i knew he wont hurt me he looks scary jase

i whispered to him and jase laughed out loud mxm this guy mara

Jay: morning...morning good people

me: hi

Jase: foza

Jay: where is snakes

Jase: kitchen

Jay: i knew it that fool loves food

Jase: as if you're better than him mxm

jay: yes im better than him cause i only eat when im hungry and yena he eats even when hes not hungry and nawe jase dont pretend to be a saint infront of kotiza you're also a food lover

Me: no hes not

Jay: trust me he is

***ai i left them there arguing and dissing each other mxm this guys mara so i went upstairs to

our bedroom and took a shower as i was busy jase walked in naked with his dick pointing north hard as hell jeez he walked to me and brushed my belly gently then suddenly his hand went to my clit and he brushed it gently while he was sucking my neck then i felt his finger going in gosh i felt chills in my spine he fingered me then he picked up his pace gosh he went on and on until i felt my body tense up and i released my juices while my body trembled he stopped sucking on my neck and pulled out his finger and licked it clean then he pushed me to the wall but i pushed him back and i went down on him and he cursed***

Jase: FUCK!

*** i licked him from his balls to the tip of his dick and his grip on my weave got tight while he cursed and groaned then i put all of him in my mouth and his grip tightened hard on my weave and he growled loud so i started sucking him hard and fast and he kept on groaning and

cursing i went on and on while my hands were holding his tight butt hard digging my artificial nails in his skin i sucked him hard and fast until i felt his body tense up i knew the way he was groaning he wasn't gonna last longer than usual ***

Jase: ahhhkedisto.. .shitbab...im cummmmin ...fuckmove..mov...ahh

***gosh i felt like boss, i felt in control, i felt powerful at this time i felt like i owned him like he was at my mercy and it felt so damn good to be unpredictable for once so i didn't stop instead i increased my pace and i felt him pushing his dick in my mouth hard and holding my head still so i dont move then he released all his juices in my mouth and he let out a scary growl and his whole body shook then i swallowed... yep i didat first i felt like throwing up but i fought the urge to do so by breathing in an out after that i looked up at him and he was looking down on me with his eyes

wide opened and his jaw hanging open then i licked him clean then he quickly pulled me up and smashed his lips on mine French kissing me with our tongues twiddling together while he was tasting his own juices then he pulled my leg up and smashed into me hard and i cried out loud and gave it to me hard, fast and deeper after a while we both came and showered with him smiling like a retard mxm after we were done we lotioned and got dressed then he went downstairs with our bags while i was busy fixing my weave and applying a bit of make up after i was done i took my hand bag and went downstairs only to find jase looking all cosy with some girl i cleared my throat and jase turned fast and pushed the girl's hand that was on his shoulder off and he stood up looking all scared i left them there and i went outside with tears gushing out***

Jase: its not what you think my heart shes my PA and she brought a file

***he said after he ran after me outside ***

Me: you enjoy seeing me hurt neh keng (what) it makes you happy jase how can you disrespect me like this

jase: my heart

Me:SHUT UP! you are not worth it

***i wiped my tears ***

Me: im done crying because of you if its your plan to have me miscarry this baby well tough it wont happen

Jase: she my PA kedi i swear nothing is going on between us i swear on my mother's grave

Me: dont involved your late mother into your sick lies let her rest in peace i see you think im stupid jase nx

Jase: kedi

me: no i dont wanna hear it and you better keep quiet before you make things worse than they

already are

then that bitch came out

PA: ummm sir do we stil continue with this

Jase: no leave palesa

PA: but sir its import...

he interrupted her

Jase: FUCK OFF WOMAN ARE YOU DEAF
LEAVE AND NEVER COME TO MY HOUSE
UNANNOUNCED NOW VOETSEK

***she walked away crying then jase turned and looked at me but i looked away then he went inside and came out then locked the house and we went to the car and drove out we were both silent in the car until we reached OR TAMBO airport and we got out of the car and took our bags and we went to the private jet and found the guys waiting for us and i was introduced to muzi's fiance who had an attitude for days and it looked like she didn't like me at all mxm

anyway after a while we buckled up and the jet took off i was a bit scared at first since it was my first time ever boarding a plane let alone a jet but i eventually settled in as for jase he tried to talk and explain but i was just not interested after an hour and 15 or 20 minutes we landed and we found cars waiting for us we got in and drove off jase kept on staring at me but i just ignored him and looked out of the window all the way until we arrived at this huge mansion khante how rich are this people mara anyway we got out of the cars and walked in as for me i was nervous i dont even know why but i was even my palms were sweating we got inside and this beautiful teenage girl with long silky black hair with greenish eyes came screaming and running" they are here...gogo they are here" then she hugged everyone and stood in front of me looking at me and jase whispered something in her ear and she smiled then she hugged me and i hugged her back gosh she

was beautiful yho anyway she went to snakes***

Princess: bhuti did you bring it

Snakes: yeah lets go get it its in the car

Princess: yhaaaaay

then they left and jase held my hand and pulled to another direction then we arrived at this beautiful kitchen and an older woman was busy stirring a pot with two other ladies busy chopping vegetables they looked like house helpers because of their uniform

Jase: ma wami omuhle (my beautiful mother)

she turned and smiled then opened her arms at him and they hugged tight then he pecked her lips mxm mama's boy i thought to myself then she looked at me with a huge smile on her face shem she was beautiful yho then she walked to me

Ma: this must be my daughter in law

Jase: yes she is ma

***then she gave me the warmest hug ever
after a while we pulled apart***

Ma: shes a real gem nkosi

jase chuckled

Jase: yes she is

Ma: beauty personified. how are you my
baby

Me: im ok mama and you

Ma: alive and still kicking my baby every day is a
blessing..im glad you came and hows the little
one

Me: good hes growing

Ma: Im glad.....welcome to the family my baby
this is your home now ok

Me: thank you ma

she turned and looked at jase

Ma: they are waiting for you

Jase: ok we will be right back

***he held my hand and we went to some passage then we turned left and there was a door jase knocked and opened the door and picked in ***

Jase: can we come in

a deep scary voice said yes then he pulled me in and there were two men sitting down i could tell the other one was jases grandfather cause he had gray beard with a bald head and the other one was jases father he looked so much like jase and jay he was like the older version of them then jases grandfather stood up looking at me as if he's seen a ghost

Jase: babapops

Them: son

Pops: and who's this beautiful young lady

Jase: your daughter in law pops so behave

Pops: shes too young for me so relax

*** they both laughed and he went to give his dad a bro hug and shook his grandfather's hand ***

Jase: baba this is kedi shes the chosen one for me i love her and would like to marry her and build a home and future with

Pops: dont tell me this is you proposing to her you cant take after dad you remember how he told us he proposed to ma so boy dont tell me you're also hopeless and ancient when it comes to romance

***they laughed ***

Jase: nope i took after you i already did the candle lit dinner and she said yes

***jase o tletse ka masepa straight (hes full of shit)how can he tell his family that i mean the last time i checked the engagement was off nx i kept looking down i was pissed that hes lying to

his family and his grandfather is starting to creep me out the way hes staring at me its making me uncomfortable ***

Pops : good

Baba: what is your surname young lady

Me: ma... malapane

Baba: where are your parents

Me: they passed away when i was 12

he took a deep breath while closing his eyes and looking down then he opened them again and stood up and walked to the window with his hands in his pockets then the room was filled with an intense silence

Pops: baba

*** he kept quiet***

Baba: who raised you since your parents are late

***i kept quiet cause everything was just

awkward now but the main reason was that i was getting a bit emotional talking about my parents and how i grew up is a sensitive topic i had a lump in my throat i tried to swallow it but it was impossible thankfully jase answered for me***

Jase: no one

Baba: what do yo mean no one

Jase: she raised herself

Baba: where was her relatives

Jase: they abandoned her after her parents died so she lived with her step mother and step siblings

Baba: mmmh i see

***he turned and looked at us and took a deep breath ***

Baba : welcome to the family makoti this is your home now o

***my heart was beating fast... ok this oldman is scary even his aura around him is dark and scary ***

Me: thank you baba

*** jase's dad opened his arms for a hug and i looked at jase and he nodded with a smile i went to him and he hugged me briefly ***

Pops: welcome to the family my daughter

Me: thank you

Baba: nkosi take her upstairs she needs to rest im sure my great grand child needs to rest too

Jase: ok baba

Baba: and come back here immediately we need to discuss something important

Jase: ok baba

*** we walked out and went upstairs to a beautiful bedroom and our bags were already there as soon as jase closed the door i breathed

out and he laughed***

Me: your grandfather is scary

Jase: i know my heart

Me: even your dad is scary too but atleast yena he tried to make me comfortable by smiling and making jokes

Jase: come here

i went to him and he held me tight

Jase: i love you and im sorry about my PA im gonna release her of her duties when we go back home and you'll search for a suitable candidate as her replacement

i kept quiet i was still a bit upset i mean why does it have to be a struggle with him to do the right thing why cant he just proves me wrong nje just once... since we met we always have to fight or argue first for him to notice what hes doing is wrong mxm and it frustrates the shit out of me

JASES POV

***thinking about nathi pisses me off i mean last night he send some useless amateurs to take us on some people are just useless nje the fact that he send those riff ruffs for us it means hes more useless and clueless of who we are than i thought my squad took them out like cockroaches they shot blindly they didn't even know where my snipers were they took them out one by one while they shot everywhere nx im just glad it was already at night and no civilians were close by mxm anyway after those shots snakes arrived and kept on searching for nathi but he couldn't track him but he kept on cross referencing his father's safe houses to see which one he could be hiding in ,the ones that we knew off he wasn't there so around four in the morning i decided to go lay down a bit

and my heart surprised me by giving me the best morning glory ever in the shower she really surprised me i sure am creating a sex goddess with her jeses the things she did to me nc nc nc anyway all of that was ruined when my PA showed up in my house unannounced she said she wanted me to sign some documents but they could have waited until i came back but since she was there i decided we go through them then she set next to me on the couch as we were going through them and then she put her hand on my shoulder and rested her chin on it i knew what she was trying to do but as i was about to caution her my heart cleared her throat behind us shit i swear i nearly pissed on my pants i wanted to explain to her but she would hear none of it she was angry than hurt and i didn't blame her i mean if it was me finding her in that position someone would be dead by now even during the flight to kzn it was hell for me she didn't utter a single word to me

even when i apologised profoundly it was like i was speaking to myself even now as im holding her in my arms i can feel she only allowed me to hug her cause shes still shaken by meeting my dad and grandfather eish i know i keep fucking up but its not on purpose***

me: come and rest my heart

i said that pulling her to the bed then i covered her with a throw blanket and she closed her eyes she looked tired and i kissed her forehead" God i love this woman "i said to myself while im looking at her...after that i went back to the study and i got in

Baba: ITS THAT WITCH THAT KILLED THEM RIGHT

Me: ummm baba

Baba: ITS THAT BITCH SUSAN RIGHT I WARNED HIM... I WARNED HIM NOT TO LET THOSE USELESS OLD MEN WHO DIDN'T KNOW WHAT TO DO WITH THEIR USELESS LIVES TO

BOMBARD HIM INTO MARRYING THAT WITCH
SUSAN BUT HE DIDN'T LISTEN TO ME LOOK
NOW

***ok khante whats happening now im lost how
does baba know kedi's step mother and
father***

Me: baba how did you...

***eish this damn phone interrupted me it was
snakes***

Me: mamba

Snakes: i found the son of a bitch

Me: which one

Snakes: nathi and ive already sent the boys to
go take him alive prepare the beast

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 07:55] Nor: INSERT.....44

.

.

.

JASE'S POV

after talking to snakes i dropped the call feeling excited about what i will do to nathi

Me: nhlakanipho(snakes) found nathi

Pops: good now deal with him once and for all

Me: yeah....ummmm baba how do you know kedi' s parents

Baba: you remember i used to tell you about bra shakes

Me: yeah your late good friend the one that

used to run the pipeline in gauteng that we are running now

Baba: yes hes her father

Me: WHAT?

baba: yes... im sure you know about the first wife and second wife situation

Me: yeah ... ummm but bra shakes worked for the mafia

Baba: he did until kedi's mother suffered a miscarriage the doctors found rat poison in her system he suspected susan since she hated kedi's mother she didn't even hide itshakes mistake was leaving kedi's mother with his family when he came back to gauteng to work thats when she was poisoned and suffered a miscarriage

Me: so bra shakes is kedi's father wow

i couldnt believe it

Baba: after the miscarriage shakes decided to

leave the mafia to go be with his wife and to protect her from that witch susan he always knew Susan was evil but he gave her the benefit of doubt thinking she wont do anything stupid until the miscarriage happened with kedi's mother of course

Pops: bra shakes was soft he always believed in giving people a second chance thats why him and baba were close friends and had an unbreakable bond cause he made baba a bit human if you know what i mean

i chuckled then baba just shook his head

baba: Tyrell you're not old enough for me to fuck you up

***Pops just laughed ***

Baba: as i was saying before your father started vomiting shit out of his mouth

he said that looking at dad but dad was not shaken he just laughed shaking his head

Pops: baba you know you wont do anything to me dont forget my mother is somewhere in the house just one scratch on me and you'll sleep on the couch for a whole year

baba grabbed a stapler that was on the table and threw it at dad but he ducked and rushed out laughing

Baba: your father is just stupid sometimes

he said that smiling and i smiled shaking my head then his face became hard again

Baba: kedi's mother fell pregnant again thats when i helped him fake his own death cause you know you dont just decide to leave the mafia you know the only way out is....

Me: death

baba: yes death everything went according to plan and i kept in touch with him one day he called me telling me that his wife gave birth to a beautiful baby girl i named her thandeka and

they named her kedibone cause he said after she was born she cried then all of a sudden she stopped breathing for almost a minute just as they were about to pronounce her dead she woke up and started crying again shes a miracle baby

me: wow

thats all i could say i was lost for words

Baba: we continued to keep in touch until i found out the bosses suspected that he was still alive so we agreed to stop keeping in touch until further notice until years later i got a call from him telling me he suspects that susan and his brother are plotting to kill him and his wife and child and that hes leaving the country to Mozambique or Botswana so i send him a million rands to start afresh and he promised to keep in touch once they've settled in but i never heard from him again things got hectic as i was about to take after my father as the leader i was

always traveling so when i saw your kedi i knew whose daughter she was shes beautiful just like her mother when she walked in it was like i was looking at her and a bit of my friend..... shes a carbon copy of her mother and she has a bit of her father as well....

***i took a deep breath ***

Me: she grew up hard baba susan's son raped her since her parents died until a couple of months ago when she decided to run away

Baba: WHAT!

Me: yebo baba as for susan she knew what was done to her but she turned a blind eye and said his son should continue cause kedi deserves it

baba was breathing heavily looking angry and ready to kill someone

Baba: tell me you send them both to hell

Me: i did except for Harold hes in a mini hell

Baba: where

Me: c- max prison

Baba: from now on leave him to me i want to teach him a lesson he wont forget even in death

me: ok baba

Baba: take care of her nkosi and never hurt her or you'll have me to contain with

Me: i wont baba

baba: good you can go

Me: ok

i stood up and left i went upstairs and found my queen busy on the mirror i went to her and held her from the back and kissed her neck...GOD i know i never thank you when something good happens in my life so now GOD im thanking you sincerely for bringing kedi into my life and for making her carry my cub...i said that to myself

Me: i love you

kedi: i love you too

Me: good now lets go downstairs so i can feed the two of you

*** we went downstairs to the lounge and everyone was there she sat down while i went to the kitchen to get us something to eat i got there and the helper said our food is in the microwave i took the plates to the lounge and we ate after we were done i took the plates back to the kitchen and came back and sat next to my queen***

Snakes: jase, jay and muzi can i see you in my room

we stood up and i kissed kedi on the forehead and we went upstairs to find snakes pacing up and down

Jay: bafo whats wrong

Snakes: the safe place nathi was in blew up

Us: what

Me: tell me he burned into ashes

Snakes: no he didn't the guys didn't find even one burned body

Muzi: this son of a bitch is getting on my last nerve

Snakes: his trail went cold

Me: this is not happening

Snakes: il keep looking for him but we need to up our security and jase you need to put a microchip tracker on kedi you need to inject one into her skin... its called a radio frequency identification its a transponder that is encased in silicate glass at the size of a grain of rice....muzi im sure it wont be harmful to her pregnancy right

Muzi: no it wont

Me: fine il find a way to do that tonight without her knowledge

Jay: i think nathi is working with someone who knows how we work

Snakes: yeah i think he knew the guys were coming

Me: who do you think it is

Snakes: dont worry il find out

Muzi: khante what is this bastard's real agenda with us vele vele

Me: our family and kedi

Muzi: then he just dug his own grave

Me: so where's the microchip

***muzi went out of the bedroom and came back with a hypodermic needle that had the microchip inside ***

Muzi: inject her on her hand or wrist

Me: ok bafo

Muzi: but you'll need to sedate her first unless you'll be able to explain to her why you want to

inject her

Me: nope il sedate her

*** i took the needle and we continued discussing some more and i left the room and went downstairs only to find nosipho a girl i used to date in varsity in the loungeyou see what i mean when i say trouble always follows me but this time i think natasha brought it here cause they are friends nx i went to kedi and sat next to her she was busy on her phone***

Me: you good

Kedi: yeah your ex is here

Me: and i didn't invite her im sure natasha did shes just a bitter bitch

Jay: and what the fuck are you doing here nosipho

Natasha: i invited her

Jay: is this you father's house where you just invite ratchet whores

Nosipho: who are you calling a ratchet whore

Jay: VOETSEK! And you jase you're sitting there letting this bitch to even sit her stinky ass on our couch

Me: bafo calm down why are you waisting your energy on useless people nx I've rather go make love to my woman than to entertain stupid hoes

i stood up and made kedi stand up too and i pulled her away from all this commotion we went outside at the back towards the pool the sun was already setting i pulled her to the pool house and i sat down and pulled her to sit on my lap

Me: its like every girl i ever slept with since i was a teenager is coming back to ruin my relationship with you all this years nosipho never showed her face and now shes here nx

she kept quiet

Me: i love you kedi only you

Kedi: you said im the only girl to be introduced to your family as your woman if so then why is she here

i held her tight

Me: she the first girl i introduced as a girl friend and you're the first woman ive ever introduced as someone i want to marry and have a future with

Kedi: so you lied to me jase

Me: im sorry my heart

Kedi: why didn't you tell your family that the engagement is off

Me: its not its just on hold

Kedi: its off jase i dont wanna marry you anymore i cant cause you keep on hurting me every chance you get

Me: you will marry me kedi just wait and see

*** she just kept quietwhat she just said hit home it really hurt me...i kept on holding her tight***

Me: nosipho and i dated in varsity one day she said shes pregnant i was scared cause i wasn't ready to be a father the following week i told her im taking her to my doctor to confirm if she is then the following day i received a call from her sister telling me that she had a miscarriage a night before instead of being happy that i was saved i became devastated we mourned our loss i even brought her here to introduce her to ma as my girlfriend cause the miscarriage brought us closer until one day apparently she had a fall out with her sister it was bad to a point that her sister told me that nosipho was never pregnant that she faked everything including the miscarriage to trap me cause i had money and i was born into wealth and to make me marry her

Kedi: what

Me: yeah i confronted her and she denied it at first but after i almost beat the shit out of her she confessed everything my heart i lost it i nearly killed her after mourning a baby that wasn't even there and introducing her to ma i was shattered and jay, muzi and snakes were there for me they saw what i went through thats why jay was that harsh to her just now wait until snakes see her

Kedi: then why did natasha invite her

Me: i dont know my heart and i dont care what i care about is you and how you feel about this whole thing

Kedi: im just tired jase all i want is to be happy its something i long for being happy im tired of getting hurt and crying all the time...you promised me happiness jase but all i've been getting is pain after pain

Me: im sorry my heart il do better il be better il even try harder

she kept quiet

Me: i just found out susan is dead

she kept quiet ok i didn't expect this

Kedi: ooh ok

Me: ooh ok ?

Kedi: i have nothing else to say shes a none factor in my life so her death means nothing

Me: kedi

Kedi: what jase

Me: how do you really feel about her death you know holding things inside is not good especially in your condition

she kept quiet after a while she spoke

Kedi: she broke me jase she broke my spirit she let her son rape me she knew what he was doing to me and she said i deserved it...she hated me and i didn't even know what i did to her and now she just dies without even

apologising for her evil ways towards me ...her son too died without even an apology or an explanation to what drove him to do such an evil deed towards me

she wiped her tears and i made her look at me and i kissed her then she kissed me back and i deepened the kiss it was passionate and full of emotions after a while we broke it and i stared into her eyes

Me: good riddance to bad rubbish is what i say about both of them im sure shes on her way to hell...now you my heart can move on from what they did to you cause karma surely dealt with them

***she smiled with tears in her beautiful eyes and i kissed the tip of her nose until we heard someone clear their throat ***

Nosipho: ummm jase can we talk in private please

Me: no say whatever you want to say in front of

her

Nosipho: please jase it will only take a minute

Me: ARE YOU DEAF WOMAN TALK HERE OR FOREVER HOLD YOUR PIECE

tears ran down her cheeks nx she wiped them kedi tried to get up but i held her tight

Nosipho: im...im sorry about what i did i was young and stupid i wasn't thinking straight im sorry please forgive me

Me: is that all

Nosipho: jase im sorry ok i still love you i never stopped i messed up i know and im sorry

Kedi: jase please let me go

Me: nosipho im gonna say this once i dont love you infact i despise you for what you did and you see this woman here is my fiancee and soon to be the mother of my "real" children so whatever that made you come here have better make you leave this instant jy verstaan (you

understand)

Nosipho: jase please dont do...

Me: FUCK OFF FROM HERE BEFORE I LOOSE
MY COOL WITH YOU BITCH

*** i roared she turned and walked away
sobbing nx***

Me: lets go inside its getting chilly out here

***she stood up without saying anything then
we went inside only to find ma shouting at
nosipho***

Ma: i asked you a question what are you doing
in my house

Natasha: ma shes my friend and i invited her

Ma: is this your house or your fathers house
natasha where you can invite everyone you like

Muzi: ma please come down you'll raise you
blood pressure

Ma: muzikayise warn your woman ok warn her

before i say something il probably never regret
cause shes getting on my last nerve manje(right
now)

Natasha: ma im sorry

Ma: hai thula (shut up) i know you probably
knew what she did to my son and you have the
rotten nerve to invite her here listen here
ntombazana (little girl) loyalty means everything
in this family cause if you're not loyal getting
married to my son will be the worst mistake
you've ever made in your life you hear me nx
she turned to look at nosipho

Ma: im sure you know where the door is now
VOETSEK

***yho ive never seen ma this angry all of us
were shocked beyond words she was spitting
venom***

Me: ma calm down please

Voice: who's making my wife this angry

*** babas deep voice said that eish im sure
each one of us here peed on themselves i saw
natasha tremble with fear and nosipho shrink
as for my queen here she was holding on to me
for dear life***

Jay: ummm

Baba: SOMEONE BETTER START TALKING

snakes: she...she

***he kept quiet ***

Me: ba..ba

Baba: mkami whats wrong

Ma: its this stupid girl that lied about being
pregnant with nkosi's child and her fake
miscarriage when they were in varsity what i
dont understand is why shes here in my house
nx some people can drive you to an early grave
im telling you

***she turned and looked at kedi then walked to
us and took kedi's hand***

Ma: lets go and feed you my baby

with that they walked to the kitchen then baba turned to look at nosipho

Baba: YOU'RE STILL HERE

***she quickly walked out and baba went to the kitchen im sure to make sure ma is ok....i know where ma is coming from after nosiphos "fake" miscarriage i blamed myself cause when she told me shes pregnant and that shes keeping it i told her im not ready to be a father and then i ignored her for a week after i came back to my senses i called her and told her im taking her for a check up so when i was told she miscarried i blamed myself i thought i cause it to happen by ignoring her and telling her i was not ready i started drinking too much to numb the guilt and pain i eventually forgave myself and committed to her so after i found out the truth i nearly killed myself i went to a club and drank until i couldn't anymore just as the bartender was calling jay to

come and take me home i snuck out and drove back home then i drove straight to a wall i was lucky to be alive ma nursed me back to health and i heard jay beat her up almost to death he was arrested but you know us the case file disappeared***

Snakes: why did you invite her natasha

Natasha: she called me asking for a favour that she needed to talk to jase cause she still loves him and wants to make things right

Me: before now when was the last time you spoke to her

Natasha: few....few months back

Muzi: YOU'RE FUCKEN STUPID NATASHA
FUCKEN STUPID NX

jay: AND LET ME GUESS YOU TOLD HER
ABOUT THE PARTY RIGHT

she nodded while sobbing nx

Muzi: YOU KNOW SOMETIMES I WONDER WHY

IM STILL MARRYING YOUR STUPID ASS

Natasha: im sorry baby but she means no harm
she just wants to work things out with jase

***she didn't see it coming cause muzi slapped
her so hard she fell on her butt on the floor
then muzi walked away jay went after him so
did me and snakes leaving her here nx***

NARRATED

***kedi and jase's grandmother got to the
kitchen and immediately baba entered and he
went to his wife and kissed her forehead ***

Baba: are you ok

Ma: im ok baba is just that girl made me soo
mad i wanted to rip her apart

Baba: dont stress yourself too much themba
lam over useless girls

Ma: ok baba dont worry im better now that im sitting here with my daughter inlaw

kedi was stunned at how baba was soft and calm with ma but hard and scary with everyone else

Baba: makoti are you also ok

Kedi: yebo baba i am

Baba: good now let me leave you ladies

he kissed her forehead again and left

Ma: ok now let me make you something to eat i know you just ate but let me tell you something this khumalo big heads eat like animals my baby and worst of it is they start eating like animals while they still in your womb im speaking from experience and if their mother was still alive now she would also agree with me

kedi:i also agree with you the way im always hungry mama it scares me sometimes

ma:dont worry you'll be fine wena just eat small portions regularly so that you dont turn like a balloon like i did when i was pregnant with the twins' father

they laughed and she made kedi a scrumptious sandwich and a cup of rooibos and she ate while ma drank her herbal tea

Ma: im sorry about that stupid girl

Kedi: its ok mama jase explained everything to me

Ma: im glad he did cause i dont want you stressing over stupid things like that good for nothing girl

then princess walked in smiling

Princess: ma look what daddy bought me

it was a new diamond necklace

Princess: he said i must never take it off no matter what that its a symbol of his unconditional love for me

Ma: its beautiful my love

Princess: sisi do you also like it

me: i love it its really beautiful

she smiled and rushed out

Ma: her father spoils her rotten

kedi just smiled and they continued to talk and laugh

***UPSTAIRS IN SNAKES BEDROOM

muzi was upset at Natasha's stupidity all the guys knew that she was more to nosiphos visit she just cant show up after so many years and especially at their family home jase and jay started having a bad feeling it was as if their beasts were warning them***

Muzi: i wonder why im still marrying her

Me: calm down bafo you'll deal with her stupidity later when its just the two of you now we need to find out more about nosipho

something doesn't sit well with me about her
jay: me too she cant just show up after so many
years and claim to want to fix things with kray
shes up to something im telling you

Snakes: i also think something is up but i just
can't put my finger on itmuzi go take her
phone numbers from Natasha i need to track
her

***muzi did that and they tracked her phone and
she was on her way to her home jase called his
boys that are this side and told them to tail her
after that they went downstairs and ate their
dinner and yes kedi ate again but a small
portion like ma adviced her she didn't want to
gain alot of weight after their dinner they went
to their designated bedrooms to
sleep.....after kedi and jase made love kedi
fell asleep immediately jase let her fall deep in
her sleep then he took the syringe inside the
drawer then he injected kedi on her neck she

flinched a bit then stopped he waited a bit then he took out the hypodermic needle from the drawer and injected kedi on her hand then he took both needles and went to throw them outside in the dustbin then he went inside and checked her pulse and it was normal then he held her tight from behind and he slept***

***MEANWHILE....after nosipho left she rushed to her car and drove off she knew she hurt jase by lying that shes pregnant but she didn't think his family including him still despised her like that she thought jase will forgive her and maybe they can become friends and later on maybe lovers again and maybe she'll change her mind of wanting revenge of when jay beat her up and landed her in a coma when she lied about her pregnancy and jase telling her she should have died instead cause shes a waste of breath that broke her heart so she vowed revenge since then and now nathi is about to give it to her on a silver platter she called nathi and he answered

Nosipho: nathi they kicked me out i dont think our plan will work jase wants nothing to do with me

Nathi:eish did you atleast find out where the party will be held

Nosipho: yeah that dumb bitch natasha told me nx shes so gullible and easily manipulated to a point that its sickening and she even believed that we are still friends nx

Nathi: good now lets see how they will stop me from getting whats supposed to be mine and my brother's revenge and you'll also get your own revenge

nosipho: and cant wait

then nathi ended the call

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 07:55] Nor: INSERT.....45

.

.

.

KEDI'S POV

i woke up with a heavy head i got out of bed and jase wasnt next to me i went to the bathroom and peed,brushed my teeth and took a long shower after i was done i dried myself and lotioned and wore a maxi summer dress and some sandals and got busy with my hair then jase walked in holding a tray

Jase: finally you are awake

Me: yeah eish jase i think i was bitten by something on my hand its sore and a bit swollen

he put the tray down and came to me and held my hand and brushed it where its a bit swollen and kissed it

Jase: askies my heart

Me: i wonder what bit me

Jase: dont worry about it im sure it will get better come and eat

***he pulled me towards the couch and i sat down and he came with the tray and the were two plates and we dug in after that i took the plates downstairs while jase went to shower and i washed them after i was done i went to the lounge and i watched tv the was nothing else i could do cause this house has maids who clean the house and those who cook now the house is sparkling clean and breakfast is already made for everyone now you understand

what i meant when i said "khante how rich is this family " anyway i continue watching tv until Natasha comes in and takes the remote and goes to sit on a one sitter couch and she changes the channel nx she looks like shes been crying her eyes are puffy and swollen mxm anyway im just gonna keep quiet cause i see shes looking for my trouble and she wont get it shem gape im not a straatmate (trouble maker) so i concentrate on my phone i logged on to Facebook and and went through my timeline while she changes the channels as if this is her father's house nx jase walked in looking fresh and handsome gosh this man is just blessed with everything the body,the looks, the smile, the height just everything he smiles when he sees me checking him out and i look away quickly blushing...he walks to me and sits next to me and turns my face and kisses me while brushing my belly gently ***

Jase: i love you

Me: i love you too

Jase: im gonna go out with snakes to the venue where princess's party will be held just to check if everything is ok and ready

Me: ok

a woman entered the lounge pulling a travelling bag she looked beautiful she looks like she was on her late 40s

Her: hello hello

Jase: aunt bongi

***he stood up and went to hug her ***

Jase: i thought you wont be able to make it

Bongi: and have our little princess angry at me

Jase: ai you and your little princess

***they laughed then jase turned to looks at me and looked back at his aunt ***

Jase: aunty i'd like you to meet someone important

Bongi: more important than me

Jase: well she own my heart

Bongi: mmmm

Jase:baby come

***i stood up and went to them ***

Jase: this is kedi soon to be mrs khumalo and my heart this is my aunt bongi our grandfathers are siblings

Me: ohh ok nice to meet you

Bongi: aow soon to be mrs khumalo heh jase

***she said that while frowning ignoring me ***

Jase: yes aunt bongi shes my fiancee

Bongi: ohh anyway who's this beautiful lady

she said pointing at natasha

Bongi: you see this is the kind of girl you should be introducing to me as the one you want to marry not her

gosh mara what have i done to this woman for her to be saying all this she doesn't even know me but i can see she already hates me

Jase: AUNTY!

he cautioned her he looked pissed

Me: excuse me

i didn't wait for jase to say anything i walked out and went to the kitchen and opened the fridge and took out a bottle of water and drank it as soon as i put the bottle down i felt hands holding me from behind

Jase: im sorry my heart dont mind her

Me: its ok

Jase: no its not kedi she shouldn't have said what she said

Me: jase you once said to me as long as baba, ma, your dad, jay and princess likes me anyone else can fuck off so its ok

he turned me to look at him and he kissed my lips and held me tight

Jase: i love you

Me: i love you too my king

he pushed me of him quickly and looked at me with his eyebrows raised and a huge smile on his face

Jase: say it again

Me: my king

Jase: shit i missed you calling me that Me: and i missed calling you that

***all of a sudden he smashed his lips on mine and we kissed passionately the kiss went on and on then i felt his hand grabbing my butt tight and my hand went below his belt and i held his crotch tight and he moaned gosh we even forgot we were in the kitchen in his grandfather's house so i pulled out with my hand still on his hard shaft ***

Me: we in your grandmother's kitchen jase

Jase: lets go upstairs then

Me: nope remember you said you have to go

Jase: fine but when i come back i better find you naked upstairs

Me: you do remember this is your grandfather's house right

*** he chuckled ***

Jase: im sure he doesn't mind

Me: jase!

Jase: you mean your king

i just smiled and he fixed himself and he pulled me out of the kitchen but as we were about to leave a beautiful yellow bone slender girl entered and she threw herself at jase and they hugged tight gosh i felt my blood boil after a while they pulled apart

Girl: ohh my gosh i missed you and where's the

rest of the crew

Jase: somewhere in the house

Girl: how have you been yho shem you look good

Jase: ive been good and you look good too

the girl looked at me then back at jase

Girl: and who's this jase please dont tell me you're cheating on me i leave for a few weeks and you already moved on

gosh nooooo this is not happening

Jase: voetsek ntombi dont do that not this time ok

Ntombi:dont do what

Jase: play that prank with her....my heart shes joking shes actually my crazy cousin aunt bongis stupid daughter she likes playing stupid pranks

***i just kept quiet trying to calm myself down

cause im sure my blood pressure was rising high as for this ntombi girl she was laughing but jase wasn't he was looking at me with a worried look i think ntombi could see whatever she just did wasn't funny and she stopped laughing***

Jase: my heart

Me: excuse me

i walked out i wasn't hurt or angry or mad nooo but i was scared i just realized that the wound of him cheating on me is still fresh and that video of him and that girl played in my head and the fear of him doing it again is still there i went upstairs and went to the bathroom and locked the door and sat on the toilet seat and i sobbed...will i ever forget and move on from it that's the question i asked myself i know people will say forgive and forget and that hes sorry the thing is i forgave him and i know hes sorry but what i fail to do is to forget i dont know how..... i heard a bang on the door

Jase: open this door kedi

i kept quiet and i stood up and cleaned my face he kept on banging the door aaarg after cleaning myself i opened the door and he looked at me with a look i didn't understand

Me: dont look at me like that

Jase: you've been crying

Me: its this stupid hormones

Jase: kedi

Me: really jase

Jase: i know you're angry and hurt im sorry

Me: i know its just a prank even though it wasnt funny at all but by the time you said shes joking my hormones had already reacted and reached their boiling point so its ok im not angry or mad

***i lied im just tired of us fighting and me getting angry and all that then there was a knock on the door and jase went to open and ntombi

walked in and came to me***

Ntombi: im sorry im really really sorry i know it was a bad joke and i swear i will never joke like that ever again

she said that looking at me with puppy eyes

Ntombi: do you forgive me please forgive me ok jase is mad at me and i can't handle him being mad at me please

Me: its ok i forgive you

she gave me a tight hug ok ok whats up with this girl

Ntombi: now jase do you forgive me

Jase: yah now leave

Ntombi: hah jase but i just apologized

Jase: ntombi leave i need to talk to my woman

*** she walked out looking sad***

Me: that was harsh

Jase: no one messes with you and i just let them off the hook just like that

Me:but im ok jase

Jase: you were crying my heart are you sure you're ok

Me: yeah im ok jase stop worrying it's your baby thats making me a cry baby Jase: come here

i went to him and we hugged then he kissed my forehead

Me: you should get going now

Jase: are you chasing me out

Me: yep i want princesses party to be perfect did you see how excited she is about this party

Jase: ok ok let me get going now

we went downstairs and he kissed my forehead and he left i went to the kitchen to get myself a little snack and ntombi was there

Ntombi: hey you good

Me: yeah you

Ntombi: i feel bad about what i did jase told me you're pregnant and if anything happens to his child im screwed

Me: how can jase say that to you mara

Ntombi: hes just being protective i get it

Me: overly protective you mean

***we both laughed ***

Ntombi: im sorry i know it was a bad joke is just that i once played that prank to his ex and we laughed about it but now yho he nearly bit my head off after you left he was angry that means he truly loves you

i just smiled

Ntombi: im happy that hes settling down he seems happy and that makes me happy

Me: he makes me happy too

Ntombi: im glad so were are you based

Me: Pretoria. .you

Ntombi: zeerust

Me: and what the hell are you doing there

***she giggled showing her dimples ***

Ntombi: running away from my evil mom

Me: huh

she laughed

Ntombi: i work there but hey im also glad im far away from home and that my mother wont be able to come visit

Me: haow ntombi how can you say that

Ntombi: but its the truth that woman can send you straight into a mental institution by her rantings and judgmentals she drives me crazy i can't stand her

Me: yho ok

Ntombi: so how is nhlakanipho

Me: why

i gave her a confused look

Ntombi: im just asking haow

me: mmmm so of all the guys you are specifically asking about snakes

Ntombi: ohh my God you know about that name

Me: yep wait a minute are you two like dating or.....

Ntombi: no i dont know what you're talking about

Me: NTOMBI

Ntombi: what

Me::but you two are related mos

Ntombi: not blood related haow and girl that guy can fuck yho

Me: omg ntombi you too have already done the

deed

Ntombi: yep and hes a God in bed shem

we both laughed out loud gosh i think me and this girl will get along just fine i mean we just clicked nje and shes crazy shem loud and talkative i like that shes free spirited and a straight forward chick

Voice: whats all this noise about do you think this is a tavern

we turned and looked towards the door and it was aunt bongi mxm

Ntombi: chill ma we're just getting to know each other hoaw and we were just laughing

Bongi: shut up ntombi and what exactly could you be talking about with this thing

ok why does this woman hate me this much i mean we just met

Ntombi: ma please stop it ok not today why do you like causing unnecessary drama huh you

dont even know the poor girl and already youre insulting her whats wrong with you

***she didn't see it coming cause bongi slapped her ohh my God ***

bongi: you will respect me ntombi im your mother not your mate

Ntombi: respect is earned not demanded

Bongi: ntombi you will not disrespect me infront of this nobody

Ntombi: this nobody as you just called her is jase's fiance

she laughed

Bongi: i will not let my nephew settled for less where else he can settle for the best

i felt my blood boil

Me: and what makes you think im less huh you dont even know me but you already insulting me

Bongi: ooh she can talk well listen here girly you will not marry my nephew over my dead body did you even look at yourself your not even a khumalo material

Ntombi: ma stop its enough why do you like acting like a church rat

Bongi: uzonya ntombi(you will shit yourself ntombi) continue disrespecting me and you'll regret it

as for me i have a huge lump in my throat but one thing for sure is i wont cry because of this woman

Me: ntombi we will chat later neh i dont have to sit here and listen to this nonsense

i also didn't see it coming cause she slapped me also i held my cheek looking at her in disbelief ntombi rushed to me and held me ok ok ok did this woman just slap me

Ntombi: you are evil bongi nx why did you slap

her what did she do to you huh sometimes i wonder if you are my real mother nx

Bongi : NTOMBI

ntombi: you disgust me nx

she pulled me out of the kitchen to the lounge and we sat down

Ntombi: im sorry ok

me: its ok its not your fault ummm let me go upstairs il see you later neh

i didn't wait for her to reply i walked out but instead of going upstairs i went outside to the pool house and i sat inside then tears rushed out everywhere i go the abuse follows me...bongi hates me and i dont even know why even susan hated me even today i dont know why i sat there for like 30 minutes and my phone rang it was an unsaved number

Me: hello

Caller: good morning mam im looking for kedi

Me: who's looking for her

Caller:im detective Peterson

Me: ok you're speaking to her

D.Peterson: ok im calling due to a missing person's case of a man called siphho i was wondering if we could meet up and i ask you a few questions

Me: im in kzn now and i dont know when il be back you can ask me your questions now

D.Peterson : ok then do you know a man called siphho

Me: yeah

D.Peterson: what kind of relationship did you two have

me: we dated

D.Peterson: ok so when last did you see or hear from him

Me: its been a while now

D.Peterson: well hes missing

me: ok so why are you calling me and telling me this

D.Peterson: well the last time he was seen he said he was going to your place

Me: well the last time i saw him it was at his house he was having sex with some woman in his living room then i rushed out and was almost knocked down by a car the driver took me to the hospital since i fainted and hit my head hard on the ground and i went home the following day later and the security guards said he was there looking for me since then ive never heard from him not even a phone call to apologise or explain why he cheated

D.Peterson: ohh ok ummm do you know anyone else who could know his whereabouts

Me: ask his wife

D.Peterson: wife? I wasn't told he was married

Me: well he told me his parents wanted him to marry some girl as a business transaction or else they'll disown him he wanted to make me his second wife but i declined the last day i saw him i received an sms from him saying i should come to his house so we can talk about the situation at hand then i found him having sex with someone else

D.Peterson: wow i guess his family forgot to mention that ummm thanks for your time if there's anything else you may remember please call me on this number

me: ok

***i ended the call ok ok i know i lied but i had no choice imagine me telling the detective that the last time i saw siphos was when he slapped me and i went temporary blind and jase beat him up and he ran away..they will suspect jase with siphos disappearance and i can't have that anyway im not gonna stress about him his not

worth it i kept on thinking about that evil aunt and what she said to me i think i fell asleep cause i was waken up by someone shaking me and i opened my eyes it was jase he had a worried look on face***

Me: hey

jase: why didn't you answer your phone do you know how worried i was

me: askies jase i fell asleep i didn't hear it ring

Jase: why are you sleeping out here

me: i wanted some fresh air

***he gave a look i didn't understand ***

Me: a detective Peterson called me concerning siphos disappearance

jase: what?

Me: yeah he asked me a bunch of questions

Jase: what did you say to him

me: that the last time i saw him he was busy

having sex with another woman in his living room

he gave me a questioning look

Me: i couldn't tell him the last time i saw him it was when you beat him up and he ran away you'll become a suspect and i can't have that

jase: so you lied to a detective

me: mmmmh i had too

he gave me a look i couldn't understand he stared at me for a while without saying anything

Me: jase dont look at me like that you're scaring me

i said that sitting up straight and he chuckled he came and sat next to me and pulled me towards his chest and held me tight

Jase: i love you

Me: i love you too

Jase:how long have you been sleeping here

Me: i think 30 minutes or soo since you left

he pushed me off him slightly and made me face him then his face changed to hard and scary

Jase: what happened to your cheek

***i touched it quickly and gosh it felt abit swollen i looked down avoiding eye contact ***

Jase: i wont ask you again kedi

Me: its nothing jase just let it go

Jase: DAMN IT KEDI TALK NOW!

*** he said that standing up and looking at me with a scary look***

Me: it was aunt bongi

he kept on looking at me breathing heavily i got scared a bit

Jase: why

Me: she kept on insulting me saying she'll never allow you to marry a thing like me and she said other bad stuff then i tried to walk out and she grabbed my arm and slapped me she even slapped ntombi when she tried to defend me

***i said that wiping my tears then he started pacing up and down it was like he was trying to calm himself down and i got scared then the next thing he grabbed my hand and pulled me up and took my phone and we went inside the house we bumped into jay he tried to say something but jase walked passed him and he followed us we went to the kitchen and bongi was having tea with ma and natasha and some two other women i haven't seen before the next thing jase let go of my hand and he rushed to aunt bongi and he pulled her by her weave from the chair then he slapped her so hard she fell on the floor everyone started screaming and jay got in front of him pushing him back away from bongi and as for me im standing here shocked

as hell ntombi, snakes and muzi rushes in i see
ntombi let her weave down to hide her cheek
eish i should have done the same thing and
none of this would be happening ***

Jase: YOU SLAPPED MY WOMAN...YOU
SLAPPED HER YOU HAD THE ROTTEN NERVE
TO LAY YOUR FUCKEN HANDS ON HER YOU
PIECE OF SHIT

he roared

ma: hai nkosi shes your aunt

Jase: AUNT YA MASIMBA SHE SLAPPED HER
MA FOR WHAT HUH

yho I've never seen jase this angry before

Jase: JUST BECAUSE YOU THINK ITS FINE TO
SLAP NTOMBI AROUND YOU THINK YOURE
ENTITLED TO SLAP EVERYONE ELSE WELL
YOU'RE WRONG CAUSE IL FUCKEN KILL YOU IF
YOU EVER TRY THAT SHIT WITH KEDI AGAIN
DO YOU HEAR ME IL PUT A BULLET THROUGH

YOUR FUCKEN SKULL AND BURY YOU WHERE
NO ONE WILL FIND YOUR USELESS BODY
.....DARE ME WOMAN AND YOU'LL SEE WHAT
IM CAPABLE OF

***the whole room went quiet only jase was
speaking he looked mad angry jay was still
standing in front of him blocking him from
attacking aunt bongi she was standing now
holding her cheek with tears running down her
cheeks then i see snakes rushing to ntombi
checking her now red cheek and his face
became hard and he pulled ntombi out of the
kitchen ok i guess no one saw that ***

Bongi: IM JUST LOOKING OUT FOR YOU YOU
DESERVE BETTER OK SHES NOT A KHUMALO
MATERIAL

Jay: VOETSEK SHUT THE HELL UP BONGI

Ma: bongi thula nawe man (bongi keep quiet)

Jase: UZONYA BONGI IM WARNING YOU
VOMIT THAT SHIT OUT OF YOUR MOUTH

AGAIN AND YOU'LL SEE FLAMES DONT DARE
ME BONGI DONT FUCKEN DARE ME

***he said that pointing at her yho jase looks
scary when hes angry***

Me: my king stop please

***he was looking at bongi with anger in his
eyes his face was red with rage ***

jase: stay away from me and kedi bongi and if
you ever lay a hand on ntombi or kedi again il
kill you and trust me no one will mourn your
death.... life will go on as if you never existed

***with that he walked towards me and grabbed
my hand and we went upstairs and he got into
the bed and he signalled i do too then he held
me tight with my head on his chest ***

Jase: are you ok

Me: yeah im just hungry

***he flipped us with him on top of me then he
kissed me i kissed him back the next thing our

clothes are flying on air then i felt him entering me and i gasped while he groaned and the things he did to me were out of this world after he came right after i came for the third time we layed in bed breathing heavily***

Me: you know i meant real food right but hey im not complaining

Jase: i know you wont

i giggled while he chuckled

Me: you scared me earlier on ive never seen you that angry before

Jase: no one layes their hands on you and lives to tell the tail shes lucky jay was there and that shes family or else she'd be dead by now

i felt my body tense up cause by the look on his face he means every word

Me: jase

***i said that with a low voice and he got of bed and went to the bathroom and came out of the

bathroom and wiped me clean ***

Jase: get dressed i need to feed you guys

i got dressed he also did and we went downstairs it was already 11h00 and the party starts at 14h30

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

☆☆☆ il post another insert later to make up for not posting yesterday and brace yourselves bo lovia's shit is about to go down and kedi will see something she was never suppose to see.....mmmmmmh i wonder what it is ☆☆☆

[08/06, 07:55] Nor: INSERT.....46

- .
- .
- .

KEDI'S POV

we went downstairs to the lounge and it was empty no one was there

Jase: sit il go make you something to eat

Me: its ok jase il go

Jase: we're not going to argue about this

Me: mara jase you want your family to think i used a love potion on you cause you always the one that is making me something to eat not the other way around

Jase: my heart if you did use it i think its not enough you should pour some more

i gave him a dead stare but he just laughed and went to the kitchen after a while he came back with two plates he sat down and we ate

Me: how are the preparations going

Jase: everything is done my heart

Me: where's princess i haven't seen her today

Jase: out with pops

Me: shes daddy's little girl neh

Jase:yeah he wants to spend as much time as he can with her since hes going away in a business trip for 3 months

Me: ooh ok

Jase: you know i cant wait to meet her...i can't wait to hold her in my arms for the first time

Me: what if its a he

Jase: then i can't wait to hold him in my arms for the first time

***i pushed him playfully and layed my head on

his shoulder***

Me: i love you jase

Jase: i know my heart and i love you too...so is
the engagement on

***i kept quiet a bit then i took a deep breath ***

Me: yeah its no use fighting fate and destiny

Jase: did i just hear you right...did you just
agree

Me: yes jase its no use fighting what is meant
to be

Jase: fuck i love you woman he held me tight
while kissing the top of my head

Me: i love you too man

we laughed out loud

Jase: call me man again and il punish you
severely

Me: yes sir

***he laughed ***

Jase: il never win with you neh

Me: its high time you acknowledge that my king

we laughed then his face went hard fast

Jase: il never do what i did ever again kedi ive learned my lesson

Me: i believe you my king the problem is forgetting but i guess with time i will

Jase: il help you forget my queen i will i dont know how but i will

***he turned my head and we kissed i deepened the kiss with our tongues dancing together gosh i felt my clit twitch and i was already wet down there then my hand went to his huge shaft it was already hard as a rock and i grabbed it and tightened the grip and he groaned all of a sudden someone cleared their throat we pulled out and it was baba GOD i swear my heart nearly stopped or it did for a

second i dont know cause i was shaking with fear my whole body was shaking i saw jase talk but i couldn't hear a word he was saying...he shook me but it didn't help everything was moving in slow motion the next thing he scoops me up and i just closed my eyes gosh what have i done how can i disrespect babas house like that what if he saw me when i touched jases crotch ohh my god i messed up big time how will i face him now what if he goes back to his word and kicks me out of his house i opened my eyes and we were in our bedroom with muzi next to me then i felt being injected on my arm and it was lights out....i woke up to jase staring at me i closed my eyes again and tears fell down my eyes***

Me: does he want me to leave his house

i said that with my eyes closed

Jase: why would he want you to leave his house

Me: i disrespected him and his house how will

i face him now already im terrified of him and now its 10 times worse

Jase: you do realise youre pregnant right...and what just happened could have made you miscarry....before you act can you atleast think about that baby in your womb we were kissing and yes you were grabbing my dick so what im sure hes done worse when he was my age

Me: why are you shouting at me

Jase: im shouting cause you dont think before you act do you know how high your blood pressure was

i started crying loud

Jase: dont do that ok get up and go get ready the party is about to start

***i cried louder.... how can jase be this insensitive...he looked at me as if i lost my mind and that made me cry more i even had hiccups he looked at me with fear and worry in his eyes

then he rushes to me and tries to hold me but i push him off me and continue to cry but he grabs me roughly and holds me on his chest tight rocking me back and forth and i continue to cry until i couldn't cry anymore now im left with only hiccups GOD this hormones are turning me into a mad woman im telling you***

Jase: im sorry my heart i shouldn't have shouted at you i know you hate it im sorry

shame hes apologising and as for me i dont even know why im crying whether its because baba caught us making out or that he was shouting or that i put my baby's life in danger what i know is i feel like crying and now im crying as if someone beat me up is being pregnant also all about crying for no reason ai

Jase: are you calm now

i nodded

Jase: ok lets go get ready

***we got out of the bed and headed for the shower jase got out first since i was busy shaving my legs after that i got out and jase was done he was just wearing a black v-neck shirt that showed his muscles and a bit of his chest tattoo and another one on his neck and arms and black ripped jeans with black and gold sneakers i bought him he looked simple but damn hot then he went downstairs and i got dressed in a cream white lower back lace tight dress it showed my whole back and it was above my knees and beige stilettos and i let my curly weave down and i put on make up, not to blow my own horn but i looked good shem ive never looked like this before i couldn't even believe it when i looked myself in the mirror after i was done i took my beige and gold clutch bag and went downstairs i got there and found natasha and ntombi looking good ntombi was in a high waist shorts and some six inch stilettos with a tucked in shirt she looked good i

must confess as for natasha she was wearing a really short long sleeve gold and white dress with some really high heels she also looked good but that dress is too short for someone to wear in her inlaws house anyway its none of my business the guys came walking from that passage that led to the study all of them wearing jeans and shirts with sneakers mxm.... jase walked to me and kissed my cheek with his hand going up and down in my bare back***

Jase: shit you look beautiful my heart even mntungwa agrees with me

***he whispered in my ear my eyes landed below his belt and he had a boner mxm mara jase

Me: behave

Jase: how can I when you look this sexy and hot even with your baby bump

Me: jase

*** he chuckled anyway we went to our cars and drove to the venue we got there and it was decorated beautifully but what caught my attention was all the security details that were here anyway we went inside and the venue was filled with princesses age mates from all different races some of them i think they came with their parents so we sat down and waited for miss party after a while she came looking all glam and beautifulthe party started and speeches where done i made sure i dont cross paths with baba after all the speeches food was served and we ate i was sitting next to ntombi***

Me: im sorry about what happened earlier

Ntombi: you have nothing to be sorry about she deserved it

Me: dont say that shes still your mother you know

Ntombi: she has never been a mother to me

since i was 15 and what she got from jase is a piece of what ive been getting since i was 15 years

Me: ooh my god im sorry ntombi

Ntombi: its ok dont worry about it

Me:so how is snakes i saw how angry he was when he saw your cheek

Ntombi: he was angry at first that i didn't tell him but we eventually made out yho girl the things he did to me they were out of this world

we both laughed this chick is crazy

Ntombi: we were busy swinging on the chandelier girl yho it was epic

i laughed harder geez ntombi mara

Ntombi: and he said hes giving me 4days to resign at work and pack my shit and move to Pretoria

Me: what?

ok snakes is crazy

Ntombi: yeah hes giving me an ultimatum kedi can you believe it

Me: snakes is crazy ntombi what about your job so what are you going to do

Ntombi: i dont know what to do kedi the truth is i love him and he loves me too but then again is love that enough for me to pack up my life and follow a guy i dont know what to do

Me: wena do you want to come live in Pretoria

Ntombi: i dont know I've never considered living there before and plus i always made sure im far away from my mother as possible and now Pretoria is not that far from her eish i just dont know

Me: just talk to snakes about all of this and see what decision you both can come up with....tell him your fears and the real reason why you've always worked far away from home wena just

talk to your man communication is important

Ntombi: yeah i guess your right

as for jase he cant keep his eyes off me and its not a you look good look but a protective look and he also has a worried look on i wonder what's wrong....i guess he saw i was staring at him cause now hes coming towards me

Jase: are you ok

Me: i should be asking you that you look worried

Jase: no im not

Me: i know that look ok so dont lie to me

Jase: mmmm come

he pulled me up from my chair and we went to the back and as soon as we got there he pinned me against the wall and he kissed me for dear life after a while he pulled out and stared deep into my eyes

Jase: i love you kedi

Me:i love you too jase now whats wrong

Jase: nothing is wrong is just i was so scared when you blacked out earlier on when baba caught us making out muzi said you might loose the baby cause your BP was high just do me one favour

Me: anything

Jase: whatever situation you find yourself in bad or worse just compose yourself and try not to stress out too much or panic please think before you act

ok why is jase talking like this

Me: ok

Jase: always think of our cub first before you start stressing about the situation you find yourself in you understand

me: yeah but jase why are you saying all this

jase: im saying all this cause you scared me earlier on you reacted to the fact that baba caught us but you forgot you're pregnant and stress is dangerous to our cub

ok theres more to this than what hes telling me anyway hes right i panic alot forgetting that im pregnant

Me: jase the thing is while growing up every time i wake up after 5 in the morning or i dont get to susan in time when she calls me i always panicked cause i knew il get a beating i guess i need to accept that im not in that space or place anymore its just something i need to get over im sorry i nearly put our cub in danger

*** he pulled me to him and held me tight***

Jase: lets go back inside

Me: ok

***we went inside and all the kids were dancing the was even a dj there was alot of noise i went

to ntombi and she was sitting with some girls***

Ntombi: you went to get a quickie nyana neh

we both laughed

Me: mxm even if we did its not a sin hes my fiance after all

Ntombi: true but what if someone walked in on you two

me: bathong ntombi i didn't say we had a quickie anyway where is nhlakanipho

Ntombi: wa phapha (you are forward)

i laughed

Me: ooh i didn't know you can speak setswana

ntombi: i lived in zeerust for 3 years of course i can speak setswana

Me: mmmm nice

this other girl was looking at us

Girl: ummm so you're dating one of the twins
jase

Ntombi: not dating sweetie engaged

Girl: ooh congrats i guess

Me: thanks

Girl: ummm you know we once dated

Ntombi: so?

Me: ooh ok

Girl: i was just saying i had him first you know

Me: ooh ok so did he ever fuck you without a
condom or did he ever got down on his knee
and asked you to marry him or has he ever
planted his seed inside you

***i asked her with my eyebrows raised and
ntombi was busy laughing her ass off ***

Ntombi: ask her kedi ...nywee nywee i had him
first ya masimba answer sfebe

***she said looking at this girl as for me i was

pissed mxm i blame this stupid hormones she just stood up and left ***

Ntombi: yho kedi i didn't know you can put someone in their place shem big ups girl

Me: courtesy of this pregnancy hormones i swear they are turning me into a mad woman

***she just laughed and all of a sudden that stupid girl came back and sat down i looked at ntombi and she laughed then i felt a hand on my shoulder and i look up and it was jase i stood up and faced him ***

Jase: are you ok

me: yeah

Jase: ok il be outside if you need me ok

he looked worried all of a sudden

Me: ok is everything ok

jase: yes my heart dont go anywhere without ntombi even to the restroom

i gave him a confused look ok now i need to go with ntombi even when i want to shit

Jase: dont argue with me please just do as i say

i just nod even though i dont agree

Jase: i love you ok

Me: i love you too

he brushed my belly and kissed me and i kissed him back then he pulled out and kissed my forehead then he bend over and whispered something to ntombi and she nodded then he kissed my forehead again and went towards the entrance i sat down

Me: whats going on jase looked worried

ntombi: i dont know he just said i shouldn't leave your side

Me: something doesnt feel right

Ntombi: im sure its nothing serious

***so we sat there watching princess having the

time of her life she was dancing with her friends
her face was pink now with all the laughing
and screaming shes been doing then the music
stopped and ma took the Mic***

ma: ok kids i know you're having fun and all but
its time to go its already getting dark outside so
we will finish up this party at home princesses
home where you'll also get your party packs and
parents you can follow us or stay and enjoy
cause for the grown ups the party is only
beginning the kids will be safe at home so its up
to you to either follow us or stay and enjoy ok
anyway all the kids should go through the back
door transport is already waiting for you

***then she put the mic down and instructed
the kids to go they all left along with the
parents only the family and friends were left
then all of a sudden the music changed and
alcohol was brought in then this people started
cheering mxm im sure they couldn't wait for the
kids to leave then i saw snakes walking towards

us then he put his hand on my shoulder ***

Snakes: are you ok

Me: yeah just hungry

Snakes: ok dont worry il sort it out

i just nodded then he pulled ntombi up and they started talking then he kissed her lips and then her forehead and he left ok ok ok then she sat down blushing and i smiled looking at her

Ntombi: what

me: nothing its just some people are in love shem

Ntombi: dont start with me as if you and jase are better cause you guys are worse

Me: no we not

Ntombi: really ok i heard about your naughty selves being caught making out by baba

Me: ohh my God i swear im gonna kill jase so he told his partners in crime

***she laughed ***

Ntombi: yep anyway where is natasha the madam

Me: ooh there she is sitting with your mom

ntombi: mxm birds of the same feathers i just smell trouble with them

Me: yeah but hey we just need to keep an eye on them and also keep as far as we can away from them and their troubles

ntombi: yep

***then a waitress came with a tray that had two plates and two bottles of grape rizer and he gave them to us ***

me:thanks

***she nodded and left then we dug in making light conversation as for jase and jay they kept on checking up on me mxm after i think an hour i needed to use the restroom i told ntombi then she send and sms then two bodyguards walked

towards us and ntombi said we can go.....wait a minute khante whats going on here now we need bodyguards to go pee anyway we went in and i went to pee as i was about to wipe i thought i heard ntombi talk then something fell to the ground i wiped then flushed and i opened the door only to find ntombi lying on the floor not moving with one of the guards standing next to her with a gun on his hand i panicked a bit but then i remembered jases words as i was about to tell him not to hurt me i felt someone grabbing me from behind with his hand closing my mouth then i felt being injected on my neck and i heard him say "i got her boss" then i started feeling dizzy.... all of a sudden i heard gunshots outside then it was lights out for me***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

☆☆☆eish guys last night i typed insert 46 and as i was about to post it ..it disappeared i dont know if it was because of network or what but i slept with a heavy heart shem anyway i started from scratch today and i typed again so here it is enjoy☆☆☆

[08/06, 07:55] Nor: INSERT....47

.

.

.

***NARRATED ***

***as soon as jase started hearing gun shots a car drove out of the yard in full speed and he

immediately thought of kedi all of them took out their guns and started shooting back towards the entrance gate jase told pops to cover him cause he wanted to run inside to protect his queen and ntombi pops did and as he was about to enter the door he felt a sting of pain on his right arm and he fell on the ground he knew he was shot he quickly checked the wound and luckily it was a flesh wound but he was bleeding just then as jay saw his twin fall to the ground he unleashed his beast his eyes turned blood shot red and his veins started popping all over his body especially on his forehead and neck and he roared all the guys got scared but pops ordered them to continue shooting as for jase his mind was on kedi so he stood up quickly and ran inside his arm was in pain but he didn't care he got inside and it was empty then he thought that they might have ran to the back he got there and everyone was there except for his heart and ntombi then he

remembered ntombi send him an sms saying they are going to the restroom and he quickly rushed there and got in and he saw ntombi on the floor not moving with a bit of blood next to her head and kedi's clutch back next to her his heart started beating fast he rushed to her and checked her pulse and she was still alive then he ran to each and every door in this restroom calling out for kedi but he couldn't find her right then his fears became a reality his heart started beating faster and he felt the beast taking control with the anger he was feeling he knew he wasn't gonna control it that it was taking over in full force he started roaring loud and he suddenly felt pain in his gums he knew the beast was on another level he felt different scary different he didn't even want to look at the mirrors right then he lost all the control he wasn't in that dark room like that time when the beast took full control now he could see everything that is going on but he wasn't in

control at all then the beast bend down and picked ntombi up and walked out immediately as the beast entered the open space in the hall every one was in there calling his name but they immediately stopped when they saw what was right in front of them holding ntombi everyone trembled with fear while they witnessed the state jase was in including his dad***

Jay: ja....jase wh..whats going on

Pops: shit.... son whats going on

*** he kept quiet and continued to beath hard.....his skin was different it was hard his face had even changed shape his eyes were all red in colour he also had long and sharp k9 teeth he looked like something you'd normally see in the movies the word scary was an understatement when you described his current state his body was more muscular than normal all the guys stood still with their eyes popped out fear written in their faces then pops walked

to him and took ntombi from him everyone knew by the state jase was in it can only mean one thing they took kedi snakes immediately ran to the car and went back inside with his laptop and checked kedis tracker and all of a sudden the beast ran outside jay limped his way outside so did pops trying to catch up with him but by the time they went outside he was long gone....***

Jay: WHAT THE FUCK HAPPENED TO MY BROTHER

pops: i have no idea

Muzi: its like he transformed or something

he said standing behind them then snakes came out running

Snakes: kedis tracker stopped it looks like they stopped moving not far from here its in the woods

Jay: and im sure jase is heading there

Muzi: do you think he can use a phone in that state hes in to track kedi

Jay: i dont know

Snakes: i guess he can cause his tracker says hes heading there...is he driving

Jay: no he didn't take any car i think hes on foot

Snakes: fuck hes fast

Pops: snakes you'll stay back with ntombi and wait for the ambulance and also keep tracking both of them and send kedis coordinates to me

Snakes: sure pops

Pops: lets go

***he said looking at muzi and the limping jay he was shot in his right thigh and muzi was shot on his shoulder the bullet went through his shoulder and came out at the back he was in pain but since the bullet isn't stuck in him he knew he was gonna be ok he didn't even go check if Natasha is ok or not all he cared about

was the mission in hand after all she's the one that brought a snake in their house as for Jay it was a different story the bullet was stuck on his thigh and he needs to have it removed.... Muzi ran back inside and came back with a bottle of brandy and he went to the boot of the car and took out his first aid kit and sat at the back with Jay while Pops was driving and he drank some brandy and poured some on his bullet wound and screamed in pain then he took out a syringe and injected some antibiotic on his wound so it doesn't get infected then he injected himself with another drug that stops the bleeding and Jay helped him put on plasters at the front and at the back of his shoulder wound then he focused on Jay first Jay gulped down some brandy and poured some on his wound and roared in pain then Muzi took out a pocket knife and dug out that bullet with Jay clenching his teeth and tightening his jaws to prevent himself from screaming Muzi finally got

it out and he injected him with an antibiotic syringe and that drug he injected himself with that stopped the bleeding and he bandaged him then Pops' phone rang it was baba he answered then put him on loud speaker***

Pops: baba your on loud speaker

Baba: WHAT JUST HAPPENED

Pops: we were attacked ntombi is knocked out and kedi is abducted

Baba: WHAT? HOW THE FUCK DID THAT HAPPEN WHERE ARE THE BOYS ARE THEY OK

Pops: jay and muzi were shot but they'll live

Baba: AND NKOSI

Pops: he transformed or changed then left on foot going after her

Baba: WHAT DO YOU MEAN TRANSFORMED

pops: physically...he changed even his k9 teeth are long and his face looks deformed

Baba: FUCK..FUCK...FUCK....WHO ATTACKED YOU

Pops: kani's son and i think he got to two of our guards cause they betrayed us

Baba: THIS BOY NEVER LEARNS HE DOESN'T KNOW WHAT HE JUST AWAKENED IN JASE BY MESSING WITH HIS CHOSEN ONE

Pops: baba whats going on why is my son like that

Baba: his beast is in full form now whatever you do let him do what he wants to do let him satisfy his beast thats the only way he'll go back to normal physically dont stop him until hes satisfied but please make sure kedi never sees him like that cause i dont think she'll take it well especially in her condition

Pops: when their mother was also abducted i never transformed or gotten to the stage hes in right now why is he like that

Baba: well i have ...i guess he takes after me all you need to know is hes gonna be fine after he satisfies the beast but make sure kedi never sees him like that he will not harm her but better make sure she doesn't see him in that state

then he dropped the call and immediately called snakes

Snakes: baba

Baba: how is she

Snakes: she'll be ok

Baba: good now send me the location of those two sons of bitches who betrayed us il handle them myself

Snakes:ok baba

then baba ended the call after a few minutes snakes called him back

Baba: where are they

Snakes : i think they trying to leave the country they are on N1 highway headed for limpopo i can also see here they applied for temporary passports

Baba: send me the coordinates of where they are and make sure the relatives there leave that place immediately after the ambulance leaves and dont worry about anything detective ntuli will handle everything wena keep tailing those bastards and inform me if there are any changes

Snakes: ok baba

then he ended the call and the paramedics came in and did their thing on ntombi and the ambulance left with two other guards that were injured along with ntombi then snakes organized mini buses for the relatives after they left he headed for the hospital

***meanwhile baba called his professional boys and he gave them the coordinates and told them to apprehend them and take them to the

warehouse they'll find him waiting for them and they should make it snappy after that call he left for the warehouse after taking his wife and princess to the secret room in the basement ...they know the drill they didn't argue or ask questions luckily all the kids left right after they received their party packs, he arrived at the warehouse and waited a bit then his phone rang***

Baba: talk to me

Voice: we are on our way but they weren't alone

Baba: I DONT CARE IF THEY ARE WITH JESUS THERE I WANT ALL OF THEM HERE YOU HAVE 15 MINUTES TO GET HERE OR CONSIDER YOURSELVES DEAD TOO

***then he hanged up and paced up and down with rage visible on his face after 14 minutes two cars drove in and the guys dragged the two guards with two women the other one was holding a small baby in her arms whilst the

other woman was pregnant they took them down to the basement where baba was and they tied the guards to the chairs with chains and the women sat next to their men the women were crying so did the men cause they knew what will happen to all of them then baba whispered to one of his guys to bring him an AK47 and he went out and came back with one***

Guard1: boss we are sorry please forgive us we were just greedy

he was crying while he said that

Guard2: please spare our families boss please forgive us you can punish us but please let our wifes leave boss please they didn't do anything they are innocent in all this

Baba: VOETSEK...SHUT UP

he roared

Baba: THIS USELESS BITCHES MARRIED

PIECES OF SHIT LIKE YOU THATS WHAT THEY ARE GUILTY OF INSTEAD OF LOOKING FOR REAL MEN THEY AGREED TO MARRY USELESS ASSHOLES LIKE YOU NX NOW TELL ME BOYS WHAT IS IT THAT I DONT GIVE YOU THAT YOU DECIDED TO BETRAY ME LIKE THIS

Guard1: boss please forgive us

he beat him with the back of the AK47 on the face and it knocked him out the women screamed

Baba: SHUT UP!

he shouted then they immediately kept quiet then he told one of his guys to bring cold water and he did then he poured it on the knocked out guard and he immediately woke up gasping for air

Baba: I PAY YOU HANDSOMELY EVERY MONTH I EVEN PAY FOR YOUR SISTER'S VARSITY FEES AND I ALSO PAY FOR YOUR MEDICAL AID YOU GET BONUSES TWICE EVERY YEAR....NX YOU

KNOW WHAT YOU ARE NOT WORTH ME
GETTING WORKED UP LIKE THIS YOU'RE JUST
UNGRATEFUL BASTARDS NX

***he told told the women to come sit a few
inches in front of their men they sat still until he
shouted and they did as they are told then he
crooked his AK47 and pointed at them***

Guard1: boss please dont please kill us instead

Guard2: boss please atleast spare my child
please im begging you we are sorry

Baba: you betrayed me and you know the
punishment is your lives along with your
families' lives

***then all of a sudden baba opened fire on the
women and child he emptied the bullets on
them while their husbands watched while
screaming and crying after that he went to
them holding a butcher knife***

Baba: see you all in hell

then he slit their throats and watched them as they took their last breaths while bleeding then he turned and looked at his boys

Baba: this should be a lesson learned and spread the word out that im coming after each and every employee of mine and their families who's eating or sleeping with my enemy tell them they better start running and not look back cause im coming for them guns blazing

the boys just nodded looking all scared

Baba: clean this up

then he walked out

MEANWHILE

kedi opened her eyes and she saw someone sitting on a chair next to the bed looking at her then she realized that it was nathi

Nathi: hey beautiful

Kedi: nnathi why am i here whats going on

*** she sat up straight on the bed then she realized she was naked under the blanket she was covered with she held on to the blanket tight close to her body and she started panicking ***

Nathi: hey relax babe i didn't do anything to you i took off your clothes and burned them for just in case you have a tracker on them relax i wont hurt you

Kedi: why am i here ohh my God ntombi she was on the floor not moving

what happened earlier came back to her

Nathi: relax kedi think of the baby ok im sure your ntombi is fine wherever she is

Kedi: why am i here nathi what do you want from me

Nathi : i want your love ..i love you kedi i loved

you from the second i saw you sitting with
anelisa in that tent i knew then i had to make
you mine

kedi: stop ok stop i love jase hes the father of
my unborn child my heart belongs to him

Nathi:SHUT UP!

***kedi trembled with fear and tears fell down
her cheeks ***

Nathi: shit im sorry kedi i didn't mean to shout
ok

***kedi just kept quiet while holding her belly
and tears just continued to fall down her cheeks
then she remembered jase's words earlier today
to think of the baby before she starts panicking
or acting then she thought of a happy place to
calm herself down and her happy place was
with jase so she closed her eyes and jase's face
with a smile on his face showing his dimples
popped up and immediately she felt herself
calming down***

Nathi: kedi look you'll learn to love me back the way i deserve to be loved ok its not a problem just calm down and don't stress yourself i love you i wont hurt you soon we gonna leave this God forsaken country and start afresh somewhere the khumalos wont find us we gonna live happily ever and after i promise you i dont mind raising that baby as my own i love you enough to do that even though i hate its father,uncles and grandfathers with passion but since he/she is also part of you i'll let it live

***kedi was scared cause now she just realized that nathi i s psycho and dangerous or maybe hes bipolar or he has multiple personalities or something what she knew was she'd rather die than to leave this country with him or to let him raise jase's child...she did a silent prayer for God to protect her and her child and to help jase and the guys to find her before nathi forces her out of the country then the door opened and someone who looked familiar to kedi

walked in***

Kedi: MANDLA?

mandla: the one and only

Kedi: how....what....ohh my God

Nathi: relax my love hes my friend remember
you once met his older brother on our first date

Kedi: ohh my God mandla how can you do this
what have i done to you huh what

Mandla: woah what did i do to you exactly
cause the only thing i did was to help my friend
and brother from another mother get his love
back from that dangerous and evil family

Kedi: nathi please let me go please just let me
go

Nathi: so that you can go back to those sons of
bitches

Mandla: the same sons of bitches that killed
your sister thato

kedi: what? What are you talking about

Mandla: they are the guys we stole diamonds from dummy the same khumalo brothers that killed mroza and thato im only alive today cause thato and mroza didn't rat me out

Kedi: you're lying mandla no they are not those dangerous people that killed my sister

Mandla: believe what you want to believe i don't care you know once nathi showed me the picture of the woman hes been raving about and i saw that its you and he told me you're dating one of those khumalo brothers i knew i had to help him get you out of there before you also get killed

***kedi started crying she didn't want to believe jase and jay would do that to thato nathi got close to her and brushed her arm gently and he gave mandla a "good job "smile then they heard footsteps outside and thought its the guards making their rounds then after a minute or soo

the bedroom door was kicked down and in entered the beast covered in blood on his mouth,hands, arms and chest his shit was soaking with blood he was breathing heavily showing his bloodied sharp teeth ***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 07:56] Nor: Diary ya kedi:the chozen one

INSERT.....48

.

.

.

***NARRATED ***

*** what kedi was looking at was out of this world she couldn't believe what she was seeing...she could tell it was jase by the clothes hes wearing plus the tattoos but what she couldn't understand was why hes looking like this she did a breath in and out trying to calm herself down as for mandla and nathi they were trembling with fear and as for the beast it just stood by the door breathing heavily it scanned the room and it saw kedi on top of the bed holding tight a blanket you could just tell she was naked and it completely lost it within a second it was next to mandla and nathi kedi quickly closed her eyes and the beast threw nathi across the room to the wall and he hit the wall hard and he fell to the floor and it was lights out for him then mandla took out his gun but the beast quickly held mandlas hand that was holding the gun and it broke it in half you

could feel the bones breaking mandla screamed out loud in excruciating pain kedi quickly opened her eyes and saw jase holding mandla up by his throat with his feet hanging in the air...mandla tried to say something but the beast tightened the grip with its nails digging into mandlas skin the grip went tighter and tighter mandla saw his life flashing right next to him he knew this was it that it was the end for him then all of a sudden the beast ripped his throat out and blood gushed out he held part of mandlas throat in his hand and mandla fell to the floor as this was the end of the road for him bleeding out kedi screamed out then she fainted as everything was too much for her right then jay, pops and muzi entered the bedroom and what they saw was just too much they just stood by the door not moving an inch nathi woke up and started moving then the beast turned and went to him and it grabbed him by the throat and pinned him to the wall with

nathis legs dangling on air the beast stared into nathis eyes and nathi knew this time around he went too far and crossed the line he wasn't supposed to cross right then he started regretting not listening to his father he regretted not taking jases threats and warnings seriously he knew this was the end of the road for him then muzi and Jay rushed to kedi and muzi checked her pulse right then the beast roughly put nathi down and he coughed out gasping for air then it dragged him out of the room to the kitchen jay,muzi and pops went after them then the beast punched nathi repeatedly breaking nathi's jaws, ribs and so on then he picked nathi up and put him on top of the kitchen table then he took a butcher's knife and he stabbed him on his chest then he dragged it all the way to the stomach then he used his hands to opened him up then the beast did the unthinkable it ripped each and every internal organ inside of nathi with it's bare hands muzi and jay started

throwing up as for pops he was shocked beyond words then the beast cut his head off then it took it and rushed out they rushed after it but it was already gone so they went back inside and pops picked kedi up and they went to the car and jay and muzi dragged the bodies of the guards that the beast ravaged inside the house and set it alight then they left and drove back home in complete silence everyone was trying to stomach what they just witnessed.... on their way pops called baba***

Baba: what happened

Pops: the beast satisfied its self and rushed out

Baba: did kedi see it

Pops: im afraid yes she did by the time we got there the beast was already there

Baba: shit...ok go home and muzi should check kedi up to see if shes ok along with my grandchild I'll ask nhlakanipho to track him down and il go get him

Pops: ok

***then they ended the call on their way pops kept on asking himself to what length does their beasts go to protect their loved ones cause what he saw the beast do tonight was beyond him they finally arrived at home and pops carried kedi inside to the white room down in the basement and muzi checked her and luckily she was gonna be ok so as the baby then he focused on himself and jay after they were done they went to the lounge it was already almost midnight they found snakes sitting down and they both sat down too and silence filled the room...after a while jay spoke ***

Jay: will he be ok bafo

Muzi: i dont know but what i know is he has to be ok ive never came across what i came across tonight before

Snakes: will kedi and the baby be ok

Muzi: for now they are but it could be a different

story when she wakes up what she saw it isn't exactly normal

Jay: i never knew the beast could reach that point did you see what he did to nathi even an animal doesnt attack like that

Muzi: that is some fucked up shit

Snakes: by your talks im glad i was left behind

Muzi: you should be glad bafo...you should be

Jay: is ma and princess ok

Snakes: yeah they are in the secret room

Jay: and what about ntombi

Snakes: shes gonna be ok

Muzi: still at the hospital

Snakes: yeah

Muzi: il go check her out tomorrow

Snakes: ok..ummm you not gonna ask about your fiancee

Muzi: nah its over im done with that bitch she brought me nothing but headache and pain since i met her no wonder you never liked her
jay

Jay: im not gonna go on to an i told you trip but i did tell you shes trouble

Muzi: mxm

snakes and jay chuckled

Snakes: now its worse cause shes besties with aunt bongi so bafo expect love potions and witchcraft from her

Muzi: that's why im saying its over i dont trust her anymore shes not loyal

Jay: good now that you two are done il ruff her up a bit no one messes with my brother and gets away with it

***they all chuckled right then baba and two guards holding jase walked in jase was out of it the boys stood up and rushed after them they

got to the white room and the guards put him on another bed and they left... muzi checked him up at least he was back to normal he also took some blood samples after he was done with everything they let him rest and the bothers went back to the lounge while baba and pops went to the study ***

Pops: where did you find him

Baba: where this whole beast thing started

***Pops looked confused ***

Pops: where is that

Baba: back to the cave where mkhulu went to acquire this mystical beast from

Pops: and how the hell did nkosi know where it is

Baba: the beast knew where it was born

Pops: things are out of control baba the things jase did to that boy nathi its out of this world

baba: what did the beast do

Pops: it ripped the throat of the other boy that was with nathi and it cut open nathi and ripped out all his internal organs with its bare hands then cut his head off and ran out

baba: things weren't supposed to get this far but nooo that boy nathi had to provoke the beast by taking kedi what i have just learned is that jase and jay's beast is more dangerous than ours and we need to watch them closely

Pops: did you find that boy's head

Baba: he buried it in that cave

Pops: why would he do that

Baba: it was the only way he would go back to normal physically (he sighed) it's more like a sacrifice to the witchdoctor once the beast reaches that level or more

Pops: but the witch doctor is dead and no one took after him

Baba: he may be dead but his spirit still rooms around in that cave....when i also turned like nkosi i went to that cave with the head of that son of a bitch that killed your sister and i found his spirit there and it told me what to do and where to bury that head so that i can change back

Pops: you never told me this before

baba: now you know

Pops: this is really messed up

baba: you can say that again

*** MEANWHILE....jase woke up with a banging headache he looked around and scanned the room after a while he realised he was at home in the white room down in the basement he pulled out the drip and got off the bed and tried to walk out until he saw kedi laying on another hospital bed in that room then he went to her and he held her hand and brushed her baby bump with his other hand and the baby moved

for the first time he got startled abit and he brushed her belly again and it moved again tears fell down his cheeks he couldn't believe it he stayed with her a bit then he left the room and went upstairs to his bedroom and took a long shower and also brushed his teeth even though his gums were painful then he got dressed in clean clothes and took the bloodied ones and he went downstairs and heard the tv playing in the lounge and he went there and found the guys sitting in there drinking beers***

Jay: how are feeling bafo

Jase: like i was hit by a train

Snakes: im glad you're ok

he went to sit down and took the beer from muzi and gulped it all down

Jase: did they touch her muzi

muzi knew what he was really asking

Muzi: no

then jase breathed out loud with relief while looking down he felt tears threatening his eyes but he fought them back

Jase: will they be ok

Muzi: yeah

Jase: when will you take her out of the white room

Muzi: in two hours time

*** jase just nodded then silence filled the room***

KEDI'S POV

***i opened my eyes slowly i was seeing blurred visions then i closed them again and opened them again and i scanned the room and i didn't see mandla or nathi i sat up and realised i was in jase's bedroom i looked at my right side and

he was sitting on a chair looking at me my heart raised up i looked away quickly he was looking like the jase i know not like the jase i saw last night i needed to pee so i got off the bed and i felt dizzy instantly i held my head cause it was heavy so i closed my eyes then i felt hands holding me i quickly opened my eyes and he was holding me tight even though i feel safe in his arms but im also scared of him i couldn't even look him in the eyes***

Jase: did you want to go to the bathroom

***he asked with a deeper voice and i just nodded and he picked me up bridal style and he took me to the bathroom and put me down then walked out and closed the door on his way out i peed then flushed and i brushed my teeth and also showered after i was done i wrapped myself with a towel and went back to the bedroom and took my toiletries and a bra,underwear and a simple dress and i went back to the bathroom and i did my things after i

was done i went back to the bedroom and he was sitting on a couch that is in the bedroom with a tray on his lap with a plate of food i attempted to walk to the bed but he spoke with that newly found deeper voice of his***

Jase: come sit and eat

i changed the direction and went to sit next to him and he gave me the tray and i ate gosh i didn't realise that i was this hungry after i was done he took the tray and plate out and i went to the bed and got under the covers after a while he came back and sat on that chair and looked at me

Jase: sit up and lets talk

***i just kept quiet ***

Jase: please kedi talk to me say anything please you know i can't handle your silent treatment it drives me crazy

Me: it wasn't a dream or was it?

he took a deep breath

Jase: no it wasn't

Me: did you and jay kill my sister thato

he just froze and looked at me

Me: did you and jay kill my sister

Jase: no

Me: please don't lie to me

Jase: I'm not

Me: mandla said you did

Jase: mandla

Me: he..he was the one that was with nathi

Jase: and he told you jay and i killed your sister

Me: yes

Jase: and you believed him

Me: aren't you the same khumalo brothers who thato stole diamonds from and you kidnapped her and beat her up then shot her and dumped

her in the bush

he just looked at me with a look i didn't understand.. i wiped my tears

Jase: AND YOU BELIEVE HIM OVER ME RIGHT
ME: WHY WOULDN'T I HE SEEMED TO KNOW
MORE ABOUT YOU THAN I DO....HE SEEMED
TO KNOW ABOUT HOW EVIL AND DANGEROUS
YOUR FAMILY IS

***jase just chuckled and stood up and looked
at me with a hard face***

Jase: i dont give a fuck if you believe me or not
the truth is i didn't kill thato yes she stole from
us and yes we beat her up but we let her live
and the mandla you are talking about we dont
know him (he took a deep breath)i thought us
talking will be about what you saw last night so
that i can explain things not you accusing me of
shit i know nothing of nx

***then he walked out of the bedroom i know i

should be asking him about what i saw last night but i just couldn't cause what i care to know now is whether him and jay killed thato i know i shouldn't believe mandla after all he threatened to kill me if i talk to the police but why would he lie like that or was it to make me hate and leave jase and be with nathi? But again what if what he said its truei just cried myself to sleep i woke up to someone shaking me so i opened my eyes and it was jase he held a tray with a plate ***

Jase: wake up and eat

***i just shook my head i just wanted to be left alone everything is just too much for me i wouldn't be surprised if i miscarry i can't take this anymore i was just told the man i love wholeheartedly killed my beloved sister then i saw the same man i love wholeheartedly turned into something horrifying how does one come back from that ***

Jase: you need to eat remember you're not eating only for yourself

***i sat up and took the plate and forced myself to eat i didn't even finish the food i just wanted him to leave after i was done he left with the tray and i changed to my pyjamas and went back to bed after a while the door opened and he got in and closed the door and took off his clothes and got into bed ***

Me: please go sleep in the spare bedroom

Jase: why

he said that giving me a bad look

Me: i dont want to share a bed with you

Jase: mmmmlook you're my fiancee so there's no where in hell im sleeping in a spare bedroom and another thing dont go around saying the engagement is off cause its not

***he said that getting into the covers and switching off the side lamp i also got in and i

moved far from him and closed my eyes all of a sudden i felt his hand grabbing me from behind and pulling me towards him i tried to get off his grip but it was tight he held me tight and he rubbed my belly im uncomfortable with him being this close to me and im also scared of him but at the same time i also feel safe with his arms around me i dont even know if it makes sense i think i fell asleep cause i opened my eyes cause i felt something or someone watching me sleep so i switched on my side lamp and boom that thing i saw last night with blood all over it was standing next to the bed with blood dripping all over it i felt my whole life flashing right in front of my eyes i stretched my arm to shake jase to wake up but it looks like he wasn't next to me i turned my head to his side and he wasn't there but his pillow was soaked in blood so i quickly pulled off the covers from his side and where he slept was also soaked with blood i turned my head and that thing was

walking towards me slowly growling showing its bloodied teeth with some blood dripping from its mouth i just screamed my lungs out trying to get out of bed but i couldn't it was like someone or something was pulling me back to the bed so i closed my eyes and screamed for help i called for jase to help me...i cried for God to help me or someone to help me until i heard jase voice screaming and begging for me to open my eyes i tried but i couldn't but after a while i eventually opened them and he was kneeling next to me looking terrified i looked where that thing was and it wasn't there and i looked at the pillow and there was no blood i just busted out in a loud cry jase wrapped his arms around me and held me tight rocking me back and forth i was even shaking ****

Jase: its ok my heart it was just a dream

i continued to cry until i dozed off

[08/06, 07:58] Nor: Diary ya kedi:the chozen one

INSERT.....49

.

.

.

JASE'S POV

***i couldn't sleep the rest of the night the way kedi was screaming my name and asking me to help her and shaking broke my heart into pieces i know what she was dreaming about i saw it in her eyes when she finally woke up i kept holding her tight and whispering that it was just a dream... i love kedi more than anything but now i think my love for her is just out of this world, uncontrollable and dangerous the way i love her now if she wakes up and tell me its over i swear il kill her then kill myself without thinking twice

thats how dangerous my love for her is now...i got out of bed without waking her up and i opened the curtains and window and i took a shower,lotioned and got dressed and went downstairs to the kitchen to make her something to eat i know there are maids in the house but this morning i wanted to make her breakfast myself***

Ma: how are you feeling

i turned to look at her

Me: il live ma

Ma: ok so how is she

Me: traumatized she kept having nightmares all night

Ma: eish..did you two talk about it

Me: not yet but we will

i couldn't tell her the real truth that's between me and my heart

Ma: just be patient with her

Me: i will ma i have to be

Ma: ok let me go wake those lazy brothers of yours they promised to help me with the garden

Me: and where is the garden boy

Ma: i gave him a day off

i laughed gosh this woman mara only she can do this to us make us work our asses off even though they are people who are paid to do that

Ma: mmm laugh you're lucky you have important things to deal with if not you'd be joining them

she stood on her toes and i bend down a bit and she kissed my forehead and cupped my face

Ma: be strong for her and promise me you won't let her go no matter what..even though she

might want to leave promise you wont let it happen

Me: i promise ma i promise

Ma: good now let me go wake up those lazy bodies

she walked out of the kitchen and i finished up with the breakfast and i went upstairs to wake kedi up and i heard ma shouting threatening to beat up jay if he doesn't wake up next it will be muzi and snakes...i just laughed...i went to our bedroom and kedi wasn't in bed then i heard the shower running so i sat down on the couch and waited for her after a while she came out all dressed up ok

Me: let go downstairs your breakfast is ready

Kedi: can i have it here

she said with a low voice

Me: no now lets go

***i took her hand and she flinched eish that

broke my heart anyway i pulled her out of the bedroom and we went downstairs we went to sit outside at the back porch and i went back inside to the kitchen and came back with our breakfast...we sat and ate in complete silence after we were done i took the plates back and came back and i sat next to her***

Me: i was born with it...i didn't ask for it i was born with it its inside of me...i can't take it out no one can take it out the only way to free myself from it is if i die that's why we learned to control it and not for it to control us...only the men in the family from my great great great grandfathers leanage have itits a bit complicated and a long story which i will tell you some other day what i want you to know is it can never hurt you under any circumstances(i took a deep breath) it has never reached that level before...i have never changed form ever before the fact that you were abducted and that he might hurt you or my

baby woke the beast in me in full force i
couldn't control it i know i could have fought
harder to control it but i didn't i was way too
angry and the worse part is it feeds of my anger
so you can imagine how angry i was for me to
change form like that

***ok she doesn't even look at me or look
interested to what im saying to her***

Me: my heart please say something

***she kept quiet busy fiddling with her fingers i
sighed and we both kept quiet***

Kedi: did they force themselves on me

Me: no they didn't muzi checked and said you're
fine

then she kept quiet again

Kedi: what happened to them

***i kept quiet and looked down eish i didn't
expect this question so soon***

Kedi: will my baby be born with it

i guess she got her answer with me keeping quiet since she didn't repeat the question

Me:yeah but only if its a boy

Kedi: why do you have it

Me: it protects us and our family from danger

then she kept quiet again busy fiddling with her fingers so i held her hand and she flinched eish

Me: kedi il never hurt or harm you you're my life if i hurt or harm you il be harming myself like i said the beast cant hurt you cause you own my heart

Kedi: im scared jase this is just too much for one to handle

Me: i love you kedi im sorry you had to witness that but its still me your king the only change is that you know more about me

she kept quiet and i pulled her towards me her body tensed up but i didn't let her go i held her tight until she relaxed a bit

Kedi: how's ntombi

Me: shes fine she will be discharged later today

Kedi: ok

Me: about your sister i swear jay and i didn't kill her kedi infact she helped us get our diamonds back we knew she was lied to and used

Kedi: mandla said he only made it out alive cause thato and mroza didn't snitch on him

Me: what do you mean

Kedi: i think hes the one that introduced thato to mroza cause i think he was mrozaz partner

Me: mmmm i see

Kedi: i remember he threatened me after thato was found dead that if i told the police what i know he'll kill me if the people who killed thato

dont get to me first...i was soo scared jase i was all alone

i swear if that bastard was still alive I'd hunt him down and make him suffer more than i did with sam

Me: im sorry you had to go through that my heart the truth is we didn't kill your sister we made a deal with her to give us mroza and his partner if he shows up and she did give us mroza but when we got there we didn't find her then the next day jay saw in the newspaper that she was found dead in some bush

Kedi: then who killed her jase

Me: dont worry il find out

***she wiped her tears and kept quiet while she fiddled with her fingers ***

Me: you do believe that me and jay had nothing to do with her death right

Kedi: i dont know jase i guess i have to believe

you...the last time i spoke to her its like she knew she wont comeback she said if she doesn't make it back i should leave soshanguve immediately cause i wont be safe there

Me: i guess she knew she was about to betray mroza and his partner

***she kept quiet as if she just realised something ***

Kedi: no no no

she said standing up

Me: what

Kedi: what if mandla is the one that killed her i remember he lied to the police and painted thato as mrozass partner where else he was the one that introduced her to him...that that son of bitch he killed her thats why he threatened that if i told the police the truth he'll kill mehe killed her....he killed her then he lied that it was you...he killed her jase

she was crying while saying all this she was even shaking i stood up quickly and held her tight while she cried it broke my heart hearing her cry like this that bastard is lucky hes dead....i pulled her towards the couch and i made her sit on my lap with her head on my chest i held her tight while rubbing her back gently after a while she calmed down and i pulled her face up and wiped her tears then i perked her lips

Me: i love you and you gonna be ok im here for you and i swear im never letting you go ever ok

***she just nodded while sniffing i perked her lips again then pulled her to lay her head back on my chest ***

Me: next weekend you'll have to go and visit your uncles i need to pay lobola for you

Kedi: cant it wait jase im not ready to go back there

Me: no...if it wasn't for this lobola thing i would

drag you to home affairs tomorrow and wife
you but i want to do things the right way

Kedi: its too soon jase

***i pushed off me gently and looked at her with
a hard face***

Me: what do you mean too soon

Kedi: i just found out some things about you
and who might have killed thato and i still need
to get over what i saw please dont rush me

***i see what shes doing and its not gonna
happen***

Me: i have a beast in me kedi and its not going
anywhere its not something i chose ok i was
born with it whether i give you time to "get over
what you saw" its still wont change anything....i
still haven't gotten over the fact that i have a
dangerous beast in me its been 32 years now
for Gods sake and what makes you think you'll
get over it within a couple of weeks or months

cause it will still be here after you "get over it" all you have to do is accept that its part of me and lets move on...its not a hobby or an obsession i can get over or an addiction i can seek help to overcome its something i was born with its part of me

***she looked away i put my fingers under her chin and turned her head to look at me but she looked down ***

Me: look at me

she didn't

Me: please my heart look at me

she did

Me: i know its not easy kedi trust me i know but our love is strong enough to overcome challenges that come our way we can beat this we are stronger together

Kedi: i can't sleep jase i see it in my dreams it tries to attack me

Me: what you saw isn't exactly normal you're traumatised but i swear kedi my beast wont hurt you it can hurt anyone else except you...you own my heart and it knows that and to tell you the truth it has accepted that you are the queen of my heart and that i love you more than i love myself

Kedi: im scared jase

it came out as a whisper and i pulled her towards me and i smashed my lips on hers at first she didn't kiss me back but she eventually did even though she didn't kiss me back wholeheartedly but its better than nothing the kiss went on and on until i deepened it she tried to pull out but i didn't let her i kissed her hard and it got heated i felt mntungwa get hard i pushed her to lay down on the couch on her back and i patted her legs and got between them without my lips leaving hers...she pulled out and pushed me back a bit

Kedi: jase you want your grandfather to catch us again

Me: i dont care im sure hes done worse when he was my age

***i said that kissing her again ***

Kedi: jase stop can you at least respect his house

Me: fine but we will continue with this later in the bedroom il make sure you sleep like a baby tonight

i said that giving her my naughty smile as for mntungwa he was twitching he just wanted to bury himself inside of her but i have to stop now before i have her right here and now...i kissed her again and i got off her and sat down and i pulled her towards me and she layed her head on my chest and i held her tight...God i love this woman

Me: our cub moved yesterday in the early hours

Kedi: i also felt him/her move this morning when i was taking a shower

Me: i guess hes doing ok and im glad

Kedi: i hope i make it to full term bad things keep happening to me im scared one day il wake up and....

i interrupted her

Me: stop ok nothing will happen to our cub we just have to make sure you're stress free and happy

***i pushed her face up and i kissed her i deepened the kiss and the next thing she was laying on her back and i already pulled my jean and boxers down and i pulled her underwear to the side and entered her swiftly i felt her pussy walls expand thats how tight she is i cursed in a whisper and she moaned then i put my hand on her mouth and i hit it hard, fast and deeper after a while of me pounding on top of her i felt her body tense up and i knew she was about to cum

and i wasnt that far i increased my pace and a few seconds later i felt her body shake a minute later i also came hard my body trembled and i shot my juices inside of her and i groaned lightly i made sure i dont collapse on top of her i didn't wanna squash my cub she was showing a bit now..i kissed her lips and her forehead then i took off my golf shirt and my vest then i wore my golf shirt again and i pulled out of her slowly and i used my vest to wipe her clean and myself ...we are lucky no one walked in on us but shit that was good yho***

Me: let me go and get us something to drink

kedi: ok

***i kissed her lips and brushed her baby bump and i went inside with a smile on my face eish the truth is i never expected for things to turn out like this i expected her to tell me its over and we'd have a fight and she would tell me she hated me and she would pack her things and

attempt to leave then il do the unthinkable and i shoot her and then kill myself....thats how i saw everything play out especially when she asked me what happened to nathi and that mandla guy and i kept quiet i thought she was gonna call me a murderer and a freak or worse and scream at me shit i guess im one lucky son of a bitch to have her in my life she completes me now im making a vow to myself to never hurt her especially cheating on her ive rather go to bab' dlamini to give me muthi to make my dick to wake up or get hard towards her alone thats how serious i am with the cheating part...i get to the kitchen and as i open the fridge i hear some people arguing outside so i went to check whats going on only to find this three fools arguing ***

Me: and now

they turned and looked at me

Muzi: jay is doing the whole fucken thing wrong

Jay: as if you know how to do a garden snakes:
will you two stop we need to finish this so i can
go get ntombi

Muzi: you smell like sex

Me: voetsek

we all laughed

Jay: so i take it you two have talked

Me: yeah we did i explained things

Muzi: im glad

Snakes: me too the beast needs to go back to
sleep for a while now

Jay: a year or two even three will do

we laughed

Me: she said that guy that was with nathi was
her late sisters boyfriend and mrozas partner

Jay: what

me: yeah and he told her we are the ones that

killed her

Muzi: please tell me she didn't believe that

me: at first i think he got through to her but earlier on she realized that hes the one that actually killed her

Snakes: hes lucky hes dead

Me: thats what i also thought when she told me he once threatened to kill her after her sister was killed

Jay: bastard

Me: but for now she's still trying to stomach what she saw

Jay: she'll come around dont worry that girl loves you bafo

***we continued to talk a bit until i left them there and i took some drinks and i went to kedi and she was sleeping on the couch i woke her up and we cuddled on the couch later on we went to shower and dinner was served and we

ate ntombi also joined us it was fun we ate while we were taking about stupid shit and laughing but my heart was a bit quiet and distant she would fake a smile here and there but she never took part to our conversations anyway after our dinner we went to bed and we had a couple of rounds of making love i gave it to her like never before if she wasn't pregnant I'd say i just planted my seed in her...after a couple of rounds we fell asleep tired as hell i woke up to her screaming i tried to shake her to wake up but all of a sudden she jumped out of bed trying to run away i quickly jumped out of bed too and i grabbed her before she could reach the door and i held her tight we were both still naked after our love making God she was shaking and crying ***

Me: my heart it was just a dream you're safe try to calm down remember you're pregnant

***she quickly moved out of my arms and put her hand between her legs on her pussy and

took it out and looked at it then she did breath in and out but she was still shaking eish***

Kedi: i woke up and it was staring at me close to my face i can still smell the blood on its face...im scared jase

eish i picked her up bridal style and went to sit on the couch and she sat on my lap and i held her tight she was shaking i also put my hand on her pussy to check if shes bleeding and thank God when i took out my hand it was clean....God what have i done.... why did i let her see the beast She shouldn't have seen it...she shouldn't have seen the beast i thought to myself

.

[08/06, 07:59] Nor: Diary ya kedi:the chozen one

INSERT.....50

.

.

.

***KEDI'S POV ***

i woke up with a mother of all headaches i tried to move but jase tightened his hand around my body from the back and pulled me closer to his body and i felt his hard dick poking my ass and remember we are both still naked

Jase: i love you my heart

he said that with a very deep sexy and sleepy voice

Me: i love you too

Jase: you scared me last night

Me: im sorry i didn't mean to i was also scared

Jase: we can't loose our baby kedi i dont think il survive it..I've already lost one i can't loose this

one too

i just kept quiet i can feel pain in his voice

Jase: tell me what to do to take away your nightmares to assure you that my beast will never hurt you

Me: i dont know jase

Jase: all you need to do is believe me that it will never hurt you and im sure you'll never dream of it

Me: its not that simple jase i shouldn't have seen what i saw its one thing for someone to tell you they have a mystical beast inside of them and its another thing to see it with your own eyes

Jase: i know my heart i know

then he pulled my leg up and entered me gosh mara jase i moaned out loud while he groaned he moved in and out of me slowly while biting my ear gently

Me: jaaase

Jase: yes my heart

Me: ahhh

Jase: i love you kedi

Me: i...love. ..ahhh yess jase

he suddenly increased his pace gosh he hit it hard i felt like i was on cloud nine then he pulled out and got out of bed and pulled me by my leg to the edge of the bed and while he was standing and he opened my legs wide and kept them in that position and he bend down and entered me slowly yeses the things he did to my pussy was out of this world we were both screaming each other's names while he hit it hard and good*

Jase: look at me my heart

***i opened my eyes and looked at him cause i was closing them trying to take in all that he was doing to me he slowed down ***

Jase: i love you kedi i fucken love you woman

Me: i love you...ahhh tooo

Jase: we will get through this ok nothing is gonna break us up or come between us il never let that happen

i just nodded while biting my lower lip then he increased his pace again and i moaned out loud the only things you could hear in this bedroom was our loud moans and the loud sound of our body slapping each other i think i came two times before we both came at the same time

Jase: shit that was the best morning glory ever

he said that pulling out then he went to the bathroom and came back with a warm towel and wiped me then he picked me up and we went to shower after two more rounds of love making in the shower we were done we lotioned and got dressed then i made the bed

Me: when are we going back home

Jase: we are home my heart

Me: mxm jase man

***he laughed ***

Jase: on sunday

Me: why

Jase: because we are on our mini holiday

me: ohh ok but what about work jase

jase: you'll still find your job waiting for you
when we go back actually you know what we
will talk about this later for now lets go
downstairs so that i can feed the two of you

***ok i just kept quiet and we went downstairs
to the lounge and we found muzi, snakes,
ntombi and jay eating ***

Me: morning guys

Muzi: sure

Snakes: morning to you too

Jay: aow kotiza

Ntombi: hey sisters

i sat down next to ntombi

Jase: majita and suster

Ntombi: hi

Guys: sure

***he came and sat next to me pulling me
towards him and i layed my head on his chest

Ntombi: entlek where is Natasha i haven't seen
her since i came back from the hospital

Muzi: with her new bestie busy whoring around

Ntombi: new bestie?

Jay: your mother

Ntombi: ooh no forget about her muzi shes a
lost course now

***jay and snakes laughed ***

Muzi: dont worry about it now i see karma has visited me through her for hurting nomathemba...now i know i made the biggest mistake of my life by leaving noma for natasha and im now gonna live to regret it i wish i listened to you jay

Jay: what has happened has happened you can't change the past but you can make things right with her

Muzi: shes engaged to some bastard now

Me : you stalking her

Jase: I'd also stalk you if i messed up and then realized that i just let go of a rare and precious jewel because i was a dick

Muzi: rub it in kray

Jase: voetsek dont call me that in front of her

***muzi laughed ***

Me: kray?

Jase: never call me that ever its my street creed name

he said that with a serious face and i just nodded i have suddenly developed this fear for jase whenever he gets serious or frowns or gets mad or angry i get scared that he might change form again

Jay: as long as shes not married to that guy you still have a chance you can still win her back im sure she still loves you bafo

Jase: you see why i want to pay lobola for you asap...i wanna make you mine officially so that other nikkas out there know you are fully taken

***jase whispered in my ear...mxm he had to use what is being said here to his advantage ***

Jase: let me go take our breakfast

Me: no its fine il go

Jase: i dont mind my heart relax

he said standing up

Jay: enjoy it while it last kotiza cause after you give birth you'll be taking care of the baby,jase and the three of us so enjoy it while it last

Me: well in that case hurry up baby im starving

they all laughed out loud then jase left smiling like a retard after a while he came back with two plates and he went back and came back with two cups and mine was rooibos tea while his was coffee we ate while they taked about useless things that were hilarious after we were done eating he took the plates and cups back to the kitchen and he came back and sat next to me and pulled me towards him and i layed my head on his chest again while he brushed my back gently kissing the top of my head every now and then jeez this guy doesn't know hes turning me on by doing this i can already feel my clit twitching

Me: stop brushing my back like that im already

wet down there

i whispered to him and he chuckled while squeezing me a bit tight then he lifted my chin up and kissed me on my lips then he broke it and whispered while looking into my eyes

Jase: i love you

Me: i love you too

i whispered back and he just smiled showing his dimples gosh i just melted...he may have some mystical beast inside him and i may be traumatised and busy having nightmares cause i saw him in that scary form and i may be shit scared of him now but damn this guy is handsome shem and his dimples eish

Jay: get a room you two

Jase: tsek

then we heard footsteps of heels coming towards the lounge

Snakes: here comes trouble

it was Natasha walking in looking glamorous with that long weave, six inch heels and those long nails

Natasha: hello mense (people)

we kept quiet

Muzi: where have you been

Natasha: baby i send you a message remember telling you il be crashing at aunt bongis house giving you and your family sometime to deal with what happened

Jay: the devil is a liar...if you were send here to bring chaos to this family Natasha it wont work

*** ntombi and i laughed as for me i couldn't help it especially the way he said it im sure ntombi couldn't help it either ***

Muzi: natasha are you a witch

***haw bathong how can muzi ask her that ***

Natasha: muzi why are you embarrassing me

like this

Muzi:EMBARRASSING YOU NATASHA...YOU ARE MY FUCKEN FIANCEE YOU WERE SUPPOSED TO BE BY MY SIDE THROUGH OUT THE WHOLE SHIT THAT HAPPENED BUT INSTEAD YOU CHOSE TO HANGOUT WITH YOU'RE NEW BFF DOING GOD KNOWS WHAT AROUND...WHAT KIND OF A WOMAN ARE YOU IM GLAD YOU SHOWED ME YOUR TRUE SELF BEFORE I MADE THE BIGGEST MISTAKE OF MY FUCKEN LIFE BY MARRYING YOU

he was shouting gosh i was shocked and surprised to see muzi losing it like this i guess the men in this family have other hidden side they hardly or never show to others

***NARRATED ***

***muzi was sick and tired of always giving

Natasha the benefit of doubt and overlooking all her shit but this time around he was done he wished he never left noma for natasha he doesn't even know why now he knows that it was true when people say you dont know how precious a jewel is until you loose it***

Natasha: can we talk in private baby please

Muzi: why

Natasha: muzi please you are making our enemies happy by discussing our private matters openly like this

Jay: what enemies are you talking

Natasha: ooh please jay we both know all of y'all dont like me and you also dont approve of my relationship with muzi you prefer this nobody over me

she said that pointing at kedi jase stood up quickly before kedi can stop her

Jase: what did you call her

Natasha: please jase you deserve better and we both know shes not the best you dated well known models and celebrities and for you to settle for her....

she didn't finish her statement cause jase slapped her so hard she fell on her bum she held her cheek in disbelief that jase just did that

Jase: INSULT HER AGAIN AND IL FUCKEN KILL YOU...DARE ME BITCH AND NOT EVEN MUZI WILL STOP ME FROM CHOPPING YOU WHILE YOU STILL BREATHING INTO PIECES AND FEEDING YOUR USELESS BODY TO THE DOGS YOU FUCKEN WHORE

*** he roared and everyone kept quiet cause they know Natasha fucked up big time by insulting jases heart as for kedi she was shocked and scared to jases outburst the only thing that was on her mind was what if jase changes form again tears started running down

her cheeks with fear written on her face...all that was running on her mind was jase is angry and he said the beast feeds on his anger now what if he changes form again...jay noticed kedi was shaking and crying and he called jase he turned and he pointed at kedi with his head the moment jase saw kedi he immediately calmed down and rushed to her while ntombi and Natasha started exchanging words and ntombi standing up and ready to beat the shit out of Natasha while jay and snakes got between them it was just chaos nje luckily ma and baba and pops were not in ***

Jase: my heart im sorry about what she said dont take it to heart

kedi didn't care about what that bitch Natasha said she knows shes way better than her she was scared of the beast that it might come out since jase is angry

Kedi: please calm down jase please don't be

angry im not hurt by her words shes just a bitter bitch

jase just sighed looking down cause he just realised what was happening he pulled her to him and held her tight and whispered in her ear

Jase: im not angry my heart im just pissed no one and i mean no one insults you especially in front of me and i just let them be just like that

Kedi: i dont want you getting angry jase its ok im not hurt by her words

*** jase pushed her off him gently and kissed her***

Jase: kedi i can control the beast it only reached that level because of nathi trust me you'll never see me in that state again unless your life is in danger my heart

he whispered to her and she just nodded

Natasha: so muzi you just gonna sit there and

let them insult me like this what kind of a man
are you

***she was crying ***

Muzi: the kind that just realised that you are
actually a whore you think i dont know what you
were doing this past two days the only reason
that you are still alive is because you are not
worth it

Jay: now Natasha leave us in peace we were
actually enjoying ourselves before you came

she looked at kedi with hate in her eyes

Natasha: you think you've made it in life neh
well let me tell you something jase doesn't
commit hes gonna leave your sorry poor ass
before you can even blink

***kedi was boiling inside she couldn't
understand why this chick hated her cause they
just met on Friday and they barely said two
words to each other enough was enough for her

she felt anger boiling inside of her from the pit of her stomach then she stood up quickly looking at Natasha***

Kedi: what is your problem Natasha huh

Natasha: ooh please girly why would i have a problem with you you are not worth it

jase also stood up and tried to push kedi to sit down but she stood firm looking at Natasha*

Jase: my heart shes not worth it

Kedi: you know natasha now i see it you are just a bitter bitch you think you're better than me right well girl at least im not fake like you without that fake hair and fake nail and those fake eyelashes and those heels and not forgetting that mud you just smeared on your face you're just a fake bitter bitch with just a huge ass and a loose vagina

Jase: KEDI STOP IT I TOLD SHES NOT WORTH

IT

Guys: yho

Ntombi: tell her girl

Natasha: fuck you...you think you're better than me well youre not you are....

kedi interrupted her

Kedi: im not a gold digging, man stealing whore like you you're so fucken dumb you stole a man from another woman and you can't even keep him muzi can do better than you i also dont understand why he settled for a thing like you

***everyone was shocked at kedi they've never seen this side of her before she was spitting fire Natasha was livid that she was being told shit by the very same girl she looked down on the very same girl that wasn't on her league she lost it and attempted to slap kedi and that was her mistake cause jase quickly grabbed her hand and punched her on the face hard and she

fell on her back***

Jase: MUZI DEAL WITH THIS SHIT BEFORE I DO IT FOR YOU

***kedi stood there shocked as hell she couldn't believe that jase just punched a woman like that worse part muzi's fiancée in front of him and he isn't even moved one bit as for natasha she just realised she pushed muzi too far cause he just let jase slap and punch her like that she knows what she did was wrong she just let bongi poison her into cheating on him with those two rich men yes they gave her enough money to last her for months but now she can tell by his attitude towards her that he knows what she's been up to... now she just lost a man who put up with her bullshit and treated her like she matters and was also willing to marry her because of her stupidity she cried holding her nose since it was bleeding...muzi rushed to her and dragged her out then jase pulled kedi out of the lounge to their bedroom upstairs ***

Jase: whats wrong with you are you out of your mind i thought i warned you to think before you act

kedi: so i should have sat there and let her insult me

Jase: KEDI YOU'RE FUCKEN PREGNANT YOU HAVE ENOUGH SHIT YOU'RE DEALING WITH YOU DONT NEED ANYMORE STRESS DID YOU HAVE TO GO DOWN TO HER LEVEL

he shouted then kedis hormones started kicking in and she started crying

Kedi: dont shout at me jase

***she said that between her cries jase walked to her and pulled her to his chest and held her tight while brushing her back gently ***

Jase: im sorry for shouting at you i didn't mean to

kedi: you did it on purpose and you said you'll never shout at me again

jase: haow i said im sorry my heart

he pulled her to the bed and they cuddled with her head on his chest and they kept quiet for a while ...kedi was busy wiping her tears

Jase: im sorry ok

***kedi just nodded ***

Jase: we good now

Kedi: yeah

***he kissed her forehead ***

Jase: i never knew you can be ghetto if you want to

Kedi: im not ghetto jase

Jase: yes you are ...you know you never cease to amaze me

Kedi: what about you

Jase: i told you il castrate anyone who hurts you or even tries to hurt you

Kedi: i feel sorry for muzi in fact im worried about him

Jase: he'll be fine its Natasha you should be worried about shes in deep shit yesterday muzi and snakes found out she wasn't at bongi's place instead she was with some rich sugar daddies in some hotel

Kedi: what

Jase: enough about her...i love you my ghetto beautiful wife

Kedi: im not ghetto

jase: i beg to differ

****kedi tried to get out of bed but jase tightened the grip around her and started tickling her with his other hand and kedi started laughing and screaming for jase to stop he eventually stopped and jase got on top of her and started kissing her while pulling her dress up***

. [08/06, 15:06] Nor: Diary ya kedi:the chozen one

INSERT.....51

.

.

.

KEDI'S POV

***its been almost four weeks since we came back home from our "mini holiday " in kzn and i must say things between me and jase have been good i have nothing bad to complain about except for jase being overly protective and controlling sometimes it gets too me and i loose it but i end up in bed screaming his name while hes busy pounding on top of me i can't

stay mad at him for too long this days cause he always gives me what im constantly craving for being his dick yeses this hormones and pregnancy turned me into a sex addict i want it anywhere and anytime and jase doesn't complain but hey what man would complain to such anyway yah things have been great between us and im happy....i had those nightmares every night since we left kzn and it was taking a toll at me and that stressed jase the hell out but two weeks back it was a saturday jase came back from wherever he went and he just begged me to have an open mind to what he was about to tell me and ask of me i told him il try i guess it was good enough for him cause he dropped a bomb on me he told me he went to his family's traditional healer called bab'dlamini to consult about my nightmares problem and he gave him some herbs to give to me another one was in a bottle he said i must drink it and that it wont harm the

baby and another one he said i should bath with it and they will help me i refused but you know how persuasive jase can be i later agreed when he used the "baby card" on me i used them but i didn't speak to him for four days cause thats how long i was supposed to drink them but the truth is the nightmares stopped even though they didn't stop completely but i can sleep peacefully every now and then without dreaming of it attacking me or covered in blood ai what can i say anyway since last week jase has been working alot leaving at the early hours of the morning and coming home late at night we hardly even spend time together i talked to him about it but he said hes catching up on work and he also needs to push on some work since we are going on a holiday after he pays lobola but i think its more than that i mean this days he even sleeps outside he would call me and say he has a meeting out of town and he'll be back the next day hes alot destructive this

days hes moody and he has a bit of an attitude i hate...most of the nights he goes MIA on me i cry myself to sleep i know sometimes my hormones can be evil.... i know ive gained a bit of weight lately and im a bit moody but if he doesn't want me anymore he should just leave me and just let me go ...hes been begging and explaining that hes not cheating and that he loves me and only me and that i should believe him when he says its just work but the truth is once bitten twice shy so i dont believe him...ohhh and concerning my trip back home and lobola thing we are waiting for jay hes been out of the country for three weeks now to Germany on some business atleast thats what jase told me so we will commence with everything when he comes back right now im at work and jase is probably not coming back home tonight again cause he went on his out of town meetings again mxm worst part is he doesn't even try to explain the type of work

thats keeping him away but he would just use his authoritative tone with me saying he can't discuss that with me i should just concentrate on taking care of his son and stop asking him questions he can't answer.....yes im carrying a boy we found out two weeks ago ...my phone rings its jase***

Me: hi

Jase: my heart i miss you

Me: let me guess you're not coming home tonight again right

Jase: my heart please understand its work nothing else

Me: yeah right you think im a fool jase neh you know what let me see if you'll find me waiting for you when you come back

Jase: WHATS THAT SUPPOSED TO MEAN HUH IM OUT HERE WORKING NOT OUT HERE BUSY RUNNING AROUND WITH WHORES AND

INSTEAD OF BEING SUPPORTIVE YOU FUCKEN RANTING AND THREATENING ME

***he shouted and i just dropped the call and went to the ladies and cried he kept on calling and calling i just put my phone on silent and fixed myself and went back to work and i also disconnected my landline without being noticed i did my work with him calling none stop later on it was knock off time and i packed my things and found my driver waiting for me then i went home i arrived and went to shower and came back downstairs and made myself a light meal my phone flashed a light and i checked it was jase so i let it ring it was still on silent mode and ate then i had an early night i woke up with the need to pee and i checked what time it is on my phone and it was 6h30 shit i usually wake up at 6h00 eish my phone was on silent and i forgot to change it back i also had 50 missed calls from jase and 20 missed calls from a number i didn't know...arrrg anyway i rushed to the

bathroom and peed then took a quick shower and got dressed and did my hair and makeup and changed my phone back to ringing mode and went downstairs and found masibiya busy with breakfast and i greeted her and she gave me my breakfast and i ate quickly said my goodbyes and found my driver waiting for me and i went to work when i got there my phone immediately rang as i sat down it was that unsaved number***

Me: hello

Voice: DO YOU KNOW HOW FUCKEN WORRIED I WAS WHATS WRONG WITH YOU

mxm it was jase i just kept quiet and he also kept quiet i think trying to calm down after a while he spoke he was calm

Jase: im on my way home i love you kedi please dont ever do what you did i didn't sleep a wink last night

Me: ok

Jase: kedi i know its too much cause im hardly at home but my heart please understand that its work nothing else

Me: its ok jase let me get back to work il see you later

he signed and said ok and that he loves me but i didn't say it back i just ended the call and commenced with my work before lunch time an sms came in it was jase he said hes rushing to the office he'll be back around 7pm i just sighed and typed ok and send it and it was lunch time and i went to the cafeteria and had my lunch there with two of my colleagues after that it was back to work and later on it was knock off time and i went home i got there and went to shower and went downstairs to cook after i was done i was craving some hot wings so i called jase but it rang unanswered then i called his office landline and a woman answered

Woman:mr khumalos office palesa speaking

how may i help you

***i felt my body shake with anger so jase didn't fire her so he still kept his ex or present fuck buddy as a PA after he promised he'd let her go after i caught them being all cosy before we left for kzn..i just dropped the call and just cried i had to or else i was gonna pop this baby here and now with this anger brewing inside of me i went to the kitchen and ate my supper alone then dished for him and put his food in the microwave then i rinsed my dirty dish and i went upstairs and changed into my pjs and got under the covers even though it was a bit early but i didn't care....i woke up to someone planting kisses all over my face i knew it was jase his cologne gave him away and i opened my eyes he was smiling but i didn't i pushed him off me and got out of bed and checked the time it was around 9pm i went to the bathroom and came back he was sitting at the edge of the bed ***

Me: so this is 7pm neh

Jase: i was busy with some paper work and by the time i realized what time it was i came straight home

Me: busy with some paper work with palesa right

***he frowned ***

Jase: what does palesa has to do with me busy with work

Me: you promised to let her go now what was she doing in your office

Jase: kedi please stop ok shes my pa nothing more and im not going to fire her cause you feel threatened or insecure and you have nothing to do with my business so dont tell me who to fire

tears rolled down my cheeks with my bottom lip trembling how dare he say that to me

Me: fine

i walked to the door and i felt him grab my arm stopping me

Jase: im sorry im heart i didn't mean for what i said to come out that way i love you kedi and i promised to never cheat on you i made a promise to you and myself i know if i do that you'll leave me and i can't have that ever please believe me kedi

Me: let go of me

Jase: kedi please

Me: jase get you hand off me please

he kept quiet but he didn't let go i tried to yank myself off him but he tightened the grip

Jase: my heart please can we not fight im begging you i just wanna hold you and make love to you please

Me: go make love to your palesa since she comes first to you and it seems shes that important to you im just your nagging fiance who's insecure so just leave me the hell alone

*** i tried to walk away but he pulled me

towards him with force and turned me around to face him he looked angry ***

Jase: what did you just say

Me: let me go

Jase: I ASKED YOU A FUCKEN QUESTION

me: let go of me jason

he breathed hard while looking at me

Jase: kedi i sincerely hope your moods are because of your hormones cause you starting to get on my fucken last nerve manje...i told you im not cheating what more do you want me to say or do huh and palesa is just my pa and nothing is going on between us

Me: let me go jason

Jase: kedi

***it came out as a whisper ***

Me: get your hand off me please

***he looked at me for sometime then let go off

me and i walked out and went to the spare bedroom and got under the covers and cried myself to sleep i woke up with a heavy head and heart and checked the time it was 5h45 in the morning so i decided to wake up and went to the bathroom and peed then i went to the main bedroom and jase wasn't in bed and the bed was made i went to the bathroom and he wasn't there so i showered and got dressed and took my things and i went downstairs to the kitchen and i found him drinking coffee i could tell by the smell and he was busy typing on his laptop while sitting on a barstool i went to the kettle and turned it on and waited for it to finish i could feel his eyes piercing through me the kettle turned off and i made myself some rooibos tea and some toasted bread with butter and i sat down and ate without even looking at him...he really hurt my feelings last night ***

Jase: so you're giving me the silent treatment now its not enough that you walked out on me

and slept in guest bedroom last night now you pretending as if i dont exist

***i kept quiet and continued with my breakfast he eventually gave up talking to me and just kept quiet as well i finished with my breakfast and i put the dishes in the sink and took my things and left i got to work and did what im paid to do the rest of the day was just ok jase didn't even call i guess hes busy with palesa doing got knows what anyway it was knock off time and i took my things and went home i got there and went to shower and i went downstairs and cooked after i was done i dished for him and put them in the microwave then ate washed the dirty dishes and went to sleep in the guest bedroom...things went like this for three more days i didn't see him for those three days i think he would leave early and come back late im saying i think cause im not even sure he comes back home... today is Saturday i woke up feeling really down so i went to the internet and

decided to searched for an apartment yes im moving out i can't be suffering like this where else im not even married to the guy i love him but his sudden distance, mood and traveling ways and his sudden change of attitude is too much im not waiting for him to tell me its over and that he met someone else he loves so yah moving out is the best option for me after i found three apartments that are closer to my work place i call the agent and set up an appointment to view them so we decided to meet up around 12 midday so i got out of bed and went to take a long bath after i was done i got dressed and went downstairs and i found him eating breakfast i didn't greet him i just went passed him and made myself some cereal

Jase: i made you some greasy breakfast

***i just kept quiet and took my bowl and went to the lounge and ate my cereal while watching tv after a while he walked in the lounge looking

angry he took the dstv explora remote and switched it off***

Jase: what is it that i hear that you're searching for an apartment

***i kept quiet ***

Jase: DAMNIT KEDI IM FUCKEN TALKING TO YOU

***i just closed my eyes took a deep breath then opened them again ***

Me: im moving out

Jase: OVER MY FUCKEN DEAD BODY YOU HEAR ME ITS NOT HAPPENING

Me: i wasn't asking for your opinion or approval im telling you im sick and tired of your attitude towards me and our relationship so im not waiting for you to tell me its over and that you met someone better

Jase: kedi

Me: no jase im tired im pregnant i dont need all this im not like all those women who stay in bad relationships and their reason being i love him and im sure he loves me too while they are unhappy as if they will die if they become single so im moving out you'll let me know once you've come back to your senses and grown up

***with that i stood up and tried to walk away but he grabbed my arm tight and roughly pulled me towards him ***

Jase: you're not leaving me kedi you're not moving out even if it means me chaining you to the bed il do it how many times must i tell you im not cheating huh how many times that its just work keeping me busy

Me: by work you mean palesa right

Jase:FUCK IT KEDI ARE YOU FUCKEN DEAF WHY MUST EVERYTHING BE HARD WITH YOU WHY CANT YOU JUST UNDERSTAND AND BELIEVE WHAT IM TELLING YOU FOR ONCE

AND STOP THIS NONSENSE

Me: im moving out jase and there's nothing you can do about it

jase: DARE ME AND YOU'LL SEE WHAT IM CAPABLE OF JUST DARE ME KEDI

me: IM NOT SCARED OF YOU JASON THE WORST THING YOU CAN DO TO ME IS RELEASE YOUR BEAST OR KILL ME

he just shook his head smiling an evil smile then he came close to my face

Jase: you're not moving out period and if you feel like you've grown some balls all of a sudden then dare me and try to even pack your clothes

***then he let go of me and walked away leaving me shaking with fear i sat down... gosh i saw it in his eyes that he meant every word i saw evil in his eyes but not the "beast evil" but it was something else something different khante

what kind of a monster am i engaged to***

.

.

[08/06, 15:43] Nor: INSERT.....52

.

.

.

KEDI'S POV

***i sat here trying to process everything that just happened and trying to stomach what jase just said to me i sat here brushing my belly calming myself down with my eyes closed after a while i felt hands holding my hands and i opened my eyes it was jase he told me to stand up and he helped me up then he held my waist and pulled me towards him and held me tight i was looking down all along he put his hand

under my chin and lifted my face up making me look at him and this eyes i was looking at weren't my jases eyes they were cold as ice even the aura around him was cold the only person i felt like this around before it was his grand father i felt shivers running down my spine i looked away***

Jase: look at me

i did and he had a frown on his face gosh i swear il pee on my self as in now

Jase: dont ever do what you did last night and today i dont care how angry you are at me or pissed off or even hurt but we never ever sleep on separate bedrooms ever do i make myself clear

***i just nodded then he smashed his lips on mine and we kissed at first i didn't but i eventually did when he bit my lower lip after a while he pulled out and he stared into my eyes and i looked down God what happened to my

jase cause this man here is not him...he
brushed my belly ***

Jase: hows my son

Me: hes ok

Jase: mmmh good...lets go upstairs

***he pulled me upstairs to our bedroom and
we got to the bed and we layed on the bed then
he held me from behind while brushing my
belly***

Jase: i hate it when we fight

Me: me too

Jase: then stop fighting me my heart and
please learn to trust me

Me: im just scared jase

Jase: of what

Me: getting hurt

***he kept quiet and continued to brush my
belly***

Jase: you need to trust me kedi haven't i proven enough to you that ive learned my lesson cause really im getting tired of always apologising for my past mistakes and for always reassuring you that im not cheating. ...no infact it pisses me off actually and its getting really boring now an overly insecure woman is a turn off please stop it

***tears came out before i can stop them why is jase like this all of a sudden hes cold its like he doesn't care about my feelings anymore we stayed like this for a while i made sure i dont sniff i cried silently i think i fell asleep cause i woke up when i heard someone shouting i scanned the room and the sound came from the bathroom it was jase he sounded angry ***

Jase: I DONT GIVE A FUCK

he kept quiet *

Jase: LISTEN HERE AND LISTEN GOOD ITS EITHER HIM OR YOUR ENTIRE CREW AND YOU

DONT WANT ME COMING AFTER YOU YOU
KNOW WHAT IM CAPABLE OFF NOW STOP
PISSING ME OFF AND GET ME THAT SON OF A
BITCH

***then i heard a loud bang it sounded like he
punched the wall gosh whats going on with
jase...i saw the door open and i quickly closed
my eyes i felt his lips on my cheek then he
whispered in my ear***

Jase: i love you my heart please trust me

***then he kissed me again on my cheek and i
felt the bedroom door open and close after a
while i woke up and went downstairs to the
kitchen and i ate that breakfast he made while i
was busy reading the news24 on my laptop
then i came across a headline that goes"a new
born baby found in a rubbish bin" i touched my
baby bump thinking of how much il protect him
from harms way but the mother of this new
born baby just threw her baby in a rubbish bin

as if she didn't just carry the baby for nine months nx some mothers deserve a death penalty the are women out there who struggled to conceive and who would give anything to have children and this woman just throws hers away like rubbish nx anyway i dont even read any further i just scrolled down feeling all worked up then another headline appears " well known 15 gang members found slaughtered in a house in Eldorado park " i didn't read any further shame its probably another rival gang who did this i continue to scroll down then another headline "bodies of gang members found all over the city since last week some with bullet wounds and some butchered ohh my God khante whats happening out there yho i just flipped to the entertainment industry and read there after a while i log into Facebook and i go through my timeline i get bored and i decide to go watch a movie in the cinema room***

JASE POV

***everything is just a fucken mess jay left for Germany 3 weeks ago for some mafia shit and snakes also went underground for some work for baba then all of a sudden i got a call when i was at work about to knock off from muzi telling me hes ambushed at his house he was about to get into his car when shots were fired and he was hit but luckily he crawled back to the house and then hit the emergency red button and then the house went on lock mode but those sons of bitches kept on shooting but luckily the doors and Windows of our houses are bullet proofed i guess the neighbours called the police cause when i got there there were police outside so i had to lie and tell them my brother called me and told me one of his neighbours called him and told him shots were

fired next to his gate they asked where he is and i told them in kzn i left them there doing god knows what nx useless bastards anyway i opened the gate and entered then i rushed inside and i punched the code in cause i figured the house was on lock down mode and i got in and rushed to where the trail of blood led and i found him laying there on the floor in the white room right in the basement i picked him up and put him on top of the bed and i took a knife and dug out the bullet on his left side of his stomach and the right side and the other one on his left shoulder since he was still breathing it meant it missed his heart and it looked like the other one slightly missed his head but it just touched his right side of his head and just burned him after i got them out carefully he opened his eyes and started coughing then he whispered the name of the drug i quickly searched for it and i found it then i read the instructions then i injected him on the bullet

wounds and also sedated him and i washed my hands since they had his blood on them then i went to his blood bank cooler and i took his type which is AB+ he has all our blood types in his cooler then i connected it to the drip and i put the drip on him....thank God he taught us all this for times like this when he'll be the one who needs medical help i cleaned him up of all the blood then i cleaned the floor all the ways to the front door then i called baba,pops,jay and told them the situation at hand everyone said they on their way and baba said he'll tell snakes since we can't reach him...i went to the camera room and watched the outside footage of when the shooting began but i couldn't see who was shooting it just showed bullets flying and muzi falling to the ground and crawling back to the house my blood was boiling and i felt anger brewing from the pit of my stomach....i knew right then and there that whoever did this will pay a hefty price then i called my boys to break

into two teams and to protect kedi and ntombi from a distance baba will beef up security on ma and princess i called our other boys all over gauteng to put their ears to the ground to find out who tried to take out muzi and i want results asap after two hours i went to check on muzi and he was still out of it i went back to the lounge and there was a knock on the door i opened and it was baba***

Baba: where is he

Me: white room

he walked inside followed by his bodyguards i fist bumped with the bodyguards and i went after baba and found him standing next to muzi who was laying on the bed

Baba: who did this

Me: i dont know yet but im damn sure gonna find out

Baba: let me go make a few phone calls and

check if our known enemies did this

Me: ok

he walked out looking angry as hell then muzi opened his eyes slowly

Me: bafo

Muzi: so im ssstill aliveee

Me: yeah you taught me well

***he gave a faint smile ***

Muzi: check my phone and search for nurse nomhle and call her i need her help

Me: can we trust her

he nodded

Muzi: shes still new in the hospital and be nice to her she reminds me of my late little sister plus shes kind hearted and loves to help people you just need to bend the truth a lot about what happened to me she's too innocent for all this just like kedi is

Me: ok

Muzi: if i get infections i might die especially with the wound thats next to my heart

Me: ok rest il call her and ill find ways to get her here is she on duty

he nodded then he passed out i searched his pants and i found his phone and i unlocked it and searched for her numbers and i found them then i went upstairs to the lounge and baba was pacing up and down

Baba: how is he

Me: he was awake but he passed out again im gonna go get someone he said he trust to come and help him but please instruct your guys to take out the blood bank cooler and everything that will make her suspicions of muzi

***he nodded and i rushed out and found some guards outside and i instructed them to hide their guns when i come back i quickly drove out

and went to the hospital and asked for nurse nomhle and she came walking towards me she looked young maybe 21 or 22 years she looked beautiful and innocent but i wasn't shaken at all cause my heart and body belongs to one woman only***

Me: hi are you nomhle

she nodded

Me: im doctor ntuli 's brother and he send me here for you

Nomhle : ummm where is he hes about to operate on a patient within an hour and hes not here

Me: he was shot and he needs your help

Nomhle : what..ooh my God which hospital is he in...is he ok

Me: hes at home whoever tried to kill him might finish him off if hes admitted in hospital thats why he said i must come and get you to come

and help him

Nomhle : sir i cant ok first of all how do i know youre telling the truth and that you are his brother and im on duty i cant just leave

***after alot of convincing she finally agreed and she went to talk to her supervisor telling her what i told her to say to her then we left we arrived at the house and the guards did what i instructed them to do then i took her to the white room she asked questions and i told her lies of course she did what she was supposed to do after a while she was done then she said she will come check on him tomorrow then the guards drove her home the following day jay and pops arrived and nomhle also came to check muzis wounds and she said hes gonna be ok muzi even woke up three days later and snakes also managed to join us then jay and i went on a killing spree we found out that some gang from Eldorado park are the ones that ambushed muzi we found out which gang then

me,jay and my A team squad ambushed some of them and before we wiped them out they told us that they dont know who ordered the hit only their boss knows and hes in cape town the only thing they know is the person wanted the doctor to die with a thousand bullets that he/she wanted all of them to empty their ak47 bullets on him then jay and some A team squad left for cape town while i stayed behind with some of the A team squad and wiped out their entire gang and anyone who had a hand in it leaving dead bodies all over gauteng as a warning to whoever thought of daring us again then shit began to hit the fan and kedi started being suspicious of my out of town "meetings" and knocking off late at work and sleeping out she thought i was cheating i dont blame her cause i even switched to my mafia mode(kray) and when im in that state i become heartless even my conscious dies the is no beast involved its all me and when im like that its hard for me

to switch back to being the loving jase when i go back home i try but i fail dismally with my ex Candice it wasn't a problem cause i would not see her until im done with the mission with my heart its difficult cause we live together and i cant just disappear on her like that worst of all shes pregnant i try not to stress her but her hormones are really getting to me cause when im in a (kray mode)im short tempered and rude and its really hard for me to be understanding and calm towards her when her hormones start acting up cause i get pissed easily eish and i regret what i said to her last night and today my heart broke in pieces when i heard her cry silently earlier on when i said all that hurtful shit to her in the bedroom eish i guess il have alot of making it up to her once i find out who dared us and send out a hit on my brother muzi as for palesa i have no interest in her or her pussy what so ever she still my pa cause she knows her job well i dont have the time and

energy to be showing someone else how i do things and so forth not now at least but eish my heart doesnt understand if she was the one that cheated i would be jealous even if a gay man sat next to her so i understand even though its annoying as hell i understand where shes coming from i mean i once fucked her when she started working for me ...right now i went to put a bullet through the skull of one of the Eldorado park gang member who was talking shit with me over the phone when i told him to find out who took out a hit on muzi or he'll also follow his colleagues to hell i decided to make him meet his maker cause i kept him alive thinking he was gonna be an asset to us but instead hes just a fucken liability....i parked my car in the garage and went in i went to the bedroom and my heart wasnt there i checked her tracker and it said hes in the house then i went to shower after i was done i searched for her and i found her in the cinema room she

was asleep i switched off the screen and picked her up and went upstairs to the bedroom and i took off her clothes shit my dick went hard immediately i put her inside the covers and i went downstairs and switched off the lights and checked if all the doors are locked then i went back to the bedroom and also got in and i held her tight from the back while i brushed her belly gently.... i may be a dick sometimes but GOD i love this woman***

.

.

.

#hit- like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 15:43] Nor: INSERT.....53

.

.

.

*** JASE'S POV***

***another week later and still we dont a have a lead to whoever tried to kill muzi we've been suspecting Natasha and also had her tailed but nothing suspecting from her side has come up and those bastards we wiped out had nothing concrete to give us they all had orders from their bosses and not the person who ordered the hit but im sure something will come up as for muzi hes doing really well the steroids he took to speed up his recovery are doing wonders and nomhle the nurse is turning jay into someone i dont recognise anymore he acts like a total retard when she comes to check up on muzi which is a clear indication that he likes her a bit too much he talks about her all the time well it's a pity she said shes engaged but that does stop jay he said shes not married yet

so he still has a chance oh and muzi said she 21 years of age we made fun at jay calling him a pervert but he laughed it off and said shes old enough to bare him children i see trouble here cause i can see jay is falling for this girl and even though he isn't aware hes falling deep for her...anyway as for me and my heart things have gone from bad to good and great it all started when jay said he hopes i haven't been taking "kray"home and i just kept quiet he lost it and almost punched me in the face forgetting im older than him nx that gave them a platform to lecture me at first i was pissed off when the truth hit home especially when they said im to be blamed for kedis insecurities when i slept with that bitch buhle they also made a point that if it was my heart in that video busy being fucked by another man she'll probably be dead by now or in ICU so yah they didn't sugar code the truth they were raw and straight forward like that so i had an intense talk with my inner

self and i apologized to my heart and promised to never treat her like that ever again we even addressed the palesa issue i assured her nothing is happening between us and never will and why shes still my pa i think she pretended to understand and believe me to avoid an argument or a fight so things have been great i know i have been acting like a d*** lately but i love kedi in fact i breath for her i wake up every morning for her and my heart beats for her everyday i fall deeper for her which is a dangerous thing cause im already in the obsession stage with her but i dont care right now im in the office then suddenly there's a knock on the door***

Me: come in

then palesa walked in looking sexy as hell but i wasn't moved at all no pussy or huge ass in the world will make me cheat on kedi again

Me: what is it

Palesa: ummm sir I'd like to talk to you about something if you have a minute

Me: make it snappy im busy

she sat down and took a deep breath

Palesa: im sorry to speak out of turn but sir i can't help it anymore its torture every day the thing is im in love with you i know the only time we slept together didn't mean anything to you but it meant alot to me i.....

i stopped her cause i dont have time for this

Me: palesa im engaged to the woman i love with everything in me and i will not cheat on her ever ok whatever feelings you have for me get rid of them cause i dont see you in that way ***i said it as calm as i possibly can she looked hurt and disappointed by what i just said but i didn't care***

Palesa: i dont...i dont mind being your booty call or side chick as long as i get a peace of you i promise il respect your relationship with her

*** madoda i looked at this girl shocked as hell she had desperation written all over her she stood up and walked to my side and sat on top of me i was still shocked and frozen on my seat she bend down and kissed my lips i didnt kiss her back at first but i eventually did a bit i closed my eyes cause my dick was getting a bit hard just then i saw kedis face flashing on my mind and i pushed palesa off me hard and she hit the table with her back ***

Me: GET OUT

palesa: huh

Me: GET THE FUCK OUT OF MY OFFICE YOU FUCKEN WHORE

Palesa: jase please don't do this

***i stood up and i grabbed her weave and i

dragged her out of my office with her saying shes sorry i passed by her desk and i took her handbag with my hand still tight around her weave i let her go and she got on her knees begging me to forgive her i opened her bag and i took out my office keys and her company access card then i spotted two usb and i also took them without her noticing i dont know why i took them but i did she was busy crying then i took out my phone and i called my security guards and told them to come up to my office immediately then i dropped the call***

Palesa: jase please its me please dont do this im begging you il bury what i feel for you and never mention it il stay in my lane please dont do this im sorry

***i kept quiet waiting for the security guards to get here i was feeling guilty as fuck the fact that i kissed her back and i even got a boner was eating me up it shouldn't have gotten to that the guards finally arrived and i told them to take her

out and to never let her in the premises ever again that shes fired...they left with her screaming my name and that i should forgive her nx i went my office with my heart beating fast in my chest eish another fuck up nx i sat on my chair feeling like an ass i mean i promised kedi il fire her but i went back on my word and kept her as my pa i even lashed out on my heart calling her an insecure woman cause nothing was happening between us and i was sure nothing was ever gonna happen and now this shit happens eish i opened my my laptop and put on the first usb and it was empty after taking it out my phone rang ***

Me: talk to me

Voice: boss the first lady is being tailed and.....

i stood up from my chair as if something poked me and i interrupted him

Me: tell me shes fine

Voice: shes fine boss she didn't see anything

we got them as she went inside the mall we are taking them to to the warehouse two of the guys remained behind looking after the first lady

***i sighed in relief ***

me: how many were they

Voice: 3

Me: ok good job il reward you all handsomely now take those fuckers to the slaughter house not the warehouse they tailed the wrong woman and tie them there nicely and tight and just rough them up abit not too much just as a warm up i need some info from them

Voice: sure bozza yami

then i ended the call and called my heart she answered after the third ring

Kedi: my king

***fuck hearing her voice made me happy and i sighed with relief at the same time the guilt of

not stopping palesa from kissing me and me actually kissing her back a bit got to me hard i felt my heart beating fast***

Kedi: jase are you there

Me: ummm yes my heart were are you and hows my son

Kedi: still at the mall but im almost done with my mini shopping and your son is fine

Me: ok by almost done you mean you still have a lot of shopping to do

she laughed God that was music to my ears

Kedi: you know me well

***i chuckled nervously ***

Me: ok my heart i see you later

Kedi: ok i love you

Me: i love you too my heart God knows i love you too

she giggled

Kedi: ok my king il see you later bye

Me: bye

***then i ended the call glad as hell she didn't suspect being followed i closed my laptop and put it in the laptop bag and the usb' s and i tidied up my desk and had a conference call with my brother's and i told them to go to the slaughter house with muzi that the boys caught some fools tailing my heart and i have a feeling it had to do with muzis shooting that they shouldn't have too much fun without me and that il see them tomorrow then i ended the call and took my things and locked my office and i went home i got there and showered i even brushed my teeth twice then i got dressed and went to the mall and i checked kedis tracker and she was at truworths man shop and i went there and she saw me and she frowned looking at me i got to her and i pulled her towards me

and held her tight***

Kedi: i can't breath jase

i laughed and let her go and i kissed her lips she tried to pull out but i didn't let her not minding all the eyes that are staring at us after a while we pulled out of the kiss catching our breath i smiled looking at her

Kedi: wow what was that for

Me: i missed you

***she blushed ***

Kedi: i missed you too

***i looked in the two baskets and i saw men's pairs of sneakers and a couple pairs of semi formal shoes and jeans, chino pants and shirts and so on wow she went all out now that i think of it since i handed her my black credit card it has never been used since we went shopping for princesses birthday present ***

Me: all this for me

Kedi: yep ive never seen you buy clothes for yourself since we met and since i know your style of clothes i thought i should come and do a bit of shopping for you ohh and for me too of course

***i smiled and kissed her forehead feeling loved after she was done she paid and we left and went to buy takeaways and went home we got in and i took the plastic bags upstairs and came down and she had already dished for us we sat in the lounge and ate while holding down a stupid conversation laughing our asses off then i remembered what happened earlier with palesa and that guilt clouded me again i sat here looking at her telling me about what happened to to her colleague that her boyfriend's father caught them having sex in the pool when he came to visit his son then she reminded me of how baba caught us making out with her hand on my hard crotch...i looked at her and i decided to tell her what happened

earlier i dont have a choice its better she hears it from me than from palesa who might sugar code the truth just to spite me from rejecting her and firing her anyway we ate and washed the plates and went upstairs and she went to shower and i joined her we had two steamy sessions in there things were so intense that when we both came after she had her multiple orgasms i felt tears threatening my eyes thats how good it was and after that i showered quickly and i left her in there shaving her legs i lotioned and i wore my boxers and sat on the couch gathering the courage to confess after a while she came out wrapped in a towel she dropped the towel and lotioned and wore her short pjs***

Me: my heart come here

she walked to me and i pushed her down to sit on my lap then i brushed her tummy and i felt a slight movement and i smiled widely kissing her arm

Me: i love both of you soo much

Kedi: and we love you too my king

ok here goes nothing

Me: i fired palesa today

Kedi: ooh why i thought you said shes good at her job ohh my God dont tell me she stole from you

***i kept quiet abit then i sighed ***

Me: she kissed me

Kedi: askies what?

Me: im sorry my heart i swear it didn't mean anything thats why i fired her

my heart was beating out of my chest

Kedi: did you kiss her back

Me: baby i swea..

i didn't finish my sentence cause she interrupted me

Kedi: did you or did you not kiss her back

Me: i love you kedi only you

she tried to stand up but i tightened the grip around her waist

Kedi: let go jase

Me: no

Kedi: il pop this baby out right now if you dont let me go

***she was breathing heavily i let go of her and i rushed to the door and i locked it and took out the key she walked towards the bathroom and stopped by the door and turned with her hands on her waist and looked at me with tears gushing out eish that broke my heart ***

Kedi: is this how living with you will be like

Me: my heart please im sorry i fired her

Kedi: so what you had to kiss her first then fire her thats how things are between us right you

fuck up first then you fix things right you called me insecure jase and you said its not attractive you insulted me because of her

Me: my heart im s....

she cut me off

Kedi: dont call me that you dont deserve to call me that in fact you don't deserve me i dont even know why im still with you

that last statement hit home i sat on the couch looking down letting her shout and scream and curse at me

Kedi: im someones child too jase my parents may be dead but im still their child why do you keep hurting me jase what is it that i dont give you huh do i lack something tell me...is it because i dont have a huge ass like all the girls that you fucked or is it because i was raped before i met you thats why you prefer other women's vaginas

i stood up quickly rushing to her she didn't even move she just cried i pulled her to my chest and held her tight while she tried to push me away i didn't let go tears ran down my face what she said hurt me deep it tore my heart into pieces i felt a huge lump in my throat then tears continued to fall down from my face ...was that how she felt ? Eish....she cried until she stopped she only had hiccups i cupped her face and wiped her tears i didn't even wipe mine

Me: i love you kedi and no i dont prefer woman with huge asses i prefer you with your sexy ass and no i prefer your pussy not other women's vaginas and yes i deserve you as much as you deserve me and you still with me cause you own my heart as much as i own your heart and i know you're someone's daughter cause they are my inlaws and you dont lack anything kedi
***i had a lump in my throat that wouldn't go away what she said hurt me deeply and i dont

get hurt easily ***

Me: i should've fired her when you told me too but i was selfish and i did what i wanted without considering your feelings...she said she was prepared to be my side chick i saw desperation in her eyes i hate myself now cause i didn't pay any attention to her i only saw her as my p.a nothing more

Kedi: stop lying jase that day before we left for kzn you two were cozy wasn't that a good enough sign for you to let her go after what you put me through

Me: im sorry even if you say i should go and put a bullet through her skull il do it without thinking twice thats how much i love you

she looked at me with a shocked look

Me: im dead serious kedi no one will break us up even if you want me to unleash my beast on her i will kedi if it will mean you forgive me for being careless and selfish and a dick

***she kept quiet and went to sit on the couch

Kedi: why did you decide to confess

Me: cause i felt guilty for letting her close to me
and for not firing her after i promised that i
would none of this wouldn't be happening

***she kept quiet then i walked to her and i
pulled her up and picked her up and put her on
top of the bed with my heart beating fast
hoping she doesn't tell me to get off her and i
got between her legs and she let me i stared in
her eyes after a while i got off her and pulled
her pyjama shorts off i also took off my boxers
and got between her legs again and inserted
myself in her she closed her eyes***

Me: open you eyes my heart

***she did and tears came out from my eyes
her words were still ringing in my ears tears
started coming out of her eyes too ***

Me: im sorry i should have listened

***i said that moving slowly and going deep she moaned and i closed my eyes for a sec and more tears gushed out i opened my eyes again and i bend down and i kissed her lips while moving slowly and deeper she moaned louder and i immediately picked up my pace and hit it hard hitting all the right spots right now i wasn't pleasing myself i was pleasing her i pleased her like i never pleased anyone before i made her scream out my name like a mad woman i left no stone unturned i fucked her like i never fucked before after she came for the third time with her whole body shaking i pulled out and layed on my back and pulled her to me and made her lay her head on my chest and i held her tight ***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 15:43] Nor: INSERT.....54

.

.

.

KEDI'S POV

i woke up with jases hands wrapped around me in a protective manner i tried to wiggle myself out of his grip but he did what he always does he tightened the grip around me and pulled me closer to his body and kissed my neck

Jase: im sorry my heart please forgive me

i just kept quiet

Jase: i love you kedi please my heart forgive me

Me: its ok i forgive you

Jase: for...for real

Me: yeah

Jase: thank you...thank you

***he kissed my neck over and over that it made me giggle involuntarily then all of a sudden i felt him pulling my leg up and he entered his gigantic shaft and started moving with me moaning out loud while he groaned gosh jase is a sex freak i mean he loves sex so much that sometimes i wonder if hes addicted to it or to my pussy anyway after our awesome morning glory we went to shower with another round in there...see what i mean...anyway after the shower we dried ourselves,lotioned and got dressed jase wore some chino pants and a shirt and some semi formal shoes i bought him yesterday he said he doesn't have meetings

today so he'll be cooped up in his office...his phone rang it was jay so he left the bedroom anyway i decided to dress to kill today i felt down so you know what they say " when you look good you'll also feel good" so i wore a white tight short dress it was just a bit over my knees showing a bit of thighs and a bit of my cleavage with a white gold simple necklace with a beige blazer and beige stilettos i styled my weave and put on a bit of make up and i made the bed and took my things and went downstairs i found jase eating his breakfast in the dining room everything was put on the table it was a serve yourself kinda thing he turned to look at me and his eyes widened with his jaw hanging i put my things down and dished up for myself and sat down and ate yeses masibiya out done herself this morning i could feel jases eyes piercing through me i looked up and i was met by his eyes staring on my cleavage while biting his lower lip i just shook my head cause i

could see he wasn't even aware im looking at him mxm and continued to eat in silence letting him drool over my cleavage after i was done i stood up and cleared the table and i took my things ready to leave then he grabbed my hand and i stopped looking at him then i looked away quickly i dont know why i did that but i just felt a bit uncomfortable looking him in the eyes

Jase: ummm you look breathtakingly beautiful my heart

Me: thank you

Jase: even mntungwa agrees

***he said pointing at his boner i smiled faintly then i kept quiet the thing is im struggling to connect with jase in an emotional level right now im just drained actually since i woke up yes i forgave him and my love for him hasnt changed he still owns my heart but is just that my spirit is down and my emotions are just all

over the place i dont know whether to cry or
scream or to just laugh at what he confessed
last night anymore i just chose to forgive cause
there's nothing i can do about it the kiss
happened so crying over spilled milk doesn't
bring it back so yah another reason is im tired
of crying and being angry and allowing hurt and
sadness to take over anymore ive been living
with hurt,anger and sadness since my parents
died now im taking charge i need to be strong
for my baby and make sure i dont stress even
though its not easy but i have to another thing
is i must commend jase for coming clean i
mean im sure its wasn't easy for him to tell me
the truth but he did the same day it happened it
shows hes actually maturing mentally but
unfortunately it doesn't change what they did so
yah it is what it is***

Jase: are you ok

Me: yeah

Jase: ummm are we good my heart

i sighed

Me: yeah we good its no use crying over spilled milk so yep we good

he gave me a look i couldn't comprehend then he kissed my forehead

Jase: im taking you work and il also come pick you up..i gave your driver a day off

Me: ooh ok lets go i dont wanna be late

Jase: ummm are you sure this dress is appropriate for work

***i gave him "thee look" and he quickly raised his hands in surrender ***

Jase: ok ok i was just asking yho never mind lets go

***we walked to his car and he opened the door for me and i got in and he also got in and drove out on the way he kept stealing glances at me

but i wasn't in the mood or should i say my spirit is down so i just didn't have the energy to ask him why, i looked outside the window thinking about my day ahead then all of a sudden i felt his warm hand between my bare thighs cause im sitting down my dress was up showing my thighs...he squeezed one of them tight then breathed in and out slowly then brushed them gently after a while he would go back to squeezing one of them tight again breathing in and out slowly then brush them again this went on and on until we reached my work place without each one of us uttering a word just our heavy breathing filling the car with a bit of classic rnb playing in the background gosh i was already wet down there my clit was even twitching he parked the car and didn't unlock the doors he just looked at me i could feel his eyes on me ***

Me: what

Jase: you see what your dress is doing to me

***he said with his deep voice pointing at his already hard and showing boner i just smiled faintly rolling my eyes ***

Jase: are you sure we are ok my heart

Me: yeah

Jase: you're distant all of a sudden you cant even look me in the eyes for a sec

Me: we ok jase i promise you we are

Jase: ok il take your word for it

Me: ok ummm il see you later neh

he gave me a kiss i tried to pull out but her deepened the kiss he only pulled away when we were both were out of breath then he kissed my forehead

Jase: i love you

Me: i love you too my king

***i said that to assure him we good he smiled showing his dimples then he kissed my lips

again then he unlocked the doors and i took my things and went inside with people staring at me mxm ***

JASE'S POV

*** my heart is distant i dont know if its on purpose or shes just down but shes not her usual self and its all because of me nx she said she forgives me and i can tell she was telling the truth but there's something man just something wrong its like she pulling away like detaching herself away from me like shes giving up on me eish i dont know if im imagining things or its the fear of losing her thats putting this crazy thoughts in my mind but i have this uneasy feeling anyway yho that dress shes wearing shit im not gonna lie and say im ok with it cause im not cause its too tight and showing some of my assets and now im

jealous as fuck she looked hot even with her baby bump i know im being crazy and selfish and just out of my fricken mind but the fact that some fucked up dude might be looking at her drives me crazy the thing is i let her leave wearing that dress cause im already walking on thin ice so i didn't wanna make things worse especially after my confession last night i drove straight to muzis place feeling uneasy i drove in and parked the car and took out my phone out of my pocket and called her and she didn't answer i called her again and she answered after the third ring***

Kedi: hey

Me:why didn't you answer my call

Kedi: i was busy with my supervisor

i kept quiet trying to calm down Eish im losing my mind straight no no no

Kedi: jase are you still there

Me: yeah i miss you

Kedi: you just dropped me off just know

Me: i know my heart

Kedi: umm jase let me get back to work already
shes giving me evil looks

she whispered

Me: who's giving you evil looks

Kedi: my supervisor

she whispered again

Me: my heart is that supervisor giving you
trouble

she kept quiet

Kedi: dont worry about it i can handle her

Voice: are you here to work or to talk on your
phone drop that call and do you damn job

Kedi: ummm i have to go we'll talk later

Me: who the fuck was that

Kedi: bye jase askies for dropping the call on you

then she cut the call i breathed hard then i got out of the car and greeted the guards and i went inside the house and i went to the kitchen and i took a beer out of the fridge and went to the lounge and greeted the guys snakes was busy on his laptop

Me: mamba i need you to find out who's kedis supervisor and frame her for theft in the company i want her gone by the end of this week

Jay: what did she do

Me: i think shes giving her some trouble

Snakes: entlek tell me why is kedi still working in that company

Me: im waiting to pay lobola after that there's no way in hell il let her work for anyone else except herself she already applied for

admission at unisa after the lobola negotiations
all she'll do for three years or four is study and
take care of my son after her graduation i'll buy
her any company she wants or help her start up
any business she would want to start

Jay: i hope she won't fight you i know how
stubborn she can be

Me: you can say that again

i kept quiet thinking about her

Muzi: are you ok man you look stressed me:
eish palesa kissed me yesterday and i stupidly
kissed her back

Jay: you joking right

Me: im not

Jay: fucken great just fucken great you never
learn do you

Me: it meant nothing i even fired her on the
spot

Jay: make sure kedi never finds out even if it means you have to kill that bitch so be it il even help in harvesting her organs

Muzi: me too

Snakes: il help by wiping her existence in the country off it will look like she was never even born

***i laughed looking at this fools they looked dead serious ***

Me: thes no need for that i told kedi everything last night

Them: WHAT?

Snakes: are you fucken crazy

Muzi: tell me you joking

Me: im not we talked and she forgave me

Jay: not kedi....she punishes you first before she even considers forgiving you

me: well she did we even fucked last night and

this morning

Muzi: wow ok so did you see something different about her this morning

Me: yeah eish she wore a tight dress that showed a bit of my assets she looked hot as fuck i kept myself from ordering her to go change cause im already walking on thin ice with her

they laughed so hard that even tears were coming out of jays eyes

Me: ok you fools was what i said that funny

Muzi: you screwed bafo

Snakes: yeah you fucken screwed

Jay: wow im impressed by kotiza i never thought she had it in her

Me: what are you fools talking about

Jay: you should just hang yourself bafo cause this is the worst punishment ever right after

being denied sex its the second worst

***he said that laughing ***

Muzi: shes making you aware that she can still flaunt it if she wants too and also get other mens attention if she wants

me: my heart wouldn't do that

Snakes: well she just did tell me you not jealous of her dress code today and uneasy about it

***i looked down scratching my head i felt my heart racing i stood up taking my phone out of my pocket and this fools were laughing their asses off nx i dialled her number she didn't pick up i felt like im losing my mind i called her again and she picked up immediately ***

Kedi: jase

i breathed out

Me:i love you

kedi: ohk i love you too... whats wrong

Me: nothing is wrong i just miss you thats all

kedi: ok i miss you too.... jase let me get back to work before girlzilla comes back

***i chuckled nervously ***

Me: doesn't she know that in two weeks time you'll own half of that company

Kedi: she doesn't know let her have her fun while it lasts il fire her ass soon

***i laughed a bit ***

Kedi: ooh and im going out for lunch with my colleagues and after work im going to meet up with ntombi she in town and hopefully for good

***i just kept quiet breathing heavily ***

kedi: jase you still there

me: yeah get back to work we'll talk later take care of my son

Kedi: ok

***then i ended the call and started pacing up

and down feeling worked up***

Jay: and now

Me: lets go deal with those bastards

Jay: ok whats wrong now

Me: shes going out to lunch with her colleagues

Jay: come on jase you overreacting now

Me: YOU DONT GET IT JAY I DONT WANT OTHER MEN LOOKING AT HER LIKE THAT SHES MINE AND MINE ALONE UNLESS YALL WANT ME TO PAINT THE TOWN RED AND FLOOD IT WITH DEAD BODIES KEEP TELLING ME IM FUCKEN OVERREACTING NOW LETS LEAVE AND GO DEAL WITH THOSE FUCKERS

Muzi: jase you do know kedi would never look at another man right

Me: im not gonna take that chance of waiting to find out if she will or not

Jay: dont tell me you dont trust her anymore

me: i trust her with my life its those fuckers out there i dont trust and now she's in a vulnerable state so im not taking any chances

i know im fucken losing my mind but i cant help it im sure many men have found themselves in my situation before just when reality kicks in that she can actually live without you and that you pushed her too far anyway we left the house and head to the slaughter house before we arrived there i already called her twice i think im losing my mind we arrived there and went inside greeting our guys and we went to the slaughter room and we found them being tied up yeses they looked fucked up my boys really dealt with them

Me: ok talk

***they kept quiet ok i was getting impatient now ***

Me: i hate repeating myself

Guy1: we not saying shit you dont scare us

we actually laughed our asses off after he said that

Me: muzi are you the butcher today or is it you spilo

Muzi: nah il be the butcher to their boss or bosses spilo can be the butcher today

Guy2: what do you mean the butcher

Me: i said talk and you let your leader here speak for all of you now you about to find out what i meant by the butcher part

i gave him an evil smile

Snakes: ooh and after you witness what he meant by the butcher know that your daughter thobile will experience the same thing

***he was pointing at the "leader" ***

Guy1: leave my daughter out of this you son of a bitch

Me: tough aren't we, well i hope your precious

daughter is tough like daddy dearest

Guy1: leave my daughter out of this

me: DID YOU LEAVE MY FIANCEE OUT OF THIS

Guy1: look we were told what to do ok

Me: bafo you too tell me to do since its ok that way

***snakes cleared his throat ***

Snakes: bafo im telling you to go and kill her

then we laughed

Me: you see now its ok to go kill her since my brother told me to

***muzi, jay and snakes laughed well we can act foolish if we want to ***

Me: ok ok jokes aside for the last time ...TALK!

***they kept quiet again nx i called my boys to come and take the "leader" and tie him to the steel bed while he was screaming and swearing and they did then jay wore his

butchers apron and gloves***

Jay: fuck its been long since i opened up
someone shit i missed it

Guy2: what are you going to do with those
knives

***we ignored him they looked shit scared all
of them but i guess the "leader " was trying to
be brave***

Muzi: did your boss or bosses tell you who we
really are cause i can see that you guys dont
actually know who we are

Snakes: cause if you did yall would have sang
like canaries by now

Guy1: do your worst but you ain't getting shit
out of us

Jay: ooh no brah im getting your heart, lungs,
livers and kidneys out of you

***we chuckled nx jay is crazy the second guy
started crying while the third guy's eyes were

popped out as if hes seeing a ghost...jay took his surgical knife and cut the guy's shirt open

guy1: STOP DONT DO THIS PLEASE

Guy2: sunday lets tell them what we know

Sunday: dont say shit hes our brother so we wont sell him out to this bastards

Me: ok cool bafo please do the honours ***jay cut him from his chest and sunday screamed out soo loud while jay cut him all the way to his stomach the other guys screamed too while crying and begging for jay to stop sunday screamed out loud until he passed out or died i dont know which one as for muzi and snakes they were laughing and whistling jay took out what he needed from him except for his lungs they looked fucked up i guess he was a heavy smoker anyway after jay was satisfied we took his useless body and put it in that flesh and bone eating acid***

Me: who's next

Guy3: please stop please

Guy2: il..il talk please dont make me go out like that please my ancestors wont accept me with missing parts please il talk il tell you everything you need to know

he was crying like a baby while he was saying all this

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 15:43] Nor: INSERT....55

.

.

.

JASE'S POV

me: TALK!

guy2 : his...his name is mpendulo

Jay: mpendulo what?

Guy2: ngwenya

snakes immediately went to his laptop

Me: WE ARE WAITING DAMN IT

guy2 : hes nombuso's cousin

Muzi: who the fuck is nombuso

Guy2: the girl whose heart you broke recently

Me: Natasha

Guy3: yeah but bhut mpe calls her nombuso

Muzi: so that bitch is the one who wanted me
dead

***he was angry it was written all over his face

Me: now why were you stalking my woman

Guy2 : we were ordered by bhut mpe he said
nombuso said shes your weakness all of you

Jay: mmmmh so what did he want you to do to
her

***they kept quiet i lost it and took out my gun
and shot guy3 on the forehead and the
remaining guy screamed and cried***

Guy: to....to ra...rape her and kill her then dump
her body in the bush

***Jesus i don't know what happened i zoned
out and by the time i came back to my senses i
had that guys throat in my hand with the guy on
the floor with blood gushing out of his neck i
threw the part of his throat that was on my
hand to the floor the guys were quiet with
shocked expressions on their faces i went to

wash my hands***

Snakes : i send this mpendulo bastard's photo to all our boys to keep a look out

i nodded and took my phone out trying to call my heart but it rang instead

Me: talk to me

Caller: hes here

***i put my phone on loud speaker ***

Me: who

i knew who i just want him to confirm it

Caller: the wanted man hes here in the restaurant where the first lady is having lunch with her friends

Me: WHAT? SHIT GET HER OUT OF THERE NOW

***then i heard gun shots and screams and i just lost it completely jay had to slap me hard to bring me back to reality ***

KEDI'S POV

one of my colleagues puleng shes an HR assistant who i usually have lunch with in the cafeteria was treating us to lunch me, another friend of hers karabo and a male colleques of ours theo apparently she scored herself some rich blesser and she said hes not stingy at all with money so yah its already lunch time and we are at panarottis restaurant and they ordered wines and im having a grapetizer in a wine glass we ordered pizzas except for the guy who ordered a meal full of meat anyway we are busy having a light conversation

Karabo: so kedi vele you are engaged to mr khumalo

i was getting annoyed now

Me: yeah

Karabo: and you're already pregnant wow you go girl

Me:whats that supposed to mean

i look at her like what the hell

Me: karabo i love to keep my private life private please so stop asking me questions concerning my relationship

Karabo: yho hold your horses i was just asking bathong im just fascinated by your life i mean i wanted to know if you actually trapped him with the baby or not

Me: well not all of us are sluts who open their legs to every man they meet and trap them with babies

Karabo: are you calling me a slut

Me: if the shoe fits

***i was getting pissed by this bitch now nx shes lucky i dont take out all the anger i have in me concerning jases resent shenanigans on

her nx ***

Puleng: karabo stop it please you wont ruin our lunch break by being yourself

Karabo: excuse me...she just called me a slut

Theo: and you know you are so stop it eish why do like causing unnecessary drama just stop acting like a ratchet hoodrat for once and just be normal

Karabo: dont start with me theo please

Theo: nx

***ok we all kept quiet while karabo gave me an evil look i just side smiled shaking my head ***

Theo: you ok

***he asked me and i nodded ***

Puleng: anyway to uplift the resent dropped mood i dont mind talking about my bae

the three of us laughed gosh this girl

Theo: ok mrs blesser where did you meet mr

blessor who's chowing you none stop

we laughed again except for karabo she would steal glances at me every now and then with an annoyed look mxm

Puleng: we are actually dating is just i like calling him my blessor cause hes not stingy at all with his money unlike other boyfriends i had before him

Theo: well i can't call you a gold digger since your recent ex boyfriend was a broke ass man and you father is the mayor in your home town so i guess you with him for his dick

Puleng: amen to that you got it right

*** theo shook his head we laughed again anyway we continued to talk and laugh and eat some more ignoring karabo's attitude puleng send me an sms sitting next to me imagine mxm this girl anyway she was saying i should ignore karabo that shes a bitter and jealous person and that half of the employees actually

dislike her so i ignored her and we had an amazing lunch date just the three of us then all of a sudden i felt a tap on my shoulder and i turned***

Guy: hi

Me: hey

Guy: remember me

***i looked at him carefully and jesus it was that guy that looked like mandla and i remember mandla confirmed that hes his brother that day i was kidnapped my heart started beating fast when i thought of what jase or the beast did to mandla but i didn't show any discomfort in me talking to him i was just calm ***

Me:ummm im not sure where ive seen you before

i lied i dont know why but i just found myself with the urge to lie

Guy: you went on a date with my friend nathi

months ago that's where we met mpendulo is the name

Me: ooh yeah how are you

***my colleagues where just staring at us and karabo stood up and said shes going to the ladies bathroom mxm i was uncomfortable talking to this guy then i squeezed puleng's hand under the table i think she somehow read between the line ***

Puleng: umm we should get going our lunch break is almost over

*** she said signalling for the waiter to come ***

Guy: before you go can we talk in private

Me: ummm im afraid i can't i dont wanna be late for work and they are my ride back to work

Mpe: i dont mind dropping you off

Theo: i actually mind

mpendulo gave theo a deadly look that scared me too

Mpe: look kedi i just want 5 minutes of your time il be quick

Puleng : lets go we will pay by the door

***puleng stood up and pulled me up too soo did theo this mpendulo guy grabbed my hand ***

Mpe: please its important

***he was pleading with his eyes then i saw some guy walking towards us ***

Guy: let go of her hand

***he said with a threatening voice ok whats happening now ***

Mpe: askies

Guy: i said let her go

***mpe chuckled a bit and let my hand go then the guy's phone beeped and he checked it then

his face turned hard immediately and he signalled for us to leave with his head by now people were looking at us and puleng is busy holding my hand tight we try to move and i see three more guys walking towards us then two more guys stood up from their seats and my heart started racing but i calmed myself down thinking of my baby***

Mpe: look here boy you dont wanna piss me off you are not her man now fuck off...voetsek

Me: umm il..il just go

***i attempted to move pulling puleng to also move then the three guys pulled out their guns and people started screaming and rushing out of the restaurant then i spot karabo also running out nx bitch anyway i looked at the guy and he lip signed that its ok then all of a sudden i heard gun shots and the guy immediately rushed to us and shielded us pushing us to a safe place we hid behind the couches gosh i

swear i just peed on myself i was even shaking but i wasn't crying this wasn't the time to cry i needed to be strong for my unborn baby i just closed my eyes and put my hands on my ears the gun shots went on and on until they stopped and i felt someone grabbing my arm and pulling me up i looked up and it was "the guy " he pulled me away quickly and i looked behind me and two guys were pulling puleng and theo away too we got to the parking lot and he opened the door for me quickly and i got in he also got in with another guy and drove out in high speed ***

Me: my....my friends

Guy: they'll be dropped at their homes safely

***he said that looking at me in the review mirror and i nodded with tears threatening my eyes but i fought them back and looked out of the Window with my heart beating fast the guy's phone rang and he answered ***

Guy: we on our way boss

***he kept quiet ***

Guy: ok

*** then he dropped the call.... i didn't cry all along and i wasn't gonna start now i kept on doing breath in and out technique to calm my nerves we finally arrived at home and the electric gate was already opened with guys with guns roaming around the yard and i saw jase running towards the car when the guy parked the car he quickly opened the door and pulled me out and held me tight too tight his face was red so was his eyes they were red with rage his neck and arms and his forehead had veins popping ***

Me: jase i cant breath and you're squashing my baby

***he pulled away and quickly lifted me up bridal style and went inside with me upstairs and put me on top of the bed and held me

while my head was resting on his chest and he was brushing my back gently while he was breathing hard and fast i could hear his heart beating fast too and loud his body was tense***

Me:we are ok jase please calm down

he kept quiet and continued to do what hes doing as if i wasn't talking to him ok this was bad really bad i tried to sit up so i can look at him but he tightened the grip

Me: jase you scaring me

***he continued to keep quiet i was getting scared now what if the beast takes control ***

Me: my king

***i said with a shaky voice ***

Jase: i wasn't there to protect you my heart i should have been there you needed me and i wasn't there im sorry ***he said that with a deep pained voice***

Me: you are here now jase i need you now i know im safe now and thats whats important

Jase: its my job to protect the two of you kedi and i wasn't there im sorry please...please forgive me...i keep disappointing you kedi im sorry

ok i wont let him do this

Me: yes i was scared but you taught me well cause i remembered your words when you told me to be strong for the baby...to think before i act and i did that jase i...i didn't panic or cry i was brave for the first time i was brave scared but brave

he kept quiet and took a deep breath and flipped us over and he got on top of me and stared into my eyes they were blood shot red with anger i could see he was trying to hide it but it was written on his face he leaned over and kissed me with shaky lips

Jase: im proud of you my heart

Me: you taught me well

***he smiled but you could see he forced it then he got off the bed and went to the bathroom and i heard a sound of water i closed my eyes and took a deep breath while brushing my belly asking myself why mandla's brother wanted with me and what would have happened if that guy didnt show up after a while he came out

Jase: lets go i prepared a bath for you to relax

i nodded and got off the bed and took off my clothes i was only left with my thong and matching bra i saw his boner growing big he saw that i was looking and he walked towards me and kissed my forehead

Jase: i cant my heart il hurt you and my son

***i just nodded i also didn't wanna get hurt or be reminded of sam when he used to hurt me sexually leaving me to bleed nx that bastard jase brought me back to reality when he perked

my lips and led me to the bathroom and i took off my bra and thong and i got in and sank down while closing my eyes gosh the warm water on my skin was magical it felt good***

Jase: il be back i need to check on the guys downstairs

***i nodded and he kissed my forehead and walked out of the bathroom i continued to soak in this huge bath i hardly use then everything that happened earlier...the gun shots and mpendulo occupied my mind and a tear escaped my eye i had a huge lump that was stuck in my throat then a loud sob escaped my mouth then followed by more tears gushing out i just let it out i cried so hard letting everything out then jase rushed in looking all worried mxm i thought he went downstairs i wiped my tears quickly and he took off all his clothes and got in the bathtub behind me and he held me from behind i layed my head on his chest and he put his hands on my belly ***

Jase: when i heard those gun shots on the phone i lost my mind for a second im sorry i wasn't there my heart

i took a deep breath still feeling emotional

Me: was he going to kidnap me or something

***he kept quiet for a few seconds ***

Jase: i think so

Me: does he know

Jase: know what my heart

Me: about his brother

***he kept quiet for a few seconds again ***

Jase: he suspects....let not talk about this in fact i dont want to talk about this with you ever again

***i nodded i also didn't wanna talk about it ever then he changed the topic ***

Jase: hes strong this little one

Me: he take after his father

Jase: and his mother

me: sometimes i can't believe im gonna be someone's mother

Jasez: you'll make a great mother my heart

Me: and you'll make the best daddy ever

Jase: this champ will be the most spoiled boy in the universe

Me: not gonna happen

***he chuckled.... thanks God hes starting relax a bit i can't deal with a tense and viciously angry jase right now i want his love and attention and to feel safe in his arms...we continued to talk until the water got cold and we got out...God knows i have many questions for jase but i dont think now its the time but yho today i was shit scared i dont even know what explanation im gonna give puleng and theo as for karabo she can go jump off a bridge i dont care about her

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 15:43] Nor: INSERT....56

.

.

.

JASE'S POV

*** after the bath we took a quick and innocent shower since we didn't bath we just sat in there , we dried ourselves and lotioned and my heart

only wore her underwear and sport bra and i wore my boxers and we layed in bed talking until she dosed off.... i kissed her forehead and got out of bed and got dressed and i went downstairs to the lounge the guys where there including stix***

Jay: how is she

Me: shaken but she'll be ok

Muzi: good

Me: stix what happened

Snakes: i hacked into the cctv footage in that restaurant and we can watch it

Me: lets go to the cinema room i dont want kedi walking in on us

***the stood up and we went to the cinema room while stix went outside, snakes connected his laptop to the screen and we watched the whole thing my blood was boiling and i was ready to bust by the time the whole cctv

footage was done playing ...seeing kedi that
scared and shaking triggered something in me

Jay: calm down kray

***i was breathing heavily trying by all means to
calm down ***

Me: did....did you see how scared she
was,THOSE SONS OF BITCHES TOOK OUT
THEIR GUNS IN FRONT OF HER,THEY TOOK
OUT THEIR FUCKEN GUNS IN FRONT OF MY
HEART

jay: you need to calm down she's safe now so
what we need to do is make them all pay

Muzi: you handle mpendulo i want Natasha i
want to teach that bitch a valuable lesson she'll
never forget

Me: where are they snakes

Snakes: soweto i tracked Natasha's phone

Muzi: and i already called Natasha and i

installed fear in her

Me: good.... i need more information on this mpendulo character

Snakes: almost done

then his phone rang and he answered then he ended the call and took his laptop and got busy on it then his face changed

Snakes: come and see this

we went to him and it was some information about mpendulo

Muzi: so this bastard is friends with stanza
heeh

Snakes: this shit is way deeper than we thought

Jay: let me let baba know he'll tell us how to handle this

***he stood up and walked away we continued to discuss a few things then i went out of the cinema room with the attempt to go upstairs to

check on my heart until i smelled mutton curry my favourite, i smiled walking to the kitchen and i found my heart cooking, ok how long have we been in that cinema room anyway i went to her and Jesus she was wearing shorts i mean they were really short they showed her thighs she was wearing them with a white vest and my long sleeved shirt unbuttoned she looked sexy as fuck i even started getting hardno no she can't be showing her thighs like this while my brothers are here no no no eish i guess my "punishment " is not over***

Me: my heart those shorts are way too short

Kedi: please dont start with me tuu im inside the house jase

Me: my brothers are here kedi

Kedi: so..... those brothers of yours are also my brothers

Me: kedi

i used a firm voice but it looked like she wasn't shaken mara why is kedi doing this to me

Kedi: not gonna work

me: haven't you punished me enough

kedi: who said im punishing you

Me: i can tell...my heart please go and change

kedi: nope

i looked at her with a serious look but she has an amused look on her face mmmm shes enjoying seeing me tortured like this....now im standing here with my hands in my pockets with a hard on nx

Kedi: are you ok my king

*** she said smiling i chuckled shaking my head yah neh i remember we used to laugh at dad and baba when we saw how they couldn't be mad at ma and mom how they turned hardcore and scary to the whole world including to us but

they were soft and tender to their wives now the same shit is happening to me mxm***

me: im going to punish you kedi by the time im done with you,you wont be able to walk properly for days and that is a promise

Kedi: bring it on bhuti

then she laughed and i charged towards her and she attempted to run but i caught her and tickled her until she couldn't take it anymore then i stopped and stared at her with a huge smile on my face

Me: im glad to see you laugh i thought you'll be traumatised by what happened today

Kedi: i came face to face with the beast my king and im still standing so nothing can traumatise me like that or even come close to traumatizing me like that so yah

***she said that with a smile on her face and i smiled too damn im one lucky son of a gun...i

smashed my lips on hers with my hand
grabbing her ass tight ***

Muzi: yall should get a room man

Snakes: and kedi you better not burn that curry
please

***we laughed then all sudden boom ntombi
enters and screams rushing to kedi i let her go
and they shared a tight hug***

Snakes: wow and here i thought i was loved

***we laughed ***

Kedi: jealousy makes you nasty cheese boy

***we laughed harder and snakes gave her a
serious look***

kedi: jase

Me : voetsek man snakes

***Snakes smiled shaking his head then jay
called me entlek where the hell is he***

Me: bafo

Jay: come to the study all of you now

*** he sounded serious***

Me: ok

we ended the call i told the guys and kissed my heart and we went to the study

***NARRATED ***

mpe: YOU SAID SHE HAD ONLY TWO
BODYGUARDS

guy: she did boss thats what sunday said

Mpe:THEN WHAT THE FUCK HAPPENED HUH
WHO THE FUCK WERE THOSE PEOPLE

guy: eish i dont know boss but il do some
research

Mpe: and where is sunday

Guy: its like they disappeared without a trace

we still looking for them as for the girl il find ways to get her

Mpe: GO NOW I WANT THAT BITCH IN MY HOUSE ASAP I DON'T KNOW HOW YOU GET HER BUT I WANT HER HERE MY BROTHER AND BEST FRIEND DIED TRYING TO SAVE HER FROM THAT SON OF A BITCH I WANT ANSWERS.. ONE BODY IN THAT BURNED HOUSE WAS MISSING ITS HEAD AND IT WAS OPENED UP AND DNA PROVED ITS NATHIS BODY

***he breathed hard ***

Mpe: no bullets wounds were found in those bodies i want to know what happened and where's nathis head, who killed my brother like that it was like he was mould by an animal

guy: let me get on with it il get her boss

then he walked out then natasha walked in

Natasha: so you didn't get her bhuti

Mpe: no

Natasha: what happened

Mpe: she had extra bodyguards

Natasha: where's that guy you said you trusted the one that was stalking her

Mpe: eish he disappeared along with the other guys...tell me nombuso who the hell are these guys even the guys that i paid to kill your ex they are all dead

Natasha: i told you bhuti they are just some rich spoiled guys

Mpe: NO SPOILED RICH GUYS WOULD DO THIS NOMBUSO

Natasha: maybe they are working with someone and they have the best bodyguards cause they can afford them without them they are just rich guys

Mpe: YOU'RE SO NAIVE NOMBUSO AND ITS SICKENING...YOU KNOW WHAT THEY DID TO YOUR COUSIN MY FUCKEN BROTHER AND BEST FRIEND AND YOU'RE HERE STILL CALLING THEM SPOILED RICH GUYS NX YOU WERE BUSY OPENING YOUR FUCKEN LEGS TO A MAN YOU KNEW NOTHING ABOUT

Natasha: we got muzi so they are not as dangerous as you claim

Mpe: LEAVE

Natasha: bhuti?

Mpe: LEAVE THIS ROOM BEFORE I SAY OR DO SOMETHING IL REGRET

then natasha's phone rang it was an unsaved number ,she answered

Natasha: hello

Voice: well well well Natasha Natasha

Natasha: mu...mu.....muzi

Muzi: in the flesh how are you baby

Natasha: i thought....how did you...

he interrupted her

Muzi: i have nine lives tasha ...now put me on loud speaker i need to talk to the both of you

Natasha put the phone on speaker

Muzi: is it on loud speaker

Natasha: ye..yes

Muzi: good now listen to me both of you, you better start running and never look back cause were coming for you and trust me you wont see us coming....we might be outside by now or it might be tomorrow or even tonight but we coming

***he chuckled ***

Muzi: its crystal clear you two dont know who you're dealing with but dont worry il tell you

Mpe: I DONT GIVE A FUCK WHO YOU ARE

WHAT I GIVE A FUCK ABOUT IS ALL OF YOU
PAYING FOR WHAT YOU DID TO MY BROTHER

Natasha: and for treating me like garbage

*** muzi laughed***

Muzi: well mpendulo if you have ever heard of
spilotro and kray know that you in deep shit
cause you just messed with their brother being
me (he laughed) and kray's woman and
spilotro's kotiza

he laughed again

Mpe: wha...what?

Muzi: worst of all you messed with kray's
woman even natasha knows how he gets with
her and you attempted to abduct her nc nc nc
anyway Natasha you should just commit
suicide cause when i get my hands on you you'll
curse the day you met me

Mpe: did you just say kray and spilotro

***muzi dropped the call and natasha sat down

trembling as for mpendulo he started pacing up and down ***

Mpe: YOU SEE WHAT I MEAN WHEN I SAY YOU'RE FUCKEN NAIVE AND STUPID, YOU DIDN'T EVEN KNOW WHO YOU WERE SHARING A BED WITH LET ALONE ABOUT TO GET MARRIED TO

Natasha: what did he mean kray and spilotro

***mpendulo took out his phone ignoring her and called one of his guys and told him to take some more guys to go guard his wife and kids and then he called his wife and she didn't answer his heart started beating fast cause now he just found out who he messed with he was clouded by anger and revenge that he forgot to do a thorough background check on the man he suspected of mutilating his brother and bestfriend....he called her again and a male voice answered ***

Mpe: who the fuck is this where's my wife

Voice: you're about to experience the wrath of the khumalo brothers you should have stayed in your late man now i advise that you commit suicide cause this is the end for you

then the caller laughed out loud

Mpe: please leave my family out of this they are not involved

the caller continued to laugh

Mpe: please man im begging you leave my family out of this

Caller: a message from the bosses is that you have two days to surrender or your family will have it and if you still wont be motivated to surrender your parents and grandparents and siblings including your cats, dogs,rats and those tokoloshi's under your mother and grandmother's beds will also fall victims....ohh and this also applies to Natasha the backstabbing bitch

***then the caller dropped the call and mpendulo sat down with his head bowed ***

Natasha: whats wrong bhuti

***mpendulo kept quiet ***

Natasha: bhuti

Mpe: they have my wife and kids

Natasha: WHAT?

mpe: i should have listened to my wife when she said i should let God judge them and now shes in danger because of my quest for revenge

***he said that with a shaky voice...Natasha sat there quiet asking herself what she got herself into if only she didn't listen to aunt bongi when she put crazy thoughts in her mind and advised her to make muzi pay even with his life for dumping her and for embarrassing her.....when mpendulo told her about what happened to mandla and his best friend she saw it as an

opportunity to make kedi pay along with the rest of the brothers one by one but now everything is just a huge mess and worse of all muzi is still alive***

Mpe: they said we should give ourselves up or our families including our parents and grandparents will be killed

Natasha: what? Nooo we can't mpe lets go to the police then

Mpe: you'll go to jail for attempted murder and attempted abduction and they might still wipe out our family

Natasha: so we give ourselves up

Mpe: never i have one last trick up my sleeve im not giving up without a fight

***Natasha started sobbing and mpendulo got up and walked out while taking his phone out of his pocket and he dialled a number he swore he will never dial ***

Voice: ngwenya

Mpe: il join your crew on two condition

voice: im listening

Mpe: you save my family and kill some people for me

Voice: ok il be waiting for you tomorrow so we can go through my terms and conditions and rules and regulations

then he dropped the call.. and tears rolled down his cheeks this was his only chance to saving himself and his family,selling his soul to the devil something he swore he will never do cause his wife is a serious churchgoer

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 15:43] Nor: INSERT....57

.

.

.

JASE'S POV

me: whats wrong man

Jay: baba wants to talk to us

Me: eish ok

***then he called him and he answered and jay
put him on speaker ***

Baba: are they all here

Jay: yebo baba

Baba: good.... NOW WHAT THE FUCK IS IT
THAT I HEAR

we kept quiet

Baba: NKOSI!

me: baba

Baba: TALK!

me: some bastard named mpendulo attempted to abduct kedi

Baba: NOW WHY IS HE STILL ALIVE

Jay: we have his family he has no choice but to surrender

Baba: SO YOU WAITING FOR HIM TO GET IN CONTRACT AND JOIN STANZA'S CREW

me: no baba we ...

he interrupted me

Baba: IM COMING THERE TOMORROW AND BY THE TIME I LAND THAT SON OF A BITCH HAD BETTER BE DEAD OR YOU'LL EXPERIENCE MY WRATH...DONT DARE ME BOYS AND SINCE WHEN ARE YOU ALL THIS SLOPPY HUH IS

THIS HOW I TAUGHT YOU, TO LET AMATEURS
TAKE YOU ON HUH...

we kept quiet

Baba: ANSWER MY FUCKEN QUESTION

he roared

Us: no

*** he kept quiet ***

Baba: NOW GET TO WORK I WANT THAT
FUCKER DEAD BEFORE I LAND TOMORROW

***then he dropped the call shit we all took a
deep breath***

Jay: before we get down to business there's
something i need to show you, come and see

***we went to where he was sitting and it was
that video from the restaurant***

Jay: focus on this other chick

***it was another colleague that was having
lunch with my heart...wait a minute did i just

saw that bastard mpendulo do a little nod to her***

Muzi: the fuck

Snakes: so this was a set up

then she stood up and went towards the toilets then jay switched to another cctv camera and we saw her peeping from the door then we heard screams and she ran out...jay switched the camera towards the door and she was now walking out laughing.....God my blood was boiling im sure even my face was red

Me: snakes i want her address

he went out and came back with his laptop and got busy then he wrote its down then i called my boys and told them i want her in the warehouse by tomorrow morning alive and i gave them the address and told them i dont want excuses then i dropped the call

Jay: now thats out of the way lets get down to

some real business

Me: let me go take my laptop

***muzi also went out to take his, i went upstairs to our bedroom and i took my laptop bag and went downstairs to the study and we locked the door and sat down....

Me: mamba have you tracked natashas location again

Snakes: yeah she hasnt moved

Me: good now how do we tackle the mission at hand

Jay: i just called our squad and they will be here with 20 minutes fully equipped and armed

Me: good

Muzi: i want natasha alive always remember that and i just called our boys to scout their house until we get there for any movements and others will come here

Me: you sure you healed enough to go with us

Muzi: no but i wont sit here feeling useless while yall will be having fun

we laughed

Snakes: you can take over my job just for tonight and monitor our movements and the enemies movements we will communicate on our ear pieces

Me: imagine if we get to have a fist fight and you're punched on your wounds no no no we can't have done bafo

Jay: and ma would kill us

Muzi: i want her alive

Me: noted

Snakes: i hacked into the satellite and you will monitor us from above, the green dots will be us and the red dots will be the enemies you will tell us of the danger that will approach us that we can't see

Muzi: ok

Jay: great

Me: how many guards does he have in that house

Snakes: alot bafo i think after muzi's call he called all his gang members, that house is flooded with guards

Me: have that ever stopped us before

Us: hell no

Jay: remember when we went after that old fool Rodriguez

Muzi: yeah damn that was the first time i shot that many people in one night

Snakes: yeah and you remember i sat that one out cause i was underground

muzi laughed

Muzi:and you were mad as hell that you were unavailable

Snakes: now its your turn

Muzi: tsek

***we laughed then i took out my laptop i wanted to check kedis traker if its working before we leave im not taking any chances then i saw those usb sticks nx shit i forgot about them, i took the one that i didn't check out and i put in on and boom what my eyes were seeing was just unbelievable...it had all my clients information and also my company's confidential information i felt my whole body shake with anger ***

Jay: kray whats wrong

***i couldn't even talk i just pointed at my laptop and jay rushed to me and took it and looked at the screen ***

Jay :its your clients information and...

***he continued to read ***

Jay: your company's information

Me: i found that stick in palesa's bag when i took out her company's access card when i fired her

Snakes: what?

Me: i swear im gonna kill that bitch

Jay: no no no we need to do some spring cleaning starting with our businesses to bring out snitches, moles and backstabbers we cant let shit like this to happen again

Snakes: yeah we will start with that spring cleaning after this mission

*** then Snakes took out that usb stick from my laptop and put it on his laptop and typed for a while ***

Snakes: fuck luckily the information on this stick haven't been copied to another device

me: eish that a relieve

***i breathed out feeling relieved ***

***i took out my phone and called my boys again and gave them an address and a name and the instruction that i want her alive then i dropped the called ***

Jay: ok now go and get ready and prepare your ladies for the secret room we living in two hours

Snakes and i left the study and went to the lounge and they were watching some reality show

Me: my heart

she turned and looked at me and smiled God i just melted i swear this woman is turning me into a softy

Me: come

***i said stretching my arm and she stood up and walked towards me and i held her hand and pulled her up the stairs and we went to our bedroom and we layed in bed...she was laying

on her back while i balanced my head which was a bit up with my hand while i looked in her eyes busy brushing her belly and i immediately felt some movement ***

Me: did you feel that

Kedi: yeah they are frequent now

***i smiled and bend down and kissed her lips

Me: i love you

Kedi: i love you too

Me: you trust me right

she frowned

Kedi: yeah i do...why are you asking me that question

Me: cause im gonna ask something from you and i want you to trust me enough to agree to it

Kedi: what is that

i took a deep breath

Me: me and the guys are going out on a mission tonight and you and ntombi will be locked up in the secret room until we come back

***she gave me a blank look ***

Kedi: what mission

Me: i cant tell you my heart i just want you to trust me please

Kedi: whats going on jase cause you talking about missions and the secret room

Me:you said you trust me kedi now please trust me enough to not ask me questions i cant answer

she kept quiet

Me: please say something

Kedi: is it dangerous

Me: my heart please dont

Kedi:i want to know if it might come to me raising your son alone jase

Me: that will never happen kedi il always come back to you...you are my reason for breathing my heart, i wake up every morning for you, you are my everything kedi , the center of my world cause my life and world revolves around you

***i took a deep breath and wiped her tears with my thumb ***

Me: when i say i love you antlek you dont really understand how deep,my love for you its way deeper that the ocean and right now ive reached the bottom ground of it and im busy drilling to go even deeper...eish i dont even know if i make sense but my heart thats how much i love you

Kedi: what did i do to deserve you and your selfless love

Me: you loved me back my heart

***i bend down and kissed her i deepened the kiss and she responded i took off her clothes and i took off mine, i didn't want any foreplay i

just wanted to bury myself inside of her....i rubbed the tip of my dick on her pussy entrance while i was looking into her eyes then i tried to enter her but she was just tight eish, i tried again while i pushed in with a bit of force and i entered her feeling her pussy walls expand and she moaned out loud while i closed my eyes taking in all the sensational feeling of my dick entering its most precious and loved home...i pushed in deeper and a loud groan escaped my mouth from deep down my throat***

Me: fuck i love you my heart

***she attempted to speak but i started hitting it with a fast pace, i went deeper, hard and fast and she started screaming i pulled her right leg up and i went fast shit she held on to the sheets biting her lower lip trying by all mean not to scream again but i pulled her other leg up and i rammed her pussy hard damn forgetting shes pregnant....i just fucked her hard until i saw that she couldn't take it anymore after her

multiple orgasms....so i pulled out and got off the bed and i pulled her to the edge of the bed with her leg and i opened her legs wide and i entered her and i just gave it to her good after a while i felt my body tense up and after a few seconds i slammed into her hard and released all my juices in her then i pulled out and went to the bathroom and came back with a towel and i cleaned us up and i pulled her up and we layed on the bed with her head on my chest ***

Me: are you ok

***she looked drained and a bit weak damn i shouldn't have made love to her now this is what i was scared for hurting her and my son ***

Kedi: yeah just tired

Me: you sure?

Kedi: yeah im ok

Me: is my son also ok eish i think i went

overboard there

Kedi: mmmm hes fine i think hes also tired...is this why you said you didn't wanna hurt me or the baby

***i nodded ***

Kedi: dont worry we are ok its just that my legs feel a bit wobbly and are still trembling or shaking

Me: it means i gave it to you good

she laughed and punched my chest playfully

Me: lets go and shower we are living in less than two hours

***her facial expression changed ***

Me: dont be like that my heart please

Kedi: you better come back jase cause if you dont ill kill myself along with you son in my womb

Me: dont say that kedi just dont play like that please cause its not funny

i said that with a serious face

Kedi:im not playing just dare me and get hurt in anyway and dont come back to us...mmmmm....

***i looked at her God she was serious ***

Me: lets go and shower

Kedi: you have to carry us i dont think il be able to walk my pussy is on fire

***i laughed and carried them to the shower and we had an innocent one after the shower we dried ourselves and lotioned and she wore her pyjamas and a gown while i wore a black jean,a black shirt,a black hoody and some black sneakers i saw kedi sighing deeply and i went to her and kissed her forehead ***

Me: please trust me

Kedi: i trust you jase just know when you come back you have some serious explaining to do

cause now its clear that you live a double life
jase all of you do

***i sighed deeply and perked her lips and took
our phones and picked her up and i went
downstairs to the secret room and everyone
was there***

Snakes: and now

***then its like he remembered something then
he laughed shaking his head mxm fool...i put
kedi on the bed and i kissed her lips ***

Me: il see you in the morning ok

***she nodded and i kissed her forehead and i
also went to kiss ntombis forehead too and we
walked out and locked the door and we went
upstairs and we took our bags full of guns and
everything we gonna need and we went outside
and found our squad waiting ***

Me: are the snipers ready

Them: yes boss

Me: good now lets go show those motherfuckers what we are made of and remember shoot to kill except for the girl snakes send you the photo of

they nodded and we bro hugged with muzi and got inside our cars and left...after some time we arrived at some abandoned house two streets from where the son of a bitch was and that backstabbing whore and we layed down the plan to the squad and the snipers

Jay: REMEMBER BITCHES WE GONNA SEND AN UNSPOKEN STATEMENT OR MESSAGE TO ALL OUR ENEMIES AND HAVE FUN WHILE AT IT AND REMEMBER NO FUCK UPS

***me and snakes just chuckled shaking our heads looking at jay mxm sometimes he can be dramatic anyway we got into our positions and waited for a go ahead from muzi ***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 15:43] Nor: INSERT.....58

.

.

.

KEDI'S POV

i sat here with ntombi worried as hell i mean what if their "mission" goes wrong no no no i cant think like that i need to be positive and trust jase even though i dont know what's really going on

Ntombi: earth to kedi

she interrupted me from my thoughts

Me: im worried about them

Ntombi: me too but we need to trust them that they'll come back

Me: khante who are they ntombi

Ntombi: i dont understand

Me: there's more to them than what meets the eye ntombi and i have a feeling you know what im talking about

Ntombi: look that talk you should have it with jase like i had it with nhlaka...

Me: are they some government special force or something

Ntombi: you'll talk to your man when he comes back

Me: like really ,you wont tell me

Ntombi: its not my place kedi

***i just kept quiet and i closed my eyes trying to sleep but i just couldn't my mind was just all

over the place ***

ntombi: have you noticed something different about them since you met them

*** i opened my eyes and looked at her....ok what is she saying now***

Me: i dont understand

Ntombi: like have you noticed that they are not like the typical boyfriend a girl usually have

Me: yeah they are too controlling and over protective

Ntombi: possessive and crazy ...hehe i remember once when i was studying in PE i befriended some bad girls and they introduced me to this thing called escort service which i later realized it a nicer way of saying prostitution

my eyes popped out

Ntombi: yep it was shameful but i made money until nhlaka found out yhoi was chilling in my

apartment one day and he just budged in
remember i told him i was staying at res so
imagine me seeing him inside my apartment
sweating and him looking like hes about to skin
someone alive

Me: ohh my God

Ntombi: then all of a sudden he took off his belt
and started whipping me

Me: what? Ohh my God tell me you joking

Ntombi: im serious kedi he whipped me all over
my body until he couldn't anymore, i was
screaming,crying and begging him to stop but it
was like i wasn't talking to him....and you wont
believe what he did afterwards

Me: what

Ntombi: he picked me up and stripped me
naked and put me into a cold shower and
rubbed soap on my wounds

i just looked at her with a shocked look

Ntombi: after that he warned me to dare him and go back to escort service again then il see what hes really capable off ,then the following day i woke up to my friend calling me and telling me that the rich guy i was sleeping with and escorting to those rich people's gala dinners woke up to all his bank accounts wiped out clean not even a cent was left including his offshore accounts

Me: please dont tell me snakes did it

Ntombi: at first i didn't suspect him but later i did and when i asked him he just said he deserved it

Me: this is just....yho but i remember he once told me he can wipe me off from the face of earth just by using his phone when i said he looks like a mama's boy

***ntombi laughed ***

Ntombi: ohh my god like you really called him a mama's boy

Me: yeah it was the first time i met him

Ntombi: but im sure he didn't mean what he said

Me: yeah cause jase was busy laughing his ass off

***she laughed again ***

Ntombi: anyway what im trying to say is this guys are hard-core and really scary and dangerous out there but those closest to them know the real them...we know their vulnerable side, their soft and kind sides too so please when you two have the "talk" please kedi have an open mind cause remember you know the real him that the outside world doesnt know and he loves you

***i just kept quiet thinking about whether or not im ready to know the other him cause ntombi just said they are dangerous,hard-core and scary....i just met his beast side so like is there something else that is worse than that

eish***

Me: im hungry i wonder what they have in here

***i said getting out of bed and went to the fridge and i took out a 500g of tropika and also took out some snacks and went to bed and started eating ***

Me: so when are you guys gonna tell the elders about your relationship

Ntombi: eish i dont know hey but hopefully soon

Me: ok

Ntombi: but its gonna be one hell of a ride cause ma and baba are my grandparents and they are also nhlaka's parents even though they're not blood related to him but they raised him to the man he is today him and muzi so did pops...so imagine if he wants to marry me like i mean we have the same uncles so i wonder how it will all work out

Me: yah neh but im sure the elders will find a way....so you gonna be a granddaughter and a makoti to ma and baba

***we both laughed ***

Ntombi: its crazy im telling you

we continued to talk while i was eating ntombi also joined me after we were done we got under the covers and bonded some more, we talked until we both fell asleep i think we tried by all mean to not think alot about the guys and their safety then all of a sudden i woke up to a sharp pain in my stomach

Me: aaahhhhhh

i screamed

Ntombi: whats wrong ohh my God is it the baby

***i couldn't even talk i just nodded, the pain went on and on until it stopped.... it stopped just like that as if it didn't even happen ***

Ntombi: ok stay put il call for help

***she said getting out of bed i pushed off the covers and checked between my legs and i wasn't bleeding ***

Me: STOP IM OK THE PAIN IS GONE

ntombi : im not taking chances im calling for help

Me: ntombi stop i said im ok, the pain is gone its like it didn't even happen im ok

Ntombi: are you sure

Me: yeah relax im sure its nothing to worry about

she came back to bed and she sat next to me with a worried look on her face

Me: relax the baby is ok

she rubbed my baby bump while i lay on my back until i fell asleep

JASE'S POV

the snipers started taking out the guards that were outside one by one then the squad climbed the wall and got in without being detected...two of them shot the cameras with their hand guns that had silencers then the other two cut off the lock on the small gate and they opened it and we got in , the house was a double story then all of a sudden shit began to happenwe started playing gun-gun manje,bullets started flying while mpendulo's guys came out guns blazing ...we took cover behind the cars that were in the yard and i took out as many as i could i had my favourite hand gun with a silencer on while the other guys used AK47 so did mpendulo's guys it was just chaos we kept on taking them out

Muzi: fuck this guy has like 50 guys in there

i heard him speak on the ear piece

Me: muzi does that house have a basement

Muzi: no it doesnt

Jay: how many guys are left cause im sure the neighbours have already called the cops

Muzi: less than 20 now but now most of them are inside the house

Snakes: can you see any one of them near the Windows

Muzi: yeah most of them are

Me: good mamba i see where you going with this....snipers can you hear me

Them: yes boss

Me: leave the roaches in the yard and focus on the ones inside the house through the windows.... switch your binoculars goggles to body heat sensors and zoom towards the windows there are some cockroaches there take them out

Them: rodger that

***after a while i heard glasses breaking which made mpendulos guys to loose focus for a second and we took advantage of that and started shooting ***

Jay: muzi how many are left

Muzi: 10 in the house in some room downstairs on your far left

Me: i guess that 10 includes mpendulo and natasha

Muzi: yeah i dont see anyone else in that house

Jay: cover me im going inside...squad follow me

***jay went inside followed by snakes and the squad the shooting has now stopped and i couldn't see anymore of mpendulo' s guys on site then i heard sirens... shit ***

Me: snipers keep those cops busy until we done here dont hurt them just keep them busy i know you hate cops so have fun in making them shit

on themselves

***they chuckled ***

Them: rodge that boss

***i stood up and attempted to run to the house

Muzi: KRAY BEHIND YOU

***he shouted and i ducked trying to take cover
but it was too late i felt a bullet penetrate
through my skin on my shoulder, luckily it was
on my right shoulder i fell down and rolled on
the floor to lie on my back quickly and i shot
him on his head and he fell***

muzi: KRAY ARE YOU OK

Me: FUCK IM HIT

*** shit it hurt i put my hand on my bleeding
shoulder***

Jay: KRAY ARE YOU OK MAN

ME: im hit but il live

Jay: tell me the bastard who shot you is dead

Me: yeah on his way to hell

***i tried to stand up but damn it hurt like hell i guess the bullet was still inside my shoulder ***

Me: FUCK...SHIT

Snakes: how bad is it

Me: i dont know but concentrate on the mission il be fine

Jay: im coming to you

Me: no im fine im coming inside now go get that son of a bitch and that backstabbing bitch

Snakes: ok

jay didn't reply then suddenly i started having an unexplainable feeling i knew jay's beast was awake now then i heard him growl

Snakes: shit

Me: GET AWAY FROM HIM SNAKES IM COMING

***i stood up ***

Me:is it clear now muzi

Muzi: yeah

***i rushed inside holding my shoulder i heard gun shots and i followed the sound and suddenly they stopped i got inside the room and all the guys were down so was natasha and jay was busy punching mpendulo who was on the floor on his face...he kept on throwing punches on his face mpendulo wasn't even moving, his face was covered with blood then he took out a machete knife and stabbed mpendulo on his chest and dragged it to his stomach and and he opened him up and ripped out his heart and stood up and walked out with it and we followed him, the squad members had shocked expressions on their faces anyway snakes had natasha on his shoulder and we followed jay all the way to the gate and he hanged it there on the gate ..fuck....then he

walked to the tap and washed his hands and walked towards me and i put my arm around his neck for balance i guess he was back to his normal self ...i was starting to feel weak cause i was losing a lot of blood then we walked out with natasha on snakes shoulder ***

Me: is she still alive

Snakes: yeah i just knocked her out

***Snakes gave her to one of the squad members and told them to take her to the slaughter house and tie her up ***

Jay: muzi we on our way

Muzi: ok

Me: snipers retreat, good job we will meet at my house

Them: ahoy... ahoy

***we got inside the cars and we drove going the other way...away from the cops after a while we arrived at home and jay helped me out of the

car and carried me on his shoulder... mxm...
inside the house all the way to the white room
and we found muzi waiting for us they put me
on top of the bed and muzi didn't waste
time....he dug out the bullet and did his things
and after a while he was done and i was on a
drip ***

Me: i swear kedi will kill me when she see me

Jay: why

Me: i promised her il come back unharmed

Snakes: why on earth would you promise her
that

Muzi: my thoughts exactly

Me: i didn't want her to stress

Jay: then take it like a man tomorrow when you
come hand in hand with her crazy hormones

they all laughed mxm fools

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 15:43] Nor: INSERT.....59

.

.

.

KEDI'S POV

i woke up when i felt ntombi shaking me

Ntombi: i think someone is opening the door

***i quickly sat up straight then the door opened
and in came snakes and jay and no jase ok ok
ok i got off while ntombi also got off the bed

and rushed to snakes and hugs him ***

Me: where's jase

i said that breathing heavily

Jay: calm down hes in the kitchen with muzi
preparing breakfast

***ok something isn't right here my jase would
be here holding me tight not in the kitchen
"making breakfast"....so i rushed out leaving
them in that room and went to the kitchen and
i got in and they looked up and i suddenly saw
fear in his eyes ok now i see why he didn't
come downstairs to the basement, he had a
patch on his shoulder and he had that arm
support thingy that goes around his
neck....gosh i felt my blood boil i felt anger
brewing from the pit of my stomach i wanted to
rush to him and kick him on his balls for
breaking yet another promise, tears involuntarily
fell from my eyes ***

Jase: my heart look im....im ok its nothing

serious il be fine

i just looked at him and instead of hugging him and being grateful that hes alive and that he came back to us like he said he would i felt myself rushing towards him with anger all over my face and he moved back so did muzi then i changed the direction and went to the cupboard and took out a mug in there and threw it at jase ,he ducked and it hit the wall and broke into pieces

Jase: the fuck

Me: you promised jase

*** i said that with a shaky voice ***

Jase: my heart look ok its nothing major im ok

Me: OK huh...mmm then what happened to you

*** i said that with my hands on my waist ***

Jase: baby look that is not important ok whats important is im ok

***i took out another cup and threw it at him and he ducked again ***

Jase : WILL YOU JUST STOP

me: DO YOU KNOW HOW WORRIED I WAS HUH THE LEAST YOU COULD HAVE DONE WAS COME HOME UNHARMED

Jase: will you just calm down

i took a pot that was on top of the counter luckily it was empty and i threw it at him and he ducked again and it also hit the wall...i took everything i could get my hands on in that cupboard and i threw them at him, some he ducked but others hit him on his back as he ducked

Muzi: kedi stop all this can't you see hes hurt

Me: HURT...HURT HUH IL SHOW YOU HURT

*** i walked towards them and they walked backwards until they were out of the kitchen***

Jay: whats going on

***i walked away to the laundry room with jase calling my name and i took a baseball bat and walked back to where i left them ***

Jase: my heart what...

*** i didn't wait for him to finish i swung the bat and it hit him on his arm***

Jase: aaah

Jay: the fuck kedi

***he half screamed in pain i think when i hit him he moved his shoulder and hurt his wound cause his patch had blood on it now but i didn't care i was mad as hell and this crazy hormones weren't doing any justice to me....i suddenly had too much anger in me that i was completely losing it, i swung the bat again with full force and he turned giving me his back and i hit him on his back ***

Me: YOU WANNA TALK ABOUT HURT

***suddenly i felt hands holding me from behind

and whoever it was took the bat from me and let me go...i turned and it was jay mxm i walked back to the laundry room and i took a golf stick and went back and i heard them talking in the lounge i walked in and muzi was busy with jase they didn't see me but ntombi did***

Ntombi: kedi you need to calm down and put that thing down

***they all turned and i rushed to jay and i swung the golf stick and it hit him on his upper arm then i swung it again and it hit muzi on his hip or waist i dont know. Ntombi was screaming for me to stop all along as for snakes he rushed towards the sliding door mxm coward and i rushed to him and he opened the sliding door quickly and ran outside nx ...i turned back rushing towards the guys whilst crying and they rushed towards the door leaving jase alone, i rushed towards them and they ran towards the stairs so i turned and walked back to jase got to him and i stood

before him calming myself down with the golf stick on my hand ***

Me: what happened to you

Jase: KEDI STOP ALL THIS YOU FUCKEN DISRESPECTING ME INFRONT OF MY BROTHERS

Me: EMBARRASSING YOU JASON DO YOU KNOW WHAT I WENT THROUGH LAST NIGHT WHAT ME AND NTOMBI WENT THROUGH AND TO MAKE MATTERS WORSE YOU COME HOME WITH A BULLET OR STAB WOUND....

he interrupted me

Jase: dont fucken raise your voice at me im not one of your fucken colleagues or your matesRESPECT KEDI

he shouted the last part but i was shaken i was too angry to get scared

Me: i had sharp pains last night on my belly and you weren't there you were busy getting shot

Jase: WHAT...WHY DIDN'T....

***i interrupted him ignoring his sudden change of tone and facial expression ***

Me: what if you were shot or stabbed in you left side huh,what would have become of me and your son you talk about respect and me embarrassing you what about all the promises you made to me and never kept them what about them huh

***i wiped my tears ***

Me: you know what i dont blame you but i blame myself for caring about you all and for loving you jase unconditionally,its my fault

***i dropped the golf stick and started walking then i stopped and turned looking at jase who was looking down ***

Me: you want to die and leave me as a single parent right then go ahead il mourn you and then find a stepfather for your son

he raised his head quickly looking at me and i turned away and started walking away up the stairs to the bedroom and i locked myself in there...i dont wanna lie it felt good beating the shit out of them i felt like a boss and now i feel better, i know i shouldn't have disrespected him like that but i couldn't control myself i think i went temporary insane there but one thing i know is im never leaving this bedroom or opening that door i mean after what i did what if he slaps me hes done it before so yah now that im back to my right senses im shit scared*

***JASE'S POV ***

**ive never seen kedi that angry before and the fact that she beat the shit out of us well except for snakes cause he decided to run like a little girl showed that this time around i fucked up real good but the truth is my ego is bruised in

fact all our egos are bruised...even ma has never beaten us up and kedi swings a bat and golf stick at us and we didn't do shit mxm....eish and what kedi said about experiencing sharp pains last night got me worried and when she said i wasn't there for her hurt me deeply, i dont know if she meant what she said to me cause its how she really feels or its hurt and anger that made her said all that but when she said something like if i die she'll mourn my death and find a stepfather for my son really hit me bellow the belt i dont wanna lie anyway im glad the mission was successful cause baba would have killed us for sure if it didn't ***

Muzi: lets go to the study so i can fix you up
***i didn't say anything i just stood up and and we walked to the study and i sat down, muzi came with his first aid kit and did his thing then jay and snakes walked in ***

Muzi: i should have stitched you...look now

Jay: fuck i think she broke my arm

he said that rubbing his arm

Muzi: and my hip is sore

Me: and my back,arm and shoulder hurt as hell

Jay: lesson learned....never ever mess with a pregnant woman carrying a small beast in her womb

Muzi: and wena snakes vele vele you had to run and leave us behind

Me: mxm pussy

Snakes: voetsek

Me: nawe (you too)

Snakes: look i want to get ntombi pregnant haw what if she swung that golf stick bellow my belt and damaged my balls

***we all laughed ***

Me: heeh i can't believe this

Snakes: eeh bafo remember i once threatened to make her disappear just by using my phone when she called me a mamas boy what if shes still holding a grudge

Jay: so you decided to embarrass yourself in front of ntombi instead

Snakes: well she once experienced my wrath so she knows what im capable of so i wasn't embarrassed at all....eeeh joh she had a fucken golf stick and shes pregnant....thats a fucken bad combination if you ask me

we just continued to laugh...after muzi was done he gave me something for the pain and i decided to let her cool off a bit and probably sleep it off before i go talk to her

Jay: im sure baba is about to land now

Me: at least the mission was successful so hes not here to kick our balls

***i said that looking at snakes and he just laughed ***

Muzi: i wonder what is it he wants to discuss with us

Snakes: I've been asking myself that same question

Jay: so when are we going to deal with those bitches

Me: il deal with palesa while jay and snakes will deal with that bitch karabo or kabelo whatever her name is and obvious muzi you'll have your backstabbing ex fiancée but il deal with palesa tomorrow i need to try and talk to my crazy wife to be

Snakes: well all the best bro all the best

***he said that laughing mxm fool....im sure you wondering why we are not mad or angry at kedi because of what happened the thing is ma used to tell us stories about when mom was

pregnant with me and jay, the things she did
who you can just imagine her carrying two little
and crazy beasts at once so yah we kinda
understand even though its hard to ***

Jay: muzi now that Natasha is ready to meet
her ancestors dont you think its time you fought
for noma

Muzi: eish bafo im sure she doesn't even think
about me

Jay: then make her think about you

Me: is she already married

Muzi: no shes not

Snakes: and how do you know that...yeeeh bafo
dont tell me you keeping taps on her

muzi: and what if i am

Snakes: then stop being a chicken and stop this
"watching her from a distance" bullshit and go
take whats yours from that useless boy im sure
you dont want her spending the rest of her life

with that useless shit-head

***he just kept quiet like he was thinking
hard***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 15:45] Nor: Diary ya kedi:the chozen one

INSERT.....60

.

.

.

JASE'S POV

after muzi was done we went to the kitchen and found ntombi cleaning the broken glasses on the floor

Me: ntombi stop we will do it

Ntombi: its ok guys i dont mind

Snakes: what if you cut yourself...stop we will do it

***we cleaned the whole kitchen floor and ntombi took over with preparing breakfast and we ate and i told ntombi to take breakfast upstairs to kedi and we left.....we arrived at jay's house and went inside we had something to drink while waiting for baba after a while baba arrived ***

Baba: boys

Us: baba

Baba: ok how did it go

Jay: mission accomplished

Baba: good...NOW I WANT TO KNOW HOW THE HELL DOES MUZI GETS SHOT AND YOU ALL TAKE ALMOST TWO FUCKEN WEEKS TO FIND OUT AND HOW THE FUCK WOULD SOME AMATEUR BASTARD ATTEMPT TO ABDUCT KEDI...WHERE WAS HER SECURITY TEAM

he roared and we just kept quiet he looked mad as hell like he was about to skin us alive

Baba: TALK!

me: we...we were sloppy baba it will never happen again

he looked at us one by one and he took out his gun...ooh shitand he pointed it at us

Baba: SINCE WHEN ARE YOU BOYS SLOPPY

Jay: baba we sorry

Baba: I HATE THAT WORD "SORRY" AND YOU KNOW IT... DONT FUCKEN USE IT TO SOFTEN ME UP , DONT PISS ME OFF NKOSENYE

we kept quiet scared as hell... ok we know he wont kill us but he might shoot us just to teach us a lesson and like really i cant take another bullet kedi might loose it again eish

Baba: NOW ANSWER MY DAMN QUESTION

Snakes: we... we were too relaxed baba it will never happen again

Muzi: ye..yes baba

Baba: now listen to me if anything like this ever happens again i will cut your fucken balls off do you hear me

***he said that calmly but with a threatening tone ***

Us: yebo baba

Baba: good now nkosi when are you going to pay lobola

Me: ummm the...the following weekend or the weekend after shes going home this weekend to talk to her uncles

Baba: she? I hope by that you mean you are going with her

Me: of course baba

Baba: good il talk to some elders that next weekend we going to take our makoti permanently from that evil family

ok i just said "or the weekend after" and now hes choosing next weekend mxm this old man

Me: ok

Baba: good now what about you nhlakanipho

Snakes: ummm what about me baba

ohhh shit he knows

Baba: DONT PLAY DUMB WITH ME BOY

Snakes: ummm i...we....eish

Baba: fine let me make things easy...what are your intentions with ntombi

***snakes looked down and took the deepest

breath ever***

Snakes: i love her

Baba: i know that now i just asked you what your intentions are with her...khante whats with you boys today you fucken know i hate repeating myself and you still make me nx

*** he said shaking his head***

Snakes: i want to marry her and start a family with her

Baba: mmmmh i see...you want our cows to remain in the kraal heh

***we laughed a nervous laugh ...God this old man just know how to make us tremble with fear ***

Snakes: something like that baba

Baba: mmmmh....dont take long nawe

Snakes: yebo mbulazi

we laughed again

Baba: you see thats how you soften me up
nkosenye not with abo "we are sorry"

Jay: noted mntungwa

***we laughed again and baba just shook his
head smiling...wow...thats definitely something
you hardly see***

Baba: ok muzi pour me a double scotch on the
rocks and let me wet my throat before i go for
my meeting with that stubborn fool Roberto

Me: hes still a pain in the ass

Baba: you have no idea if he wasn't an asset to
me i would have had him wasted a long time
ago now im just tolerating him

***muzi stood up and limped a bit to pour baba
his scotch ***

Baba: was the mission that bad that had nkosi
shot and muzi limping

we all kept quiet

Baba: and now

Snakes: well we had a little incident in the house earlier on...ummm your daughter in law went all Jackie chan on us

Baba: heh

he looked confused

Jay: kedi lost it when he saw jase with that bullet wound cause this fool promised her he'll come back unharmed and she attacked all of us with a baseball bat and golf stick

Baba: WHAT!

muzi: its true baba eish i think she broke my hip

Jay: well i think she broke my arm

Me: well my arm,back and shoulder hurt as hell she did a number on us

***then out of the blue baba laughs his ass off.... like he really laughed out loud. ..ok.... after he calmed down after finding amusement in us

getting a beat down ***

Baba: thats my girl...yeyes i should have been there to see your faces

Me: haw baba kedi just disrespected us and you saying "thats my girl"

Baba: shes carrying a half beast what did you expect you provoked the beast now you all just experienced its wrath

muzi gave him his scotch and he gulped it all at once mxm and stood up

Baba: well your mother shot your father one time when she found out that he was part of the south Africa mafia , when she was pregnant with you twoshe shot him on his stomach twice and your grandmother once chased me with a butcher knife when i once commented that she had developed chubby cheeks when she was pregnant with your father , she interpreted the whole" chubby cheeks "as being called fat

Us: WHAT?

***he chuckled ***

baba: and your father barely made it alive but you know what. ... his love for her grew deeper than it was before she shot him ,so did mine towards your grandmother....you all might not understand it but you will one day and im sure nkosi you kind of understand what im talking about right cause you definitely not angry or mad at her you only have your ego bruised njeantlek all of you are not mad or angry at her right

we nodded

Snakes: well im not mad at her at all cause she didn't get to me

Me: thats cause you ran like a girl

Snakes: mxm

baba shook his head while having a side smile

Baba: well i have to go boys and you all should be glad and grateful she haven't found your gun yet in your stash place or else mmmmmh..... all of you would be in ICU manje

then he walked out laughing mxm mara this old man hes busy laughing on a serious matter

Me: this is serious and baba is busy laughing

Jay: its her hormones bafo remember they are ten times worse than a normal pregnant woman

Muzi: well her hormones broke my hip

Me: you're complaining about your hip bafo what about me i don't even know which position im gonna use to sleep with all this pain in my body worst of all i have to sleep with one eye opened just to be safe from her attacking me again

***the guys laughed ***

Muzi: well fozas i think il deal with natasha tomorrow morning right now i need to go and sleep off this pain on my hip

Jay: yah eish muzi i think you should check if my hand isn't broken

Snakes: aarg man yall are acting like sissies

Us: voetsek

***he laughed standing up and walking away nx fool after a couple of hours we drove back to my house and we found ntombi cooking she was almost done and i went upstairs and our bedroom door was locked nx anyway i picked the lock and i went inside and she was sleeping with her hand on her belly ...fuck she looked beautiful as ever i just wished i could just get on top of her and fuck her senseless until we both pass out but eish i couldn't so i took out my phone and took a picture ***

KEDI'S POV

*** after i got in our bedroom i went to shower and wore leggings and a saggy vest and lay on the bed then there was a knock on the door and it was ntombi ***

Ntombi: kedi open up i brought your breakfast im alone

***i got off the bed and i opened the door and she got in holding a tray and i immediately locked the door and went to where she sat on the couchshe looked at me with a serious face like she was angry gosh then out of the blue she laughed out loud even tears were coming out of her eyes...and now.... after she calmed down she looked at me with a smile on her face ***

Ntombi: damn girl i salute you shem you just outdone yourself like now i respect you even more sistaz

i gave her the "wtf" look

Ntombi: did you see their faces ohh my God...even though i was screaming for you to stop believe me sistaz i was enjoying every bit of that

i smiled shaking my head

Ntombi: and when nhlaka ran out of the sliding door like a girl Jesus kedi that was just icing on the cake i didn't know he can run like that gosh you made my day shem

Me: and now im in deep shit ntombi tell me how the hell am i gonna face them now huh and jase Jesus hes gonna kill me

Ntombi: ooh please girl just use your tears to get out of this...you know he cant stand seeing you hurt

Me: ntombi!

Ntombi: ooh please kedi you are pregnant use your hormones to justify your rambo actions

***we both laughed mxm this girl is crazy...we continued to talk some more she even suggested we go downstairs cause she said the guys left but yho what if they come back while im relaxing in the lounge so eventually she left and went downstairs and i just got into bed thinking hard about how im going to tackle this issue i think i dozed off with my mind all over the place cause i woke up when i felt a presence of someone next to me so i opened my eyes only to find jase sitting on a chair next to the bed staring at me and i felt my insides turning... ooh God.... i thought to my self, i sat up straight with my heart beat through my chest

Jase: explain

i just kept quiet looking everywhere else except towards him

Jase: you know i hate repeating myself

Me: you. ..you broke your promise and anger

took over and i just lost it

***i said all that with a low voice....i could feel his eyes piercing through me ***

Jase: listen and listen good cause im never gonna repeat this ever again...if you ever in this life time or the next do that shit ever again kedi i swear il do something il regret later do i make myself clear

***he said that with a threatening tone and i just nodded ***

Jase: KHULUMA MAN (talk man)

Me: ye...yes

Jase: good now go freshen up and come downstairs to eat

***he said that standing ***

Me: can i eat in here

Jase: dont piss me off

***i got out of bed and went to rinse my mouth

and we went downstairs with my heart beating out of my chest we got there and we went to sit in the lounge, the guys where sitting there watching some car show....i just sat down not even looking at them and ntombi came with my plate and she winked at me holding a laugh mxm and she also gave jase his plate of food too, i did a silent prayer and ate....the guys were chatting amongst themselves and ntombi would join in the conversation here and there it was so awkward that i felt invisible even jase didn't say a word to me or even look at me, after i was done i went to the kitchen and i put the plate in the dishwasher and i went upstairs and got in bed and cried my eyeballs outafter a while the door opened and jase came in and i wiped my tears quickly ***

Jase:why are you crying

Me: im not crying

Jase: mmmmh

***then he walked towards the bathroom ***

Me: you dont love me anymore or care about me....do you want me to move out jase

Jase: askies

***he said that turning around ***

Me: your brothers hate me now for embarrassing and disrespecting them and im sure you despise me also at least give me the rest of the week to find a place to stay

***he just gave me a blank look...there was no emotion ok my "reverse psychology "didn't work at all ***

Me: im sorry jase i don't know what happened i was just angry i couldn't control it please find it in your heart to forgive me

***he just stood there staring at me...gosh this is not working... then he sighed ***

Jase: what did i say about you threatening to move out

me: you are cold towards me jase all of you are and i cant take it so its better i just leave

Jase: and go where

***i just shrug my shoulders ok so he doesn't mind me leaving ooh God what have this crazy hormones gotten me into i just started crying hysterically ***

Jase: i dont have time for your tears kedi ok im in pain and i need to rest

***he said that walking to the bathroom and i got out of bed and i walked downstairs and went to the cinema room and i sat there with the screen off rocking myself back and forth thinking what if they tell their grandmother,grandfather and their father of how i disrespected them and they see me as unfit to be their daughter in law and start hating me....gosh what if his brothers hate me now i cried thinking about all this i mean they are the closest thing to family for me and now i might

loose them and end up all alone in this cruel world...i was disturbed from my thoughts by a hand touching my face and it was jase ok i didn't even hear him come in***

Jase: stop stressing and crying its not good for the baby

me: im sorry jase im really sorry

he sat next to me

Jase: im not mad at you kedi is just my ego is bruised

Me : ok how do i unbruise it

***he chuckled ok thats a good sign right him chuckling ***

Jase: that is not even a word

Me: im trying here jase

Jase: ok you can "unbruise" it by going back home on Saturday to meet your uncles and informing them that they have visitors next

weekend for lobola negotiations

i just froze.... ok im glad he still want to marry me but Jesus im not ready to meet them ...those evil people never liked or wanted my mom and me ...hell they abandoned me when i needed them the most after my parents died

Me: ummm choose something else

jase: thats the only way you can "unbruise " my ego

me: jase i...i cant

Jase: yes you can il be there my heart so you have nothing to worry about, even if it means paying them to stay in for the negotiations they'll get payed whatever amount they want....i just wanna make you mine officially with our ancestors blessings

i smiled like a retard

Me: you called me your heart

he chuckled while shaking his head

Jase: of everything i just said that all you heard

Me: yep cause that means you are not mad,
angry or pissed at me

he just shook his head laughing

Jase: what am i gonna do with you

me: love me some more

***he smiled pulling me for a kiss and i didn't
waste time shem i deepened the kiss instantly
already sitting on top of him....but eish this trip
im definitely not looking forward to it at all i can
already sense trouble and insults coming my
way from my uncles eish ***

.

[08/06, 15:47] Nor: INSERT.....61

.

.

.

JASE'S POV

*** i woke up the following morning feeling good and satisfied as hell the things kedi did to me was amazing i just lay there as she did things to me i never thought she could do before....yho her way of apologising was exquisite anyway i got out of bed leaving her to rest and i went to shower and got dressed and went downstairs ,ntombi was busy with breakfast ***

Me: morning

Ntombi: mmmh morning...why are you all smiles this morning

Me: its a good morning and my woman gave it to me like no other could

Ntombi: eew

Me: hai suka

***we laughed ***

Me: why are you awake this early

Ntombi: i woke up hungry as hell so i thought i should make breakfast for everyone instead of only for myself

me: mmmmh ok

Ntombi: you really love her neh

***she was getting all serious ***

Me: more than i love myself

Ntombi: that's good to knowdont hurt her jase she has a good and genuine heart...you know I've never been friends with someone like her before,someone who makes me wanna be good and all that

Me: yeah she has that quality ...who would have known i would settle down especially with one woman and love her this unconditionally....she drives me crazy to a point where sometimes i fear that i might wake up only to find out its all a dream,that shes not real that its just a figment

of my imagination or shit like that

Ntombi : ncoh

Me: tsek

***we laughed then the guys came downstairs and snakes went to ntombi and hugged her from behind and kissed her neck and i saw ntombi blush uncontrollably anyway as i was about to go upstairs to wake my heart up she walked in and the kitchen became quiet instantly ***

kedi: ummm guys im sorry about what i did i didn't mean to disrespect y'all like that, i dont know what happened but i think i went temporary insane for a minute there...please forgive me i can't take it with you all being mad at me

***she kept quiet and wiped her already falling tears ai my baby is a cry baby man ***

Kedi: please say something guys im apologising

here please

Jay: come here

***he opened his arms for her and she went to him and they hugged it out then pulled apart ***

Kedi: so do you forgive your kotiza

jay smiled

Jay: of course

kedi: thank you

then she went to stand in front of muzi

Kedi: im sorry muzi please forgive me

***i can see shes giving him those puppy dog eyes, i swear i wanted to laugh at how kedi has us wrapped around her little finger and the guys dont even know it but i couldn't cause everyone was all serious ***

Muzi: i think you broke my hip

kedi: im sooo sorry please forgive me please
muzi

Muzi: its ok i forgive you but never do that again

Kedi: i promise i wont...thank you

they also hugged it out and pulled apart then she went to snakes and stood before him

Kedi: nhlaka im sorry for what i did i disrespected you in front of your woman please forgive me im sorry

Snakes: you know even ntombi has never disrespected me like that

Kedi: im sorry snakes

Snakes: you know what will happen if you repeat what you did again

Kedi: yeah you'll make me disappear from the face of earth by just using your phone

i could see kedi was holding a laugh...you see what i mean when i say she has us wrapped around her little finger mxm

Kedi: am i forgiven now

Snakes : yeah you forgiven... come here

***they also hugged it out while laughing then they pulled apart and she went to ntombi and hugged her tight whispering something in her ear ***

Me: can we go and eat now

*** she came to me and perked my lips then she helped ntombi with the breakfast and they served us and they also sat down and ate after we were done we told the girls we have some business we need to take care of and i kissed my heart and we left....muzi left for the slaughter house while the three of us went to the warehouse, we will join muzi after we are done with those bitches... anyway we arrived at the warehouse and went inside to where they tied those two bitches but we started with palesa first ***

Me: well well palesa we meet again

***he eyes popped out and she tried to say

something but she had a ductape on her mouth and i took it off her roughly and she cried out***

Pale: jase im sorry please forgive me

me: why

Pale: so...some guy named mpendulo approached me and offered me some cash to steal all your clients and company's information...at first i refused but....but when i started showing interest in you...you just ignored my advances towards you so i thought i have nothing to loose plus he was offering alot of money so i started collecting all the information

***me and the guys we laughed out loud ok like this bitch is really dumb ***

me: i dont know if you're dumb or what the thing is you've been working for the devil and you had no idea and on top of that you betrayed him nc nc nc palesa why

Palesa: im sorry jase my love for you made me make stupid decisions....ive learned my lesson please don't hurt me

me: well that bastard mpendulo is dead and you're about to join him baby

i gave her an evil smile

pale: jase please i know you care about me and you wont hurt me please let me go

Me: bitch you're delusional i dont care about you....youre nothing but a used up vagina and nothing else

Pale: jase ple...

Me: VOETSEK... YOU BETRAYED ME PALESA AFTER I TRUSTED YOU WITH MY BUSINESS AND YOU DID THAT TO ME NX YOU KNOW WHAT YOU'RE JUST A WASTE OF BREATH

*** i took jays knife from him and i held her head from behind with her crying for me not to hurt her and i slit her throat and watched blood

gushing out of her throat, some of them were even choking her and it was the end of the road for her nx.....jay told the guards to bring the other bitch in and they did and as soon as she saw palesa 's dead body she started trembling with fear***

Jay: ok we have places to be now talk why did you set kedi up

Karabo: i dont know what you are talking about

then jay slapped her so hard that blood started coming out of her mouth

Jay: TALK!

she kept quiet while crying silently snakes took out a knife and stabbed her on the thigh and she screamed out with pain

Snakes: BITCH TALK WE DONT HAVE ALL DAY

Karabo: mpendulo said i should

Me: mpendulo again nc nc nc....you know hes dead right

Karabo: what noooo

Jay: bafo this bitch is useless nje

***he looked at snakes ***

Jay: you wanna do the honours

Snakes took out his gun and shot her on the head and emptied the rest of his bullets on the rest of her body and we told the guards to clean up and we left for the slaughter house and when we got there we were shocked to the core

Jay: and now

Muzi: what? this bitch wanted to be like one of the guys and send out a hit on me so i cut off her breasts so she can really feel like one of the guys eish and its a pity i dont have the equipment in here to install a penis on her

*** we busted into a loud laughter mara muzi***

Jay: is she still alive

muzi: yeah i still want her alive there's still alot i need to do to her like beating the shit out of her

Me: shit

Muzi: shes still has three months to live and im gonna have fun bringing hell to her....shes gonna wish she never met me

Snakes: and im gonna bring popcorns everyday to enjoy the horror movie

***we laughed ***

Muzi: plus there's some experiments i need to try on her

Me: so shes gonna be your giny pig

***he laughed ***

Muzi: yeah... damn im gonna have fun

he had an evil smile we haven't seen on him in a long time....damn natasha is about to experience hell on earth

KEDI'S POV

*** it already saturday and i wish i could just disappear cause i have to meet my evil uncles in a couple of hours anyway i woke up to jase entering me and i gasped he started moving with a fast pace he was busy groaning soo loud while he went in and out of me hard after a while i felt his body tense up and he slammed into me hard and growled then he pulled out and layed next to me holding me tight with my head on his chest while he kissed the top of my forehead...he was breathing heavily ***

Me: what time is it

Jase: around 5 am

Me: ok

Jase: you'll be fine my heart il be there with you

Me: isnt there another way of us getting married

without me going back there

Jase: this is the only way kedi

Me: i know but....

he interrupted me

Jase: no buts we are going and next weekend
im paying lobola

***i just kept quiet and he got on top of me
again and inserted himself hard and began
thrusting in and out of me fast hitting all the
right spots gosh mara this guy just came and
already his hard and busy hammering my poor
pussy again ***

Jase: you're going to marry me kedi come rain
or sunshine

***he said that pounding me hard i felt my
whole body losing control ***

Me: ohhh ja...se

***gosh he was giving it to me good ***

Jase: your mine kedi and il fucken kill anyone who stands between me making you my wife

***gosh he went deeper and harder and out of the blue an orgasm hit me so hard that my whole body shook uncontrollably but yho he didn't stop he just went on and on ***

Jase: you gonna be my wife next weekend kedi and il castrate anyone who stands in my way

***he said that to me with sweat dripping on my body while hammering my pussy gosh i think this guy sometimes forget that his dick is huge and that im pregnant bathong anyway after a while he came and pulled out and collapsed next to me breathing heavily ***

Jase: fuck i love you my heart

Me: i love you too my king

he pulled me towards him and held me tight

Jase: sleep my heart we have a long journey

ahead of us in a few hours

Me: the one im not looking foward to

Jase: you'll be fine now rest il wake you up to get ready

***i just closed my eyes exhaling loudly then i dosed off.....i felt someone shaking me ***

Jase: wake up

Me: mmmm

Jase: my heart wake up

Me: mmm let me sleep

Jase: we have to leave in an hour.. kedi wake up man

Me: im not going now let Me sleep

Jase: uyahlanya(you are mad) wake up

***then i heard him walking away after a few minutes i felt the covers being pulled off my body then he picked me up from the bed with my eyes closed and suddenly i felt warm water

hitting my bare body then i quickly opened my eyes and he put me down...he was also naked anyway we took an innocent shower and dried ourselves,lotioned and got dressed....he made the bed and i put everything il need in my hand bag and we went downstairs, we found jay in the kitchen eating***

Me:hi

Jay: kotiza

Me: you'll never stop calling me that neh

Jay: never

i just smiled shaking my head

Jay: you good

i sighed

Me: yeah

Jay: you dont look good

Jase: shes just nervous she'll be ok

Jay: mmmmh dont worry we got your back

Jase: that's what ive been telling her but i guess it hasn't sunk in yet in her beautiful thick skull

Me: really jase

Jase: what

***i gave him a death scare and he just laughed and he kissed my cheek mxm anyway we ate our breakfast and we left for my hood ***

***NARRATED ***

*** kedi was sitting at the back quiet thinking about the trip they are taking and whether her uncles will treat her good or not and whether they will agree to take part in the lobola negotiations until jase interrupted her from her thoughts***

Jase: i dont like that kedi

Kedi: what

Jase: you stressing like that.... its not good for my son

***she just kept quiet while looking out of the window ***

Jase: bafo stop the car

*** jay parked on the side of the road and he got off the car and came at the back and sat next to her while jay started driving the car***

Jase: hey look at me

***she did look at him ***

Jase: you're not that little helpless girl anymore kedi and those old fools dont have any hold over you

Jay: remember now you have us and we wont let anything happen to you

Kedi : ok

***it came out as a whisper then jase pulled her closer to his body and she put her head on his

chest listening to his heart beat and inhaling his perfume which calmed her nerves in a way.....well after some time they arrived and she directed jay to one of her uncle's house and he parked next to the house ***

Jase: you ready

*** kedi nodded and he pulled her face close to his and smashed his lips on hers and they kissed then he brushed her belly ***

Jase: you gonna go in alone first and talk to him cause we dont wanna seem disrespectful in a way ok unless he forces our hand

Kedi: ok

Jay: be strong ok remember we just outside when you need us

*** she nodded and opened the door and walked inside the gate with jase all anxious and worried about what might happen***

Jay: relax will you

Jase: how can i jay we know this people dont want her and now shes in there alone

Jay: we have her back so relax

***meanwhile kedi walked in and knocked on the door an older woman she remembered as her aunt (her uncle's wife) opened the door and froze when she looked at her she could tell who kedi was cause she looked like her mother someone she was jealous of and disliked very much ***

Kedi: dumela mama (hello ma)

Woman: what do you want

***rude bitch kedi thought to herself and she took a deep breath ***

Kedi: is uncle around I'd like to talk to him

Woman: my husband is busy he doesn't have time for murderers and sluts

kedi closed her eyes and took a deep breath again

Woman: ooh i see you're pregnant i bet you dont even know who the father is nx

kedi kept herself calm and fought back her tears then a male voice spoke inside the house

Voice: Gladys who's at the door

Woman: come and see for yourself heeh you wont believe it

few seconds later her uncle stood before her

Uncle: kedi

Kedi: uncle

Uncle:what are you doing here

Kedi: can i please talk to you its important uncle

Woman: say whatever you want where you standing and leave

Kedi: uncle please its important

Uncle: come in and make it quick im quite busy

Woman: papa you can't let this witch in my house

Uncle: Gladys let her say what she wants to say so she can leave

Gladys clicked her tongue and walked inside and uncle made way for kedi to get in....they walked to the lounge and sat down

Woman: talk we dont have all day

Kedi: ummm uncle i.... i met someone and he asked me to marry him

Woman: now how is that any of our business

Uncle : Gladys man

***he warned ***

Uncle : now why are you here

kedi swallowed hard

Kedi: he...he wants to pay magadi (lobola) for me

Uncle: you haven't answered my question

Kedi: you have visitors from the khumalo elders next weekend to ask for my hand in marriage

***Gladys clapped her hands and laughed ***

Gladys: which witchcraft did you use on the poor guy heh....tell me who in their right mind would want to marry a damaged slut like you

Kedi: aunty please dont insult me

Gladys: heeh you can talk back at me now

Uncle: listen here i will not get myself associated with a murderer ok and i will not sit in on magadi negotiations of someone who got her friend killed

Gladys: do you know if i blow the whistle now the community will gather in my yard to stone you to death

Kedi: i didn't kill anyone or get someone killed uncle i loved thato more than anything

Gladys: ooh please tell that to someone who cares....do you have any idea what thatos

mother is going through

Uncle: listen here kedi count me out of those negotiations....you ceased to be my niece when you started sleeping with your brother sam and on top of it you got your friend killed....you are nothing but an abomination

Gladys: now leave my house

Kedi: uncle please

Gladys: I SAID OUT YOU DAUGHTER OF A WITCH

***kedi continued to cry as she stood up and walked out and ran out of the yard....jase saw her and quickly got out of the car so did jay ***

Jase: my heart whats wrong

he said that as she threw herself on him

Jase: kedi what happened

Kedi: lets leave jase please i dont wanna be here

Jase: WHAT HAPPENED

kedi: they...they insulted me jase and called me a murderer and a witch...they called me an abomination and they said i slept with sam voluntarily

Jase: WHAT!

***jase started breathing heavily angry as hell and kedi wiped her tears feeling defeated and hurt as hell ***

Jay: get in the car

***he said to kedi and she got in the car and jay gave her the car keys ***

Jase: we will be back just now lock the doors

Kedi: jase lets leave this place please

Jase: what did i say to you this morning

***kedi kept quiet ***

Jase: i told you next weekend you'll become my wife come rain or sunshine didn't i

kedi nodded then jase turned her face and kissed her lips and closed the door and the twins went inside the yard and knocked on the door and gladys opened

Gladys : can i help you

Jay: we're looking for the man of the house

Gladys was surprised that jay was speaking pure zulu while he looked coloured

Voice: who's that now Gladys

he came to the door

Uncle: can i help you

Jase: can we talk

Uncle:i dont know who you are but you...

***jase interrupted him ***

Jase: this is about kedi your niece

Gladys: what has that witch done now

***jase felt his anger brewing by the minute and

he gave Gladys a death stare that made her feel uneasy and she kept quiet instantly***

Jay: can we come in

Uncle: i dont know who you are so i can't let you in my house

Jay: im jay and hes jason khumalo

Uncle then remembered that kedi said a khumalo asked for her hand in marriage

Uncle: ummm ok come in

they got in and went to the lounge and sat down

Jase: can you excuse us mam we need to have a man to man talk

Gladys: this is my house you cant tell me what to do

Jase: sir please talk to your wife

*** jase said that with a threatening tone and Uncle felt uneasy ... he was actually

uncomfortable around themthe was this dark aura around them that he couldn't understand ***

Uncle: Gladys excuse us

Gladys: Thomas

Uncle: now Gladys

***she stood up looking annoyed as hell and left ***

Uncle: ok now what brings you to my house

Jay: kedi just told us you were rude towards her

Uncle: ohh is that so

Jase: i dont have time for games ok ... now listen here Thomas you gonna be there for the negotiations and you gonna lead them

Uncle: you not gonna tell me

jase interrupted him

Jase: SHUT UP AND LISTEN

***Uncle stood up ***

Jay: SIT

***Uncle sat down with a bit of fear written on his face ***

Jay: you're still free today because we thought you gonna be useful to us or else you'd be dead or locked up in jail like that useless brother of yours

Uncle: what are you talking about ...who are you

Jase : you're about to find out

***we both gave him an evil smile.... nx this bastard just forced our hands ***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 15:47] Nor: INSERT.....62

.

.

.

*** NARRATED***

uncle: what...what do you want

Jase: like i said you gonna be part of the lobola negotiations and you gonna lead them

Jay: and you gonna make sure everything goes accordingly

Uncles: YOU CANT COME TO MY HOUSE AND TELL ME RUBBISH

jase: YOU STARTING TO GET ON MY LAST NERVE NOW...I SEE US BEING LENIENT WITH YOU MAKES YOU THINK WE ASKING YOU

Gladys: papa is everything ok

gladys said walking in

Jase: LEAVE WOMAN

uncle: DONT TALK TO MY WIF....

he interrupted him

Jase: SHUT THE FUCK UP

***he roared and the room went quiet ***

Jase: WE HAVING A MAN TO MAN TALK NOW
LEAVE WOMAN!

***gladys looked at her husband and he nodded
and she walked out shaken a bit***

Jay: now Thomas are you gonna do what you
are supposed to do or should we take matters
into our own hands meaning you gonna join
your brother in c-max prison and be some ugly
guy's bitch

Jase: we waiting

Uncle: are you threatening me boy

Jay: no i dont go around threatening people nje
thomas i practice what i preach

Jase: bafo enough of this cat and mouse game
you playing with this man now should we
go ahead and send all the information we have
on you to the authorities or what

***jase said to Thomas with a serious face and
thomas could see they meant business ***

Jay: we dont have all day

Thomas: wha...what information

Jay: your stupid brother sang like a canary in his
prison cell that you knew about their diabolical
plan of killing your brother and sister-in-law ooh
and that you profited from ithow the hell do
you sleep at night busy chowing the same
money that your brother worked so hard for
with that witch you call your wife and those
useless waste of breath you call your children
while kedi the person whom that money
belonged to is starving to death huh

Jay: doesn't your brother haunt you in your sleep or something

Thomas eyes popped out and he started breathing heavily

Jay: calm down we dont want you to have a heart attack....not yet anyway

Thomas: he...hes lying

Jase: and you think the authorities will think so i mean Harold has nothing to loose now Thomas hes a living corpse in there

Thomas looked down with his hands on his head thinking about his evil deeds catching up with him

Jay: we waiting man khuluma (talk)

Thomas: ok il do it

Jay: good now you will convince some other elders since Susan and that witch thato's mother poisoned everyone against kedi

Jase: ooh and keep that busy body wife of yours away from kedi or you'll become a widower instantly cause il castrate anyone who insults or hurt kedi... ok

Thomas: yees

Jay: good now take this its R10 000 ...its for the preparations for next weekend...for food and drinks including the traditional beer and anything that y'all will need for next weekend

***he gave him a roll of money and thomas's eyes popped out ***

Jase: dont be greedy thomas cause we have eyes and ears everywhere so dont dare us

***Thomas nodded... one thing for sure is hes never in his life felt intimidated by anyone and now hes intimidated by some boys to a point that hes about to pee on himself....he could tell this boys meant business and that they are dangerous and they have this evil aura around them and that they extremely over protective

of his niece***

Jay: good a cow will be delivered on Friday

Thomas: a cow

Jase: we are leaving with our bride next weekend so whatever traditional rights will be needed to be done for her should be done next weekend cause shes never coming back

*** Thomas couldn't believe this was happening for kedi...he was jealous cause his daughter's not even one of them are married and they are older than kedi but he knew he couldn't act on the jealousy cause he has alot to loose if he pisses off this boys***

Thomas: then a goat will also be needed and she should come back on Thursday so we can do everything for her from friday

Jase: it will also be delivered on Friday and she will arrive on Thursday

***"just like that" thomas thought to himself...he

couldn't believe his most hated niece in the family was about to be married into a rich family while his daughters cant even attract a mere construction worker***

Thomas: ok

Jase: one more thing you owe someone an apology for being an ass towards her

Thomas closed his eyes looking down....he couldn't believe they wanted him to apologise to kedi

Thomas: ok

***they all stood up and walked out of the house and yard and jase knocked on the car window and kedi opened her eyes quickly and saw it was jase and he opened the door and jase helped out of the car...then she saw her uncle and tears quickly filled her eyes thinking about all those hurtful things him and his wife said to her and thomas cleared his throat ***

Uncle: ummm kedi im sorry about what happened earlier on...it shouldn't have happened and it will never happen again

kedi just nodded she could tell that apology was forced and it wasn't sincere at all but she just nodded for peace to rein then they got in the car and drove to the cemetery for kedi to visit her parents.....meanwhile Thomas went inside the house with a heavy heart and found Gladys in the lounge

Gladys: what happened

Thomas: i dont want to talk about it

Gladys: im your wife thomas and i have a right to know

Thomas: fine....since you want to know next weekend its kedi's magadi negotiations and you better be on your best behaviour

Gladys: askies what did you say

Thomas: you heard me now bring me

something to eat

Gladys: tell me your not going to sit in on those negotiations

Thomas: im her uncle aren't i

Gladys: OVER MY DEAD BODY WILL THAT SLUT'S MAGADI BE PAID NEXT WEEKEND

thomas: SHUT UP....NYWE NYWE NYWE NYWE ... IS SHE YOUR BROTHER'S CHILD NX...OVER YOUR DEAD BODY YA MASEPA NOW BRING ME MY FOOD WOMAN BEFORE I SLAP YOU

as much as thomas didn't want kedi married especially to a rich man he knew he couldn't jeopardise his freedom over this....he just wanted to lead this negotiations so that the twins could leave him alone

KEDI'S POV

Me: what did you say or do to my uncle to suddenly agree

i asked him while we laying in bed after we arrived home 5 hours ago ...after we left my uncle's house we went by the cemetery and after i was done we came back home and immediately jase and jay left they said they had to be somewhere quickly so i cooked and dished up for us and i ate and put his food in the microwave and i went upstairs to our bedroom, i showered wore my pyjamas and i layed in bed i think i fell asleep cause i woke up to jase planting kisses all over my face i knew it was him cause his perfume gave him away....he then showered and came to lay next to me since he said he just ate his food downstairs

Jase: dont worry about that

Me: mmmmh

Jase: my heart you'll leave next week on

Thursday afternoon with ntombi to your father's house

like hell i am

Me: no im not

Jase: yes you are

Me: jase il go friday late at night and il sleep at a nearby bnb im not sleeping in that house

Jase: kedi my decision is final you leaving on Thursday with ntombi...we need to do things right and plus how sure are you that your step sisters will clean the house or even help with cooking

i just kept quiet i didn't like this one bit...i can't sleep two nights in that house my wounds are still fresh i dont think i have it in me to not breakdown while im in there

Jase: after this my heart you wont have to go back there again unless you will be visiting your parents graves

i continued to keep quiet and sat up straight wanting to get off the bed but its like he read my mind and he held my hand tight

Jase: you'll be fine my heart i promise you...there's no other way we need to do things the right way

Me: you weren't the one who was raped and beaten up like a slave in that house jase....you weren't the one who was forced to eat rotten food to gain strength after days of starvation and being worked like a slave....i cant jase im sorry i cant the wounds are still fresh i can't go back there

***i was now crying...GOD i cant im in a good place now i can't go back there i wont survive it....that house has many traumatizing memories for me from since the following day my parents were laid to rest when i was 12....i just can't go back there plus im pregnant il be way too stressed and its not good for my baby

so i can't***

Jase:my heart i know how you feeling but there's no other way you have to make sure you see that everything goes accordingly cause we doing everything on Saturday....its the lobola and any other cultural practices your family does to a new bride cause i dont want you going back there again

Me: i can stomach being in that house for the whole day but there's no way in hell im sleeping in that Godforsaken house jase....this lobolas can stop if it needs be

i said that roughly getting out of his grip

Jase: what did you just say

***i didn't answer him i just walked out of the bedroom and went downstairs to the kitchen and i saw his car keys on the counter and i took themi just wanted to calm my nerves i needed some air and a drive will do me good and went to the main door and i opened the

door and i went to the garage and pressed the remote control and the garage door opened then i felt a tight grip on my arm***

Jase: GAVE ME THE CAR KEYS

***mxm he snatched them from my hand and closed the garage door and pulled me inside the house and closed the door...he let go of me and looked at me with his hands on his waist ***

Jase: what were you trying to do

Me: i need some air jase

Jase: AND THERE'S NO AIR WHERE YOU STANDING

***mxm i just kept quiet ***

Jase: dont ever in your life drive when you angry or hurt do i make myself clear...you want to put my child in danger huh

***he said that looking pissed with a frown on his face then he sighed ***

Jase: i know you scared kedi trust me i know....i also cant stomach the thought of you being in that house with those people but i have to be a man about it and be strong, i want your ancestors blessing including your parents' blessing meaning we have to do things accordingly please my heart meet me half way here

Me: please jase please dont make me sleep in that house

he walked to me and held me tight

Jase: please do it for me...for us and our son

Me: im scared

Jase: please trust me kedi and do this please

i just nodded out of defeat i love jase with everything in me so im gonna do this for us even though im not comfortable with it

Jase: thank you

Me: i love you jase

Jase: i love you more my heart....we almost there my heart to our happily ever and after just one more fight and it will be a smooth ride from there onwards

Me: ok

he perked my lips and picked me up bridal style and we went upstairs and of course he chowed my vagina the whole night like it was the last day on earth mxm

today its thursday and ive been down since last week saturday, jase tried to lift up my spirit but he failed dismally shem....since sunday he took me to muzi's practice to get checked out cause i wasnt eating enough and i was loosing a little bit of weight but hey im glad ntombi will be going with me yho imagine if i was going alone

Jase: im worried about you

jase brought me back from my thoughts

Me: il be fine

he sighed and sat next to me

Jase: me and the guys we will be in a guest house nearby

me: ok

he pulled me to him and kissed my forehead

Jase: il just be a phone call away my heart ok

Me: ok... im scared jase that house is...

***he interrupted ***

Jase: i know my heart trust me i know....but please instead of thinking about what happened to you in that house think about the goal ahead my heart....us finally getting married and living happily, this is our last fight from now on its happiness.... we've indured alot my heart i think this is it for usour happily ever and after

Me: you think so

Jase: yes my queen

***i smiled widely looking at him and he smiled too then he perked my lips...one thing that people should know is that its not easy to face your traumatic past head on and im afraid thats what's gonna happen from today as soon as i enter that house without jase next to me to protect me, im scared cause I've managed to bury those memories deep inside of me and now they might come back flooding like a river

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 15:47] Nor: INSERT.....63

- .
- .
- .

***NARRATED ***

jase: you ok

he asked looking at kedi and back on the road....he was driving

Kedi: il be fine

Jase: just hang in there for me my heart it will soon be over

kedi just nodded and jase brushed her thigh and squeezed it a bit tight then he breathed out....after a while they arrived at Centerville and all the cars parked outside....all the guys came with their cars

Jase: i love you my heart

Kedi: i love you too my king

Jase: whenever you need me just call il be here within a blink of an eye ok

Kedi: ok

Jase: and you know the drill, dont eat anything thats given to you by anyone except ntombi ok

Kedi: yeah

Jase: and take care of my son

Kedi: i will relax

jase got out of the car and came to open for kedi and he helped her out of the car and held her tight close to his chest, then jay came to them

Jay: come here

*** kedi went to him and he also hugged her then they pulled apart***

Jay: the same kedi that once beat the shit out of three grown ass men and made another one

run like a girl should go in there, not the scared and intimidated kedi ok

kedi nodded with her eyes sparkling with tears she was holding back

Jay: remember you carrying a little beast in there and no mother of a beast is a weakling especially to witches and wizards

Jase: my heart that doesnt mean you should fight ok...you not a straatmate but jase's heart

Jay: and jay's kotiza

kedi laughed and jase pulled her in for a tight squeeze and kissed the top of her head then ntombi,snakes and muzi walked to them

Muzi: you ready

kedi nodded and muzi opened his arms and kedi went in for a hug... so did snakes

Snakes: we only gonna be a phone call away

***kedi and ntombi nodded ***

Muzi: if you feel unsafe in any way call us ok

Ntombi : ok

***people were staring even neighbours were peeping through their Windows...the guys except for jase opened their car boots and they took out shopping bags full of groceries and went inside the yard with them....some guys that were in the yard came to help...after they were done jay and snakes took out kedi and ntombi's traveling bags out of the car ***

Ntombi: you ready sistaz

Kedi: no but i have to do this... right

Ntombi: dont worry you'll be fine....remember you got me

Kedi: thank you for being here ntombi it means alot to me

Ntombi: dont sweat it....remember loyalty is important in the khumalo family...so we should always have each other's backs

they hugged and the guys came to them

Jay: you have to go in...take care of each other
ok

Them : ok

***jase pulled kedi in for a long deep kiss not giving a rats ass that hes in front of his fathe in law 's house and that people are watching, after a while he pulled out of the kiss and kissed her forehead

Jase: i love you

he said with his deep voice

Kedi: i love you too

***she said with her soft voice ***

Jase: just a phone call away ok...im just a phone call away my heart

Kedi: ok

Jase: take care of my son ok

Kedi: i will

he kissed her lips one more time and went to ntombi and kissed her forehead too....snakes also kissed his woman and the girls walked in the yard pulling their traveling bags looking dashing as fuck while the guys drove out to the guest house they rented out to talk business and to also organize for a tight security for Saturday

***kedi and ntombi walked in the yard all the way to the house and they knocked at the door and entered...there were some old women in the living room drinking tea, they greeted them and they greeted back with some attitude....then the devil herself walked in holding a plate full of cookies and clicked her tongue ***

Gladys: you have no shame at all....exchanging saliva with that thug of a boyfriend of yours in front of your father's house like that mxm anyway i dont blame you...like mother like daughter nx

***ntombi was getting irritated by gladys attitude ***

Kedi: where should we put our luggage aunty

Gladys: where did you sleep before you ran away

kedi couldn't believe it

Kedi: aunty you want us to put our luggage in the storeroom

Gladys: that was your bedroom isn't it

***kedi just laughed ***

Kedi: lets leave this place ntombi

Ntombi: hell no....which way are the bedrooms

Kedi: through that passage

Ntombi: lets go

Gladys: where do you think you going

Ntombi: is this your father's house or your husband's house

Gladys: askies

Ntombi: kedi lets go im sure we will find a clean bedroom to use

Gladys: i dare you to use any of those bedrooms

Kedi: aunty khante whats your problem with me huh what have i done to you for you to hate me this much

Gladys: SHUT UP YOU DAUGHTER OF A WHORE

***kedi felt anger brewing from the pit of her stomach ***

Kedi: DONT INSULT MY MOTHER GLADYS.
..SHE WAS WAY OF A WOMAN THAT YOU'LL EVER BE EVEN IN DEATH SHE'S STILL WAY BETTER THAN YOU

***she shouted ***

Gladys: you raising your voice at me kedi...me
Gladys

***Thomas walked in the living room after he heard people shouting ***

Thomas: WHATS ALL THIS NOISE ABOUT

kedi: ntombi call nhlaka so we can leave this place

Thomas: no one is going anywhere

Gladys : let her leave papa shes not welcomed here

Thomas: shut up Gladys...didn't i tell you i want peace when she comes nx....kedi you'll use the spare bedroom with your friend im sure you know which one im talking about

Kedi: yes uncle....lets go ntombi

*** they went to the bedroom and they got in and closed the door and kedi sat on the bed and a sob escaped her mouth and ntombi held her tight***

Ntombi: she doesn't deserve your tears

kedi....no crying is allowed until we leave this

place ok....never show them you hurting kedi
they'll feed off your weakness

Kedi: ok... i just dont understand why they hate
me like this

Ntombi: well its all on them...wena just murder
them with kindness and you'll see they'll die
slowly with guilt

Kedi: wow i love that " murder them with
kindness " part...great advice nhlaka's bae

she said that while wiping her tears

Ntombi: hai suka

*** she said pushing her playfully then the door
opened and Gladys entered ***

Gladys: im sure you didn't come here to sit in
here and gossip now go to the kitchen and
wash those dishes

Kedi: yes aunty

***Gladys gave kedi an evil look and clicked her

tongue then she walked out then kedi and ntombi laughed then they went to the kitchen and started washing a bunch of dirty dishes that looked like they've been in there for days

Voice: you shouldn't overwork yourself its not good for the baby

they turned and looked towards the door and a woman kedi knew as her aunt was standing there with a nervous smile on her face

Kedi: im fine

Aunt: the last time i saw you were still young now you've grown into a beautiful woman

kedi just kept quiet thinking about how this woman rejected taking her in after her parents died like she had some contagious deadly disease or something

Aunt: you a carbon copy of your mother and i see my brother's features as well

***kedi's phone rang saving her from this awkward moment that just occurred.. she walked away answering her phone ***

Kedi: my king

Jase: my heart are you ok

Kedi: yeah im just tired but il be fine

Jase: dont overwork yourself kedi...rest please

Kedi: yes daddy

jase sighed

Jase: i miss you my heart

Kedi: i miss you too

Jase: how are things there

Kedi: Gladys happened... can you believe she wanted me and ntombi to sleep in the storeroom

Jase:WHAT!

kedi: calm down jase uncle intervened and

called Gladys into order

jase was fuming with anger

Jase: did she touch you

Kedi: no

Jase: im on my way

Kedi: jase im fine we are busy now maybe later

Jase: fine let me face time you

Kedi: jase...

***he dropped the call then video called her and she answered ***

Jase: you've been crying

Kedi: jase im ok now

Jase: let me see your cheeks

***kedi sighed and showed him ***

Jase: what did she say to you

Kedi: the usual please can we drop it now

Jase: we not dropping anything kedi that woman is getting on my fucken last nerve manje and she doesn't know she poking the beast in me and it will fuck her up bad...shes fucken poking me

Kedi: my king please calm down

jase kept quiet busy rubbing his forehead...his face was red with anger

Jase: shes poking me kedi she really is

kedi knew now that she had to calm jase down cause even veins where showing on his forehead

Kedi: i love you nkosi

jase kept quiet breathing heavily looking at kedi

Kedi: me and our son love you unconditionally my king please calm down

***jase kept quiet and closed his eyes then opened them again ***

Jase: i love you too my heart you and our bundle of joy in there

his voice was more deeper

Jase: im sorry kedi i shouldn't have forced you to come here

Kedi: im focusing on the goal jase and Gladys or anyone else can go hang themselves

Jase: thats the spirit

Kedi: you ok now

Jase: im still pissed but im calm

Kedi: good now let me get back to washing this filthy dishes

Jase: i love you

Kedi: i love you too

***then jase ended the video call and started pacing up and down in the room then jay walked in ***

Jay: whats wrong

Jase: that old bitch Gladys made kedi cry i swear on my mother's grave after this whole thing il make sure her death is slow and painful....worse than what susan went through

Jay: calm down man

Jase: i know kedi is strong and that she went through shit and came out strong but bafo there's a limit for everything

Jay: now lets concentrate on this lobola negotiations and see that they go well and the rest will follow

Jase: i need a smoke

Jay: you dont smoke jase

Jase: its either i fuck or hit a punching bag or i smoke to calm myself down...now i cant fuck kedi cause il hurt her and my son and there's no punching bag i can punch all my anger out on so i need a smoke

***he said that walking out to snakes cause hes

the one who smokes ***

meanwhile kedi went back to where ntombi was and continued with drying the dishes

Ntombi: this aunty of yours is actually nice

kedi: dont be fooled by that mask shes wearing shes like the rest of them

Ntombi: oh

kedi: yeah the day we buried my parents i heard her say to my uncles that shed rather die than to harbour a daughter of a witch in her house....she said they should have buried me with my mother cause i dont deserve to live

Ntombi: ohh my God kedi

kedi: dont trust anyone here ntombi they are all masters of deception

Ntombi: I hear you sistaz...im sorry you had to experience all that kedi especially in that age

Kedi: ba re (they say) what doesnt kill you

makes you stronger

Ntombi: amen to that

***they continued to wash the dishes chatting away until they were done and kedi took the washing cloths to hang them in the washing lane at the back....then she suddenly felt an ice cold chilling sensation running down her spine and then she felt the hair at the back of her head tightening as if someone was pulling it...she stood there frozen then she heard a whisper

"You finally came back my love...ive been waiting for you"she turned quickly and she saw a shadow but all of sudden it quickly disappeared.... she ran back to the house shaking with fear***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 15:47] Nor: INSERT.....64

.

.

.

KEDI'S POV

Ntombi: whats wrong

Me : i...he...i...

i was stuttering and shaking with fear*

Ntombi: calm down and tell me what happened

*** i did a breath in and out trying to calm myself down***

me: i..i heard a voice whispering to me then...then i turned and i saw a shadow of a person but it disappeared quickly

Ntombi: what....maybe it was one of the guys that are in the yard

Me : i was alone at the back ntombi

Ntombi: maybe its just your imagination kedi remember this place holds many shattering and traumatic memories for you

Me : yeah maybe its my mind playing tricks on me

Ntombi: its ok

*** she said rubbing my back then she poured some water in a glass and added some sugar and gave me to drink she said it will help calm me down***

Ntombi: lets go to the bedroom so you can lay down

Me: ok

***we went to the bedroom we were using and we layed in bed then all of a sudden the door opened roughly and Susan's daughters Amo

and Katli walked in ***

Katli: well well well the prodigal daughter is back

Amo: and what im asking myself is what shes doing in this house cause she know where her bedroom is

Ntombi: kedi are these ugly things talking about you

Me: im asking myself the same question

Katli: i see you grew some backbone now

Amo: mmmmh i can see that too sis

Ntombi: can we help you

Katli: you can help us by getting the fuck out of my mother's house

Ntombi: ohhh you mean her father's house right

Amo: askies

Ntombi: are you deaf

Amo: dont talk to me like you know me bitch

Ntombi: call me bitch one more time and you'll see what it do to that ugly face of yours....i dare you

me: ntombi this things are not worth you even talking to them...thats how irrelevant they are

Katli: you can talk now kedi heh or is it because of this thing that makes you think you can talk back at us

this bitches were starting to piss me off real bad now....i felt anger brewing from the pit if my stomach

me: listen here you low life bitches i have better things to do than to sit here and exchange insults with you two ...you are not worth it now leave this room before i let ntombi rearrange your faces

Katli: wow you can talk to us like that now

amo: life neh

Katli: just because you bewitched a rich man to marry you you think you've made it in life heh

ntombi: bitch please she doesnt need to bewitch any man for marriage....shes not like that witch you call your mother

Amo: WHAT DID YOU JUST SAY

Ntombi: i didn't stutter did i

Katli: FUCK YOU....YOU HAVE THE NERVE TO INSULT MY MOTHER IN HER HOUSE AND IN FRONT OF US

Ntombi: FUCK YOU TOO AND YOU HAVE THE ROTTEN NERVE TO INSULT KEDI INFRONT OF ME

***katli charged towards ntombi with the attempt to slap her but ntombi blocked her hand and she slapped her instead....katli held her cheek.....as amo was charging towards me the door opened and aunty walked in ***

Aunt: WHATS ALL THIS NOISE ABOUT

HUH...KATLI

katli: aunty tell this thing to leave my mothers house....shes not welcomed here

Aunt: the last time i checked this was her father's house so i dont get it when you say i should ask her to leave

Amo: aunty why are you taking her side

aunt: isn't this her father's house

****katli laughed with disbelief all over her face***

Katli: so now that this witch is about to get married to a rich man whose probably killed his way to riches you taking her side huh...betraying my mother just like that

ntombi: you say he probably killed his way to riches wena what has any of your boyfriends done to better their lives....look at how cheap you look and the clothes you wearing...im sure you busy opening that smelly thing between

your legs for some useless aids ridden
assholes who cant even afford to buy you a
common jean nx

***yho ntombi was spitting fire even amo and
katli had no comeback from that cause it
lookes like whatever ntombi said hit a
nerve...aunty was also shocked ***

Ntombi: now leave this room before i
completely loose it.....trust me you dont wanna
mess with me bitches

Katli: you will regret.....

i interrupted her

Me: LEAVE

Katli: this...this is not over...we own this place
sfebe watch your back

Ntombi: fuck off with your empty threats

***they left the room looking pissed and
hurt....aunty also left closing the door on her
way out***

Me: Ntombi

Ntombi: what

me: always remind me never to mess with you
yho

***she laughed and i joined in...Jesus this girl
can be ghetto if she wants to***

***NARRATED ***

*** jase was still pissed but smoking really help
calm him down abit...hes not a smoker but
earlier on he really needed it so now they were
in muzi'room discussing some business until
jase's phone rang it was baba***

Jase: baba

Baba: nkosi...are you with the rest of your
brother's

Jase: yebo baba

Baba:good now put me on loud speaker

jase did

Jay: you on loud speaker baba

Baba: ok we have a little problem boys

Muzi: what problem baba

Baba: dlamini and i we were checking if things are going to go well on Saturday then he stumbled upon something

Jay: stumble upon what baba

Baba: there's a restless spirit in that yard and its looking for one person and one person only

Jase: kedi

he said that in a defeated tone

Jay: what

Snakes: what did bab'dlamini say

Baba: the spirit is that of a person that committed suicide in that yard

Jase: i can't deal with this now. ..how on earth
im i gonna protect kedi from a ghost

***jase was getting worked up ***

Jay : will you just calm down

Baba: nkosi what is my number one rule on
presenting a problem to me

Jase: that the problem should be accompanied
by a solution

Baba: so why dont you let me finish before you
get all worked up

Jase: forgive me mbulazi please go on

Baba: one of my boys is on his way now to
you...he has two parcels with him the green box
is for ntombi, it has a bracelet in there and the
purple box is for kedi it has a bracelet and a
waist string for protection ...they must wear
them always and never take them off

Jase: ok

Baba: good also make sure you send some of your boys from that side to go to that house to help out as a cover up while their mission should be to keep an eye on the girls

Snakes: we're on it

Baba: i hope our accommodation is ready for tomorrow

Jay: its ready baba

Baba:good...how about security for Saturday

Jase: sorted

Baba: ok then il see you all later tomorrow

then he dropped the call

Snakes: how the fuck do we fight ghosts now

Jase: this is fucked up

Muzi: lets be thankful baba and bab'dlamini have some sort of solution

Jay: under no circumstances should yall tell ntombi or kedi about the ghost part

Jase: of course we cant

Snakes: yeah of course not we need to find an explanation for the bracelets and that waist string though

Jay: tell them they will protect them from any evil that family might throw at them...remind them how much that family hates kedi

Jase: yeah that might work

Snakes: yeah it might

they discussed some more and after a while the parcels arrived and immediately jase and snakes left for kedi's house with different cars but they went past Romans pizza and bought some for the girls. ...after some time they arrived and called the girls to come out and they did and got in the cars ...it was already getting dark outside

Kedi: hey

Jase: are you ok

Kedi: il be fine

Jase: what happened

she took a deep breath

Kedi: we had a run in with susan's daughters

Jase: what did they do

Kedi: what they know best..to insult me but
ntombi just showed them her ghetto side

***jase kept quiet trying to calm himself down

Kedi: calm down jase im ok

Jase: im sorry my heart i shouldn't have pushed
you to come here

***he said that looking up with his chest moving
up and down fast***

Kedi: please calm down jase im ok ...my focus
is on the goal and nothing they say to me is
gonna make me loose focus

Jase: please forgive me for making you do this

my heart i love you too much to hurt you
especially intentionally

Kedi: i know my king and there's nothing to
forgive jase i think its high time i faced my
demons head on and plus i have ntombi so
calm down its ok

***jase looked at kedi for sometime without
saying anything ***

Kedi: what

Jase: you are a phenomenal woman you know
that and im one lucky bastard to have you in my
life

Kedi: well thank you sir i get that alot

***she said that blushing and smiling and jase
just chuckled shaking his head ***

Jase: cocky aren't we

Kedi: im just saying hao

***then jase pulled kedi in for an explosive kiss

that left both of them gasping for air when they pulled out of the kiss***

Jase: i have something for you

then he took out the beautiful hand crafted bracelet and put it on kedi' s wrist then he kissed her hand

Kedi: ohh my God its beautiful jase

jase just smiled

Jase: not as beautiful as you though

*** and kedi blushed then jase' s face went serious all of a sudden***

Jase: the next gift is a bit questionable please trust me enough and accept it without asking questions i cant answer

Kedi: whats going on jase

Jase: do you trust me

Kedi: yes i do

then jase took out the waist string

Jase: please wear this on your waist my heart...it will protect you and our son

Kedi: what...no

Jase: kedi you just said you trust me

Kedi: what is it jase

Jase: just a string to protect you and my son

Kedi: protect us from what

Jase: no questions kedi please just do this

Kedi: askies i cant jase and where did you get that

Jase: no questions kedi i thought i made that clear

***his voice was more firm and kedi just kept quiet and looked out of the window ***

Jase: my heart please i dont trust your family members ok this bracelet and waist string will protect you from any evil that they might throw at you

she continued to keep quiet

Jase: i love you kedi more than i love myself
and I'll never put both your lives in danger

***she continued to keep quiet and jase just
sighed and put his head on the steering wheel

Jase: im trying kedi...trying by all mean to
protect you but you not letting me do my job as
your man...the fact that im not with you in that
house kills me kedi...i know a lot of shit
happened since you got here and you not telling
me....im trying here please meet me half way
please i dont think il make it if something
happened to you or our son

he said that with pain in his voice

Jase: this will protect you kedi the only thing is
to wear it and never take it off until we leave
this place. ..thats all

Kedi: i heard Sam's voice earlier on after talking

to you on the phone and i saw a shadow but it disappeared quickly....im scared jase i dont wanna be here but i dont have a choice...i thought it was my mind playing tricks on me but i just can't get rid of this feeling that its not my imagination

jase's eyes popped out

Jase: ummm im sure its your imagination my heart remember hes dead

Kedi: i know...maybe it is my imagination but im still shaken though

Jase: come here

***kedi leaned in and they kissed then jase kissed her forehead ***

Jase: please wear this for protection my heart we shouldn't take any chances please

***kedi sighed ***

Kedi: ok

Jase:thank you my heart and never take them off ever even when you bathing

Kedi: ok i wont

Jase: you promise

Kedi: i promise

Jase: good now give me some sugar

kedi smiled and they kissed after a while they pulled out of the kiss

Jase: dont forget to pray my heart

Kedi: i wont forget

Jase: ok we bought you girls some pizza Kedi: thank you.... umm will i see you tomorrow

Jase: of course my heart it's hard enough i have to spend a couple of hours without seeing you so imagine a day no no no i think il run mad if i dont

kedi laughed so did jase

Jase: im serious

Kedi: i also dont think il make it a day without seeing your handsome, crazy and tall self

Jase: handsome you say

he said smiling wide

Kedi: mxm you know you're handsome my king

***jase laughed ***

Jase: and you're beautiful my queen

Kedi: well thank you

she said that blushing

Jase: now lets put this on you

***he pulled her dress up and tied the string around her waist and he rubbed her thigh then they started kissing...jase's hand went inside kedi's underwear and he rubbed her clit...a moan escaped kedi's mouth and jase just took it a step further and he started fingering her, a loud moan escaped her lips again and jase just upped his pace while he was kissing her

roughly....he went on and on until he felt her body tense up and all of a sudden her body shook as she called jase's name and he knew hes just done his job....he pulled his finger out and licked it clean then he kissed kedi making her taste herself after a while they pulled out of the kiss and kedi took off her underwear and put it in jase's pocket with his eyes popped out

Kedi: keep it safe for me

Jase: fuck kedi why are you doing this to me

Kedi: im not doing anything my king

jase: i will punish you on Saturday...by the time im will be done with you, you wont be able to walk for days

he whispered to her and kedi felt her clit twitch

***meanwhile ntombi and snakes just had their own session in snakes car....ntombi got

dressed and snakes called jase to inform him that its time for the girls to go inside its already late....they said their goodbyes and the girls went inside***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 15:47] Nor: INSERT.....65

.

.

.

***KEDI'S POV ***

*** i woke up to my phone ringing under the

pillow and i answered without looking at the caller id***

Me: yah

Jase: is that how you answer your phone now

Me: ummm hey askies my king i didn't check the caller id

***he sighed ***

Jase: its ok my heart i shouldn't have called you this late

Me:what time is it

Jase: 12

Me: and what are you doing up this late jase

Jase: its still early for me and plus i cant sleep my heart...im worried about you, im used to holding you in my arms all night long

***i sighed ***

Me: im ok jase...you need to rest

Jase: i cant rest with you not next to me kedi

Me: ok what can i do for you to sleep

Jase: the only way i will be able to sleep is if you're safely in my arms

ok i know jase loves me unconditionally but this is way too much for one person to have for another person

Me: ok how about we talk until you fall asleep

Jase: you'll be the one who will fall asleep my heart and you know it

i giggled

Jase: what time will you be free today

Me: ummm i dont know but me and ntombi will leave for the mall after the traditional thingy uncle will do in the morning

Jase: ooh why didn't you tell me last night

Me: i forgot jase askies

Jase: its ok you'll tell me once you done with

everything and il come pick you up

Me: ok

then the hair on the back of my head started to stand and my heart started beating fast ...GOD whats happening

Jase: kedi whats wrong you're breathing heavily

Me: its happening again jase

Jase: whats happening

he had panic in his voice

Me: close your eyes so i can pray

Jase: whats going on

Me: please jase

Jase: ok I've closed them

Me: Heavenly father i call upon you to protect me and my loved ones please God whatever evil that is residing in this house and yard please cast it away...protect me and my loved

ones God let nothing bad happen to us....whatever that is roaming around this room this instant if its not send by you God let it get burned with the blood of jesus.....let it go back to wherever its coming from...please God hear my prayer and send your holy spirit down to come and protect us i call upon you with the name of Jesus,the father and the holy spirit AMEN

Jase: amen

he was breathing heavily

Jase: im on my way

Me: its late jase il be fine

Jase: im not arguing with you about this kedi im on my way

***then he cut the call mxm jase likes to overreact.... i lay there unable to sleep i was scared a bit cause i dont know whats going on...is it my imagination playing tricks on me or

is something really going on in this house and yard eish ..as for ntombi she was sleeping peacefully she was even snoring a bit.....anyway after a while jase called and said hes outside mxm so i got out of bed and wore my gown and sleepers and i took my phone and i woke ntombi up***

Ntombi: mmmm

Me: wake up

Ntombi: let me sleep man

Me: ntombi wake up man

***she sat up quickly like she just realized something ***

Ntombi: ooh my God is it the baby

she said with a panic voice

Me: the baby is ok relax....come and lock the door jase is outside

Ntombi: outside? What time is it

Me: around 1 in the morning

Ntombi: mara jase uyahlanya nah (is jase crazy)doesn't he know you're pregnant and that you need to rest

she said with an annoyed tone

Me: you know your cousin ntombi now please lock the door when i leave

*** i walked out and i heard the key turning then i went to the kitchen and i took the key and i opened the door and the butler door and put the key back in the kitchen and i closed the door and locked the butler and i walked out of the yard...jase saw me and he quickly got out of the car and came to open the door for me and i got in he also went around and also got in***

Me: jase why are you here

***he kept quiet and started driving ***

Me: where are we going

Jase: to sleep

Me: what do you mean sleep...jase i cant leave ntombi alone in that house

Jase: shes safe but you are not kedi and i told you im not taking any chances with your life and my child's life

Me: mara jase

Jase: not up for discussion please

he said that with a firm voice mxm...anyway after a few minutes an electric gate opened and he drove in and parked then came and opened the door for me and we walked inside to a room and he opened it and we got in and he locked the door then he took off his clothes...he was only left with his boxers and i took off my gown and we got into bed and he held me from the back tight...too tight....it was actually in a protective manner

Jase: now i can sleep

Me: we shouldn't have left ntombi there alone

jase.. i feel bad

Jase: she fine kedi dont worry about her...you're the one who's a target here...those people hate you not her so please relax and rest my heart you have a long day ahead of you

Me: but jase you said this bracelet and string will protect me

Jase: kedi i can hire the best security team in the world to protect you but i still wont sleep peacefully without you in my arms...i still wont think you're safe enough unless you are close to me

i just sighed....it think jase is obsessed with me and this kind of love is dangerous but the funny thing is i dont care cause i love him unconditionally anyway i just closed my eyes and tried to sleepi felt his warm breath on my neck and he was brushing my belly every now and then

Jase: this is heaven for me my heart

Me: what

Jase: you in my arms like this its heaven for me
kedi

Me: i love you jase

Jase: i love you too my heart

***he kissed my neck and i felt my body heat up
instantly ***

Me: jase

Jase: mmmmh

Me: you making me wet down there stop
kissing my neck

***he chuckled ***

Jase: and my boxers are already soaking wet
but you know we cant...i might hurt you and my
son...im way too stressed, frustrated and
anxious my heart about this whole lobola thing
i sighed then he kissed my neck again

Jase:lets sleep my heart you have a long day

ahead of you

Me: ok i love you

Jase: i love you more

***then i closed my eyes and dosed off immediately.....i woke up to jase planting kisses all over my face ***

Jase: wake up

Me: mmmm

Jase: wake up my heart

i opened my eyes rubbing them a little and i looked at him he had a smile on his face

Jase: lets go and shower i need to take you back

***shit i just remembered where i am...i sat up straight ***

Me: what time is it

Jase: 5h00

Me: ok

***i got out of bed and took off all my clothes and he led the way to the shower and i used his toothbrush to brush my teeth then we got in the shower and i felt his hands on my breasts, he was rubbing them gently and his hard shaft was busy poking my butt ***

Me: jase

Jase: mmmm

***he was breathing heavily...so i turned and we stared into each other's eyes then i stood on my toes and kissed him and he kissed me back with his hand squeezing my butt tight then i pulled out of the kiss and i decided to help him out cause his shaft was really hard with veins popping and it was shiny.....so i got down on my knees and he cursed with his hand already on my head,i didn't waste time i started by licking the tip of his dick and he moaned out loud then i just took him all in and i started

blowing him like my life depended on it...i would suck,lick and stroke it while he cursed and groanedi went on and on until he started using his hand to help me increase my pace gosh ,he was busy growling and groaning like a mad wild animals....geez he had veins popping all over his body it was just an amazing site nje

Jase: fuuuuck kedi....shit ...yes baby ..ahhhh

*** that what he kept on saying over and over then after a while i felt his body tense up***

Jase: mooove im about....ahhhh to .. .shiiit

*** he didn't even finish his sentence cause he exploded in my mouth then his body started shaking and he gasped for air then he let out the loudest growl ever then he started breathing heavily i think trying to catch his breathas for me i thought of something delicious and i took a deep breath then i swallowed his juices....i wanted to puke at first but i fought

that feeling off and i swallowed, he pulled me up quickly and smashed his lips on mine and he started kissing me hard tasting his juices in my mouth and lips then he pushed me to the wall and i felt his finger entering me gosh i gasped then he started fingering me hard while kissing me hard.....he would also visit my neck here and there sucking on it while doing wonders with his fingers, as for me i was moaning out loud and calling his name ...after a while a violent orgasm washed over me unexpectedly and i screamed out loud with my whole body shaking uncontrollably he held me tight until i calmed down then he let go of me and he went out of the shower as for me i slid down and sat butt flat on the floor catching my breath, my legs were feeling wobbly....after a while i heard him groan then a few seconds later i heard the toilet flush then he walked in and he helped me up then he perked my lips and we took an innocent shower.....ok ok wait a

minute did he just hand service himself.....
ummm ok anyway after we lotioned and i
wore my pyjamas again while he wore ripped
jeans and his signature v-neck long sleeve
shirt,sneakers and a cap(with the front looking
at the back) and we left....on the way he held
my hand really tight while kissing it every now
and then...after a while we arrived and he
parked the car and looked at me***

Jase: tell me when you done with everything so
i can come and pick you two up

Me: ok i will

Jase: you'll be ok right

me: yeah

Jase: i love you

Me: i love you too

Jase: take care of my son ok

me: i will

we kissed shortly and i got out abd went inside while calling ntombi to come and open for me....jase was still parked at the gate , ntombi came and opened for me and i got in thats when he drove off

Ntombi: you naughty bitch so you slept out

Me: hai suka

Ntombi: he couldn't even hold himself just for one night nje

i laughed walking to the bedroom

ntombi: well you dont have a funny walk dont tell me you didn't at least get some

Me: mxm i did but not with his dick

ntombi: tongue

***i laughed ***

Ntombi: what

Me: finger

Ntombi: you lucky bitch

***we both laughed ***

Me: im not the only lucky bitch here...you too nhlaka gives it to you like its the last day on earth.....i saw you last night you had a funny walk on

she laughed out loud while shaking her head

Ntombi: we're really lucky neh

me: yep we are and we shouldn't take that for granted

Ntombi: yeah

Me: let me go fix your bathing water so we can start by cleaning this godforsaken house before everyone wakes up

Ntombi: ok let me make the bed

***i fixed her bathing water and she bathed while i changed into a maxi dress....after we were both done with everything we started by cleaning the house after we were done we

washed the dirty dishes and make ourselves
breakfast and we sat down and ate then aunty
walked in the kitchen***

Aunty:wow looks like you girls woke up early

Me: yes aunty

***ok why is this woman being nice to me
cause i thought she hated me to a point that
she wished death upon me mxm***

Aunty: i see the house is also clean...mmmmh
that shows you will make a good wives to your
husbands

***i just faked a smile...then she went outside

ntombi: shes trying by all means to suck up to
you yho

me: i dont trust her sudden change of attitude
towards me

Ntombi:then we must watch our backs then

Me: yeah

we continued to eat while discussing what we will buy in the mall today

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 15:47] Nor: INSERT.....66

.

.

.

JASE'S POV

after i dropped kedi off i drove back to the bnb and i found the guys sitting outside

Me: fozas

Jay: mmmm i sincerely hope that woman that was screaming your name earlier was kedi and not some hoe you picked from the street

Me: and what if it was some hoe

Jay: then il surely support kedi when she leaves your ass

Me: really

Snakes: il support her too in fact il even find a suitor for her

Muzi: il support her too

Me: ooh so yall will rather have some bastard's blood on your hands

Jay: we have many bastards 'blood on our hands already so no biggie...and plus we will protect him right fozas

Muzi: sure

Snakes: sure

***i just looked at this fools looking all serious

and i just laughed ***

Jay: im dead serious jase it better be kedi you were fucking

Me: no it wasn't

***i saw his face turn to deadly instantly and i just couldn't hold it in...i just busted out in laughter ***

Jay: dont fucken play like that

Me: you should have seen your faces mxm

Jay: you know what nx

*** he took out his phone then dialled and put it on loud speaker then my heart answered with her soft voice that made my dick twitch a bit***

Kedi: hey jay

Jay: jay's kotiza how are you

***she giggled and i just smiled like a fucken retard ***

Kedi: vele vele you'll never stop calling me that

neh

Jay: never

Kedi: ok anyway im ok

Jay: did you sleep well with ntombi in that house

***she sighed ***

Kedi: ntombi slept well but as for me its just hard i think there's a ghost or an evil spirit in this house and yard im glad jase came to pick me up last night or else i wouldn't have slept a wink

jay looked at me and smiled and i just maintained a straight face

Jay: jase told me you pray so pray kotiza its just one more night and you'll never have to set your feet in that yard again unless you want to

Kedi: yeah i guess... ummm jay

Jay: yeah

Kedi: did sam commit suicide in this yard

***jay kept quiet and raised his eyebrows
looking at me and i shook my head***

Jay: i dont know kotiza

Kedi: ooh ok

Jay: dont worry too much about that
bastard...hes dead and im sure hes in hell so
just relax ok

Kedi: ok ummm i gotta go uncle is calling me
say hi to nhlaka and muzi for me

Jay: ok i will bye

Kedi: bye

then jay ended the call and looked at me

Jay: you lucky son of a gun...you would have
been lying half dead on the floor with your teeth
all out by now

***i just chuckled shaking my head ***

Me: sometimes you forget that im older than

you

Jay: by a few minutes mxm

Snakes: and i was already looking for potential suitors for kedi

***we just laughed ***

Me: i wouldn't do that to my heart

Muzi: shes been through hell already so she doesnt need any shit from you

Me: i know ok

Muzi: good

Jay: now what the fuck were you doing to the poor girl

Muzi: the way she was screaming it was like she was in labour

we laughed out loud mxm this fools

Me: i was reminding her why she agreed to marry me in the first place

Snakes: no no no bafo take it easy on her dont forget shes pregnant

Me: antlek why are we talking about my sex life

Jay: cause you made us listen to some free porn soo early in the morning

i just laughed

Me: anyway how nomhle

***i said that changing the subject and muzi and snakes laughed ***

Jay: eish dont go there jase

Me: that bad

Jay: i tried everything bafo but shes still standing her ground to the fact that shes engaged

Muzi: but bafo shes way too young to hold on to the fact that shes engaged as if shes in her late 30s like time is running out for her

Snakes: yeah something is not right

Jay: well she said its an arranged marriage and she can never go against her father's final decision

Me: i think there's more to that than what meets the eye

Jay: i think so too and i fear its deep

Me: so have you met the fiance

Jay: thats the thing bafo i had her followed and shes never with male companion

Us: YOU HAD HER FOLLOWED!

***we said at once ...shouting ***

Jay: voetsek as if you never had your women followed worse of all you jase

Me: ooh so shes your woman

Jay: tsek

***i laughed ***

Me: what? im just asking

Muzi: but bafo is she really engaged

Jay: i think so but its like she doesnt like the guy cause when i ask about him her face would change and she would look sad as if shes about to cry...and she seems to be terrified of her father and brother...i remember her father called her while she was with me bafo she was shaking with fear as if he was next to her

Me: this is serious mos

Jay: she kept on saying " i know im somebody's fiance baba il stay away from boys cause i know you'll disown me if i shame our family name"

Muzi:what

Jay: and after the call she became emotional and she said she gotta go...and shes been avoiding me since then

Me: avoiding you...wait are you two dating

Jay: no we not but im still gonna get to the

bottom of whatever is going on

***ok the thing is jay has never fallen in love before and every woman he sleeps with know that hes not in it for love but only for sex but what im seeing now is way different i think nomhle is the first woman jay has ever fallen for and i can already see its driving him mad...atleast with me before i met my heart and fallen deeply for her i once tasted love with Candice even though the love i felt for Candice was never even the tiniest close to what i feel for kedi but atleast i had experience before i met my heartbut with jay its different i foresee trouble cause people think im more heartless and scary but the thing is jay is worse than me is just that hes more in control than i am when it comes to kray and spilo....hes into hurting those that betray us by using sharp knives to open them up while they are still alive while i prefer a gun so yah ***

Snakes: i dont like that look on your face spilo

Snakes could also see that jay was getting upset about this whole nomhle situation

Me: what about you muzi any news on noma

***he sighed ***

Muzi: i called her last night even though she was shocked to hear from me but at least she agreed to meet up with me next week

Wednesday

Jay: you going to kzn

Muzi: nah apparently she leaves in centurion with her stupid fiancée

Snakes: get this muzi when you win her back and you ever choose another bitch over her again....you'll end up in ICU after i fucked you up

Jay: and il help you

***we all laughed ***

Me: let go eat im hungry man

we went inside to eat

KEDI'S POV

***after having our breakfast we washed the dishes and went to sit outside ***

Ntombi: what time will your uncle start with the traditional thingy hes supposed to do

Me: i have no idea

then the two church rats Amo and katli walked out still in their pyjamas mxm

Katli: you're still here

nx i ignored her

Ntombi: bitch keep moving

Katli: who are you calling a bitch

Ntombi: kedi lets go inside the air just suddenly got contaminated with stinking prostitutes

***gosh i couldn't hold it in i just busted out with laughter and ntombi joined in.... as for Amo and katli they just clicked their tongues and walked away ***

Me: yho shem ntombi you have this girls scared to even breath in front of you

***we laughed ***

Ntombi: they have been treating you like shit now its their turn to be treated like shit

Me: mmmmh nhlaka's bae is on fire neh

***she giggled.... then aunty said uncle is calling me, i went to where he was and he told me to kneel down and i did and he poured the traditional beer on the ground and started calling our clan names and then he spoke to our ancestors telling them that im back home now and busy thanking them for keeping me safe all those months i was away and he also said something that broke my heart into pieceshe said the ancestors should forgive me for

sleeping with my brother and for running away when susan caught us ...I just stayed on that position with tears running down my cheeks....he said i should also pour down the traditional beer and i did....after a while he slaughtered a chicken and continued to talk until he was done then i got up wiped my tears and went to the bedroom and i just lay on the bed looking up asking myself why this people hate me this much.....i remember when i was 17years old uncle came to visit susan and he saw that i had been crying and struggling to walk and he asked what was wrong and since i couldn't take it anymore i decided to confide in him, that maybe he might say i should come and live with him or warn sam to stop but can you believe what he said....he said sam will never do that cause he was a good boy and that all i'm trying to do was to ruin his reputation and the family name....he said i should keep my mouth shut and stop telling lies about sam and

now he just lied to the ancestors... (sigh) life
neh anyway like a wise man once said "its
better to suffer now than later"so yah
anyway ntombi walked in interrupting me from
my thoughts ***

Ntombi: whats wrong

Me: the usual.....dont worry il be fine

Ntombi: i dont like this kedi and im sure jase
wont be happy about this either khante whats
wrong with this people its like they live and
breath to hurt you.... like its their mission on
earth

Me: please dont tell jase ntombi you know how
he is... he will overreact and as for this people
dont worry karma will visit them one of this
days

she just sighed and nodded

***we bathed again and ntombi called snakes
and told him we are ready and after a while they

arrived him and jase and we got in the car and drove off , jase was drivinghe kept quiet and kept on looking at me through the review mirror with a scary frown on his face but i just looked outside the window.....its like he can read my thoughts or it is that he can read me like a book, cause now im busy faking a smile and trying to participate in the conversation they are having but its like he can see right through me ...what uncle said really hurt me i mean how can he say what he said to the ancestors about me.... does he hate me that much ***

Jase: whats wrong my hearthe said looking at me in the review mirror

me: nothing im just tired my king

***he didn't say anything else he just kept on driving while looking at me at the review mirror every now and then until we arrived at the mall....we went inside and did our shopping and also had lunch and later on they drove us back

home...all this time jase was giving me suspicious looks asking whats wrong but i kept on telling him im just tired nje and i guess he started believing me cause he stopped asking and im good with that...just few hours left and il leave this godforsaken place***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 15:47] Nor: INSERT.....67

.

.

.

***KEDI'S POV ***

it was around 7 at night when my phone rang it was jase

Me: hey

Jase: im outside..come out now

then he dropped the call and i looked at ntombi

Ntombi: is everything ok

Me: i dont know jase said hes outside and he sounded pissed

Ntombi: i hope there's no problem

Me: i hope so too anyway il be back neh

Ntombi: ok

i wore my sleepers and walked out

Aunt: where are you going this late

***how is this any of her business ***

Me: outside

Aunt: outside where

ok i was getting annoyed now

Me: outside the gate

***i said that walking out mxm...i went towards the car and i got in and i found him laying back with his seat leaned back....he was playing jazz, ok ok jase doesn't listen to jazz khante whats going on ***

Me: is everything ok

***he kept quiet **

Me: my king what's wrong

Jase: what happened today

huh

Me: what are you talking about

Jase: dont make me repeat myself

***ok he only says that when hes angry ***

Me: jase whats going on

Jase: answer my damn question kedi

he said that without raising his voice but i got scared cause worse of all he wasn't even looking at me

Jase: you're hiding something from me kedi...i think you're forgetting that i know you more than you know yourself so im gonna ask you for the last time what happened

***i took a deep breath ***

Jase: who and what did they say or do to you

Me: uncle thomas and he said some hurtful things to the ancestors about me

Jase: what did he say

Me: he was talking to the ancestors thanking them for protecting me when i was away and other things and...andand he said they should forgive me for sleeping with my brother and for running away when susan caught us

***he didn't say anything he was now looking at

me with the most scariest look ever i swear im about to pee on myself***

Jase: he said that

***i nodded and he kept on looking at me with his chest moving up and down fast....then he got out of the car and slammed the door and started pacing up and down outside then all of a sudden he started kicking the front tire of the car over and over until he stopped and put his hands on top of the car bonnet breathing heavily....ohh my God he was really angry i was even scared to get out of the car, then he took out his phone, dialled it and started shouting pacing up and down after a minute or soo he dropped the call and stood there looking up....as for me my heart was beating out of my chest....after sometime he came and opened my door and help me out of the car and he cupped my face...his body was shaking a bit, i think it was because of anger then he smashed his lips on mine and kissed the hell

out of me after a while he pulled out of the kiss and kissed my forehead ***

Jase: if you ever keep things from me again i swear kedi we will have serious problems do i make myself clear

Me: ye..yes

Jase: good

then he brushed my belly

Jase: mnqobi

Me: huh

Jase: his name is mnqobi hes our little conqueror....after everything you've been through since we found out we are pregnant hes still in here holding on like a little soldier

ok he was calming down now

Me: yeah you're right hes a conqueror this one....mnqobi khumalo

Jase: i love you my heart and im sorry for losing

it...is just i warned thomas to treat you like an egg and he goes around and say that bullshit to your ancestors nx

Me: its ok jase he'll get whats coming to him if our ancestors are always looking after us that means they know what happened.... so him lying to them means he undermines them which is a total disrespect to them so hes busy making his bed and soon hes gonna have to lie on it

***he just looked at me with a huge smile on his face ***

Jase: you never cease to amaze me you know

***i just hid my face on his chest cause the way he said it with that smile on his face made me blush big time.....then a voice disturbed this wonderful moment mxm it was aunty ***

Aunt: whats going on there kedi...come into this yard this minute

she was standing at the gate

Jase: this witch had better go back inside
before i loose it

Me: let me go back inside my king....this people
already hate me let me not add this to their list

Jase:i dont like this kedi

Me: few hours left jase then il be yours officially
and for the rest of our lives

Aunt: hey wena kedi come into this yard now
before i drag you in here myself....busy whoring
around with that belly showing you have no
shame..

***now this is the aunt i know not that
pretentious attitude she was portraying in front
of ntombi as for jase he was already pissed off
so its better i go back inside before he slaps her
and ruin things ***

Me:let me go jase il see you tomorrow right

Jase: yeah....go and rest my heart before i rip

this woman's head off.... tomorrow is the D- day
remember i love you more than i love myself ok
and that il castrate anyone who hurts you ok

***i nodded and he kisses my forehead then i
felt a hand pulling me by force away from jase
nx i swear this woman is starting to get on my
last nerve ***

Aunt: whats all this huh your lobola is being
paid tomorrow and wena you're here whoring
arou....

***ohh my God she didn't finish her statement
cause jase slapped her with the back of his
hand so hard that she fell on the floor with her
bum***

me: ohh my God jase baby please calm down
please

***the rage that was on his face Jesus
Christ....mxm drama always follows me
shem...ever since i got here its one trouble after
the other enough is enough bathong no no no

this is too much now***

Me: jase please go

Aunt: you slapped me

Jase: TOUCH HER AND INSULT HER AGAIN
AND YOU'LL SEE WHAT I'LL DO NEXT DARE
ME AND DO IT WOMAN

Me: jase please

Jase: GO BACK INSIDE AND IF SHE TOUCHES
YOU OR INSULTS YOU LET ME KNOW...IM
TIRED OF THIS PEOPLE HURTING YOU
THINKING THAT NO ONE WILL DEFEND YOU
NOW LISTEN HERE...YOU TELL ALL OF THEM
YOUR FELLOW WITCHES AND WIZARDS THAT
IL FUCKEN RIP ANYONES HEAD OFF WHO
EVEN LOOKS AT HER IN A FUNNY WAY

*** gosh jase can be really scary when hes
angry now im scared as if hes telling me all
this...then his phone rang and he answered ***

Jase: baba

**he listened **

Jase: ok im on my way

**he listened **

Jase: im on my way il see you just now

then the call ended and he looked at me

Jase: go and rest il see you tomorrow ok

Me: o...ok

***he kissed my forehead and i walked inside the yard fast leaving aunty there on the floor and i went inside the house to the bedroom we are using and i got in and locked the door...ntombi sat up straight looking at me suspiciously ***

Ntombi: whats wrong

Me: jase slapped aunty

Ntombi: ooh my God he did what

Me: he slapped her ntombi...what if she ruin things for us tomorrow

Ntombi: im sure she did something that deserved a slap

Me: yeah but he shouldn't have

Ntombi: he did good kedi this people are evil how can they hate you like this as if you're their age mate and i think there's more to this hate thing they have going on towards you than what meets the eye and the truth will come out someday, nothing stays hidden under the sun kedianyway dont feel bad cause baba will sit in on the negotiations so i dare them to ruin them with baba and pops in that living room tomorrow so relax sistaz

i just looked at ntombi who wasn't shaken about what i just told her

Ntombi: no kedi dont do that ok....no stressing about this people now come to bed and rest we have a long day ahead of us tomorrow....i changed to my pyjamas and got in the covers and set my alarm to 4h00 and we chatted a bit

then we fell asleep ***

*** i woke up to this stupid alarm ringing eish i woke up and woke ntombi up and we changed and wore dresses and we made the bed and went out and we found uncle thomas and three other elders sitting in the living room....ok when did they arrive and uncle thomas looks like hell like he didn't even sleep. ...he looked like he was worried about something anyway we greeted them and went to the kitchen and came back with cleaning materials and told uncles to excuse us but they told us to sit they want to talk to me and ntombi can stay ***

Thomas: tell me kedi where did you meet that boy that wants to marry you

Me: Pretoria

Thomas: what does he do for a living

Me: he owns the biggest supply chain and logistics company in south Africa

Thomas: is that all

Me: i dont understand uncle

Thomas: hes very sure of himself and he knows things hes not supposed to know....now why is that

Me: i still dont understand

Thomas: never mind

Uncle 2: now why did he slap your aunt boipelo

Me: she insulted me in front of him the same thing each one of you would have done if someone insulted your wives in front of you all

Uncle2: is that how you talk to me girly

i just kept quiet trying to calm myself down...you know if this is some kind of test from God im trying by all means to not fail but damn these people are really making it hard for me to pass this test

Thomas: its ok you can go and clean

Ntombi: we would like to start in her please

***she looked angry...anyway the elders walked out to the back and we started cleaning silently until ntombi broke the silence ***

Ntombi: these fuckers are gonna pay im telling you

Me: calm down ntombi

Ntombi: enough is enough kedi...ive been here only for 2 night and im already gatvol with them and their stinking attitudes and pretentious selves

Me: i know ok

Ntombi : yeses and i thought my mom was the worst

we both laughed at least shes calming down

Ntombi: i cant wait until baba and pops get here so i can see this witches and wizards meet the angels of death face to face

Me: what do you mean angels of death

Ntombi: they are messing with pops first daughter in law so meeting pops and baba will be like meeting the angels of death head on

Me: ohk

***i think there's more to what ntombi is saying but im not gonna dwell on it.... we cleaned the whole house and even swept the yard, by now im tired as hell and my feet and back are killing me....anyway the woman from our street have started to come in some have started to peel the vegetables so ntombi and i decided to go to the bedroom so i can lay down....then we heard someone shouting outside and ntombi went out to check whats going on, after a few seconds she came in smiling from ear to ear

ntombi: they are here

Me: ooh my God its really happening

Ntombi: yep now let me go and fix you bath water so you can be ready

me: thank you ntombi you're the sister i longed for since thatos death...im grateful to have you in my life and il never take you for granted

i said that wiping my tears and she walked to me and we hugged

Ntombi: im also grateful to have you in my life and I've also longed to have a sister like you so i guess God answered both our prayers at the same time

Me: yeah...hes the best God neh

***we giggled ***

Ntombi: yeah....ok il be back let me go prepare you some bathing water

Me: ok

she walked out and the khumalos kept on calling out... i hope my evil uncles wont let them stand out there for long

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 15:47] Nor: INSERT.....68

.

.

.

***NARRATED ***

***after a while ntombi came with kedi's bath water and she took her bath and she got dressed...she wore a maxi dress and nicely wrapped a scarf on her head and put on not too much make up....ntombi also took her bath,

once they were both finished ntombi went out to check if the uncles have allowed the khumalo's in and yep they did cause when she was walking towards the kitchen she heard voices in the living room and it was baba's deep scary voice and she quickly went back to the bedroom ***

Ntombi: thank God they let them in

Kedi: im sure they want them to pay the damn lobola and get the hell out

they both giggled as they lay in bed

Ntombi: you won't believe what happened when i was preparing your bath water in the kitchen

Kedi: what happened

Ntombi: your aunt looked like hell khante what did jase do or say to him that made her look like a walking corpse

Kedi: what do you mean

Ntombi: the minute she saw me she started

trembling she was even avoiding eye contact with me,her eyes where puffy and red like she was crying and she walked out of the kitchen fast

Kedi: what? Ohh my God i left her still sittted on the ground i think she was still trying to process what just happened....i hope jase didn't continue to beat her up cause he looked really angry

Ntombi: i doubt he beat her up cause she didn't have bruises on her and she wasn't limping but i think he said something to her that made her look like her world is coming to an end

Kedi: yho ai

Ntombi: serves her right

kedi just smiled shaking her head

Ntombi: since you have a good heart and that you're kind even to those that dont deserve your kindness so il be your bitchy side

***kedi just laughed as she thought of how

crazy ntombi isthen her phone rang it was
jase's grandmother ***

Kedi: mama

Ma: my baby how are you....last week when we
talked you were down

Kedi:im getting there i just cant wait to leave
this place

Ma: few hours left baby

Kedi: yeah

Ma: nkosi told me what happened yesterday..he
was pretty much upset when he called me, im
sorry you're going through all that my baby

Kedi: its ok mama they say what doesn't kill you
makes you stronger

Ma: i like your spirit

Kedi: i have the brothers and ntombi they are
my pillar of strength so i know il make it out
alive

Ma: i love your spirit my baby...just hang in there ok

Kedi: ok mama

Ma: is ntombi there

Kedi: yes mama shes here

Ma: please give her the phone i want to talk to her

Kedi: ok hold on

she gave the phone to ntombi

Ntombi: gogo

Ma: sthandwa sam

Ntombi: how are you

Ma: im good sthandwa and you

Ntombi: you know im always good gogo

*** ma laughed and ntombi giggled ***

Ma: im sure youre showing those people flames there

Ntombi: you know me i always leave a mark

Ma: you'll never change neh

Ntombi: never

ma laughed

Ma: ummm ok listenyou and kedi should be the only people that should make tea or dish up for your uncle and grandfathers

Ntombi: ok gogo

Ma: and please be on the look out sthandwa sam i dont trust those people

Ntombi: me and you both gogo so yah il be on the look out

Ma: good we will talk later neh

Ntombi: ok bye my beautiful and sexy gogo

***they both laughed ***

Ma:hai suka

then she ended the call

Ntombi: welcome to the family kedi from now on its happiness all the way

Kedi: you talking as if the lobola is paid

Ntombi: dont worry its just a matter of minutes and it will be paid

Kedi: you sound soo sure ntombi...you forgetting my evil uncles

Ntombi: well they dont know who they are about to deal will

Kedi: "the angels of death "

***ntombi laughed ***

Ntombi: you catching on fast....ok let me go and make you two something to eat

Kedi: lets go im famished

Ntombi: noooo you not leaving this room until they call you haw

***she said that walking out

and kedi just lay in bed thinking about what

could possibly go wrong***

***MEANWHILE ***

***after the khumalo's stood outside the gate for sometime(it was baba,pops and two other elders) a family representative from kedi's family went to them and the khumalo's paid what is called in setswana (pula molomo)its some cash paid to the brides representative so he could talk to themafter they paid they explained why they are here and the family representative escorted them inside....after sometime kedi' uncle's came into the living room and thomas heart nearly stopped when he saw "baba" his brother's best friend sitting in the living room, as for baba he played it cool....now thomas understood why the twins knew alot and why they intimidated him soo much, they are the children or grandchildren of one of the most feared man in the world like

his brother told him when he was still alive...he sat down while asking himself whether he knows what really happened to his best friend and who was involved in his death.....anyway kedi's uncles greeted the visitors and they greeted back, thomas kept on swallowing is spit every now and then ***

Uncle2: how can we help you gentleman

K.elder1: our surname is khumalo and we were send here by our son nkosi....he said he saw a beautiful flower in your garden that he would like to pluck out

Uncle2: we have three beautiful flowers in our garden so i hope your son told you which flower hes interested in

Baba: he said its a rare and beautiful flower called kedibone

***he said with a deep voice which made thomas more uncomfortable and the uncles a bit intimidatedThomas kept on stealing

glances at baba***

Uncle3: mmmmh gentlemen you sure he said the flower is called kedibone

Baba: yah

***baba was getting really annoyed by these men cause he could sense that these bastards were trying to sabotage this proceedings but he would be damned if he let them succeed....thomas stood up and called kedi and after a while kedi walked in the living room and baba and pops smiled....she greeted the khumalo's and they greeted back ***

Thomas : kedi

Kedi: uncle

Thomas: these gentlemen say they are here for you,do you know them

Kedi: yes i know them uncle

thomas sighed

Thomas: they are here to ask for your hand in marriage, do you accept

Kedi: yes i accept

Thomas: ok you can go

kedi walked out and went to the bedroom

Baba: now thats out of the way lets discuss the bride price

Thomas: do we concentrate on live cows or hard cash

Baba: hard cash

pops whispered to baba that thomas is a bit jumpy and sweating as hell and that he keeps stealing glances at him...then baba whispered back that it clearly shows that he remembered him which is good cause that gives him the upper hand then he concentrated on the uncles*

Uncle2: before we proceed with the bride price i think its only fair we warn you about the girl you

came here for....yes shes our daughter but shes evil and shes bad for your son

***thomas kept on nudging the uncle to stop but he was hell bent on ruining this negotiations

Uncle: im sure your son can do better...im saying this cause i can see you are from a respected family so i dont want her wickedness to ruin your family name

baba looked at this man with anger all over his face as for pops he was pissed off to the core

Pops: is that all

Uncle2: we are only looking out for you

Baba: let me get this straight we are not here to ask which of your daughters is a good cook or whos good looking or who's gonna be able to satisfy our son in bed better... we are here for kedi is that clear we are not here for stupid

games

Uncle2: YOU CAN'T COME INTO MY BROTHER'S HOUSE AND DISRESPECT US LIKE THIS....YOU ARE VISITORS HERE

baba: DONT FUCKEN PISS ME OFF BOY ESPECIALLY NOT ON THIS BEAUTIFUL DAY

***he roared and the room went quiet ***

Uncle2: i will not sit here and be insulted

he stood up

Pops: SIT DOWN!

he also roared

Pops: DONT MAKE ME STAND UP FROM HERE CAUSE IF I DO IL FUCKEN SNAP YOUR NECK

***thomas was scared he was even sweating, he kept on wiping his forehead every now and then with the back of his hand ***

Thomas : THABO SIT DOWN

***he slowly sat down when he saw baba giving

him a deadly stare***

Baba: ive been sitting here listening to you fuckers painting that innocent girl badly cause that evil plan you had on her when she was still in her mother's womb failed i....

thomas interrupted him

Thomas: wha...what are you talking about

Baba: DONT FUCKEN INTERRUPT ME WHEN IM TALKING BOY IM WARNING YOU FOR THE FUCKEN LAST TIME...STOP PISSING ME OFF

he warned thomas who sank down on his sit with his heart beating out of his chest

Baba: i know how you wanted to use her as a human sacrifice for riches when she was still in her mother's womb but the man upstairs had other plans right

thomas gasped with his eyes popped out while the two uncles looked like they were about to have heart attacks

Baba: is that why you hate her this much because you failed to use her like how you used her still born brother's little corpse as a sacrifice for your businesses.... with your sister's help of course

the uncles looked down with their hands on their heads trying to stomach every thing this man was saying which was true

Pops: shes a nurse right....your sister...

Baba: you bastards were told that kedi will be your downfall right....that she'll be the one to bring you to your knees since she lived after she was born

Pops : that's why you treat her like shit....that why you let that dead son of a bitch you call your nephew to rape her for years....shall we go on

Thomas: stop please

he said with a breaking voice

Thabo: what do you want

Baba: good question....we want our daughter in law

Pops: we will discuss this sacrifice issue another day now lets proceed with the negotiations

K.elder1 : hai man this people are evil....they deserve to be paraded naked on the street then burned alive....lets get our daughter in law and leave this godforsaken place

K.elder2: i second that bafo

***they were disgusted beyond words...then baba took the briefcase that was on his lap and put it on top of the table, opened it and turned it to the uncles and their eyes popped out ***

Baba: we are paying R80 000 for the lobola and R20 000 for the damages...do you agree to the amounts

***the uncles eyes where popped out shocked

at this amount of money cause they themselves agreed that they will charge them R40 000 for lobola and R5000 for the damages and now they were looking at R100 000 in cash....as for baba and pops they knew the uncles wont live to enjoy this money***

Pops: so?

Uncles: we agree on the amounts

baba: good

pops took out two agreement papers written the amount they paid for the lobola and damages and all the gifts they brought and both families signed and pops gave one agreement paper to kedi'uncles and he took the second one

Baba: now that we dont owe you people anything can we see our daughter in law so we can tell her the good news

***thomas nodded and went out...he has never

been scared like this before he knew his end was near now he was regretting everything bad he had done to his brother,wife and niece***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 15:47] Nor: INSERT.....69

.

.

.

***NARRATED ***

***thomas went to where his wife was sitting with other family members and he told them

the negotiations went well and the khumalos paid in full....Gladys wasn't happy about that but the other women started singing wedding songs and thomas asked one of the women to go call kedi and she did...they walked in with her singing wedding songs with ntombi amongst them ...kedi sat down on the mat looking down,the women continued to sing until they finally stopped and they walked out***

Baba: im happy to inform you that everything went well and that you are now officially our daughter in law

*** kedi looked up quickly looking at baba and he was smiling....tears filled her eyes she tried to fight them back but they just ran down her cheeks and she quickly wiped them ***

Pops: no more crying makhumalo its happiness from now on ok

kedi nodded while wiping her tears of joy

Pops: now that you are officially our daughter in

law we've decided to name you thandeka,
thats what you'll be called in our family from
now on

Kedi: ok

***they continued to tell her how things are
done in the khumalo family and that they gonna
do a big ceremony next weekend in kzn to
welcome her in their family officially and to
introduce her to their ancestors***

Thabo: but she will leave on Tuesday cause
monday there's a ceremony that will be done for
the uncles

Baba: i know about that ceremony and i also
know that its not a must that she be there

Thabo: but she

Baba: discussion closed shes not spending
another night here

***thabo kept looking down with his ego
bruised thinking about his plan failing because

of this man ..he wanted her to be present on Monday for the ceremony were a cow's head will be cooked and everyone will celebrate a job well done to the uncles with the negotiations but now this khumalo men are over protective with her....he wanted to poison her food with a slow poison that will eventually kill her after two to three days cause makhosi said she will be their down fall in the future if they let her live so now he can see that future is now ,susan said she will torture and mistreat her badly until she decides to commit suicide so that they dont have her blood in their hands but her plan failed dismally and now shes a daughter in law to what looks like a powerful and rich family so he cant have that ,he knows he needs to come up with an urgent plan today what ever that must happen must happen today....by the time he came back to his senses kedi had already left the room and the door opened and the twins,muzi,snakes and bab'dlamini walked in

and greeted everyone and they sat down***

Thabo: gentlemen excuse us we need to put this money in a safe place please make yourselves comfortable we will be back

***and they walked out and bab' dlamini was staring towards the door that led to the passage ***

dlamini: this place is full of evil roaming around...it needs some serious cleansing

Baba: you can say that again

bab'dlamini started to groan

Dlamini: what are you still doing in the land of the living

he said that still looking at the door that led to the passage with a serious face

Baba: dlamini whats going on

Dlamini: i asked you a question boy why are you still doing here tormenting that innocent girl huh

everyone was looking at bab'dlamini but everyone except the two elders knew who he was talking to even though they couldn't see him

Dlamini: you roaming around walking besides her like a lost puppy whilst you could be doing something that you failed to do when you were still alive being protecting her.....you know they want to harm her but instead of protecting her from those evil people your busy tormenting her...whats wrong with you

he kept quiet rubbing his forehead

Dlamini: stop being a coward even in death and do something or just go burn in hell man

***then he clicked his tongue and took out his sniff and inhaled it with his nose and started sneezing after a while he stopped and looked at baba ***

Dlamini: protect umakoti

Baba: whats going on

Dlamini: danger khumalo

*** right then jase started having a bad feeling
like the beast was warning him or something

Jay: whats wrong jase

Jase: i have a bad feeling bafo

Muzi: beast

Jase: yeah

Snakes: let me go talk to ntombi

Jase: i need to see kedi

Dlamini: she must not eat anything from this
house nkosi

*** jase nodded ***

Baba: this motherfuckers think they are clever
but il show them flames if anything happens to
thandeka il wipe out their entire generation

***jase called kedi and told her to come to the front of the house and he walked out ***

Kedi: khumalo

*** she said that smiling and jase smiled too showing his dimples ***

Jase: i love the sound of that makhumalo

*** kedi blushed and jase pulled her to his chest and held her tight then he kissed her forehead***

Jase: you good

***kedi nodded ***

Jase: you are mine officially now ...shit i cant believe it

Kedi: me too hey its like im dreaming

Jase: we better believe it my heart

Kedi: yeah

Jase: i want you to do me a favour my heart

Kedi: ummm ok

Jase: please dont eat anything from this house....jay will go and buy you anything you want ok

Kedi: ok ummm whats going on

Jase: something happened during the negotiations...it looks like those fuckers wanted to sabotage everything but baba and pops didn't let them so be careful my heart dont eat anything from this house

*** kedi sighed and nodded ***

Jase: what would you like to eat

Kedi: two take aways of spur's flame grilled ribs... 3 big Macs from MacDonalds and a box of hot wings from kfc

jase's eyes popped out with amazement

Jase: all that for you

Kedi: nope all that for me and your son

***jase chuckled and kissed her forehead and he called jay to come outside and he did and he kissed kedi's forehead ***

Jay: makhumalo

kedi blushed and jase pulled her towards his chest and kissed the top of her head

Kedi: hey

Jay: you good

***kedi nodded and jase told jay what kedi wanted to eat and he was also amazed ***

Jay: should i bring you anything else

Kedi: nope ...so now im no longer your kotiza

Jay: you'll always be my kotiza kedi always

Kedi: ok

and she smiled

***MEANWHILE ***

*** in the bedroom....thomas was pacing up and down ***

Thabo: this is fucked up

Thomas: what do we do now

Thabo: she needs to be poisoned today

Thomas: maybe we should just let her be i mean she hasn't posed any threat to us as yet

Uncle3: didnt you hear what those men said....they know everything we did man they said everything as if they were there

Aunty: this is the end for us, for me... that boy knows about our scheme of selling still born babies i steal in the hospital to ritualists

Thomas: WHAT?

Thabo: how

aunt: i dont know but what i know is my husband will leave me and my children will hate

me if they find out about my other life

Thabo: thats why i say lets poison her today

Aunt: what will it solve thabo huh what

Thabo: i dont know ok but what i know is makhosi said her being alive is dangerous to us and plus she will die in those bastards hands in two to three days time not ours so they wont blame us meaning they wont come after us

Uncle3: i think its a good plan

Thomas: i still think we should let her be maybe they will also let us be

Thabo: i dont work with maybe Thomas ok i want certainty

thomas sighed and sat down on the edge of the bed scared as hell

Thomas: you dont know who that man with a deep threatening voice is do you

Aunt:who is he

Thabo: im sure hes just some rich man who thinks the world owes him something

Thomas: hes one of the most feared men in the world....hes dangerous beyong words....what i can tell you is that we are all dead

Uncle 3: what...how do you know him

Thomas : it doesn't matter how i know him...the thing is i do and we are in deep shit

Thabo: i still say my plan will work cause we wont be suspects and our threat will be eliminated and again we will enjoy her lobola money like we enjoyed her inheritance

Aunt: to think i was nice to her when she arrived

Thabo: it was part of the plan unfortunately your acting skills didn't last long

Aunt: if my acting skills lasted long it would be easy now to poison her

Uncle3: yah eish

Thomas: we are all dead dont say i didn't warn you all...that man is the devil himself ...buti used to call him the angel of death

Thabo: ai man thomas man up man we need to do this for our families whats wrong with you. ...the angel of death ya masepa

thomas just kept quiet thinking about the worst thing that could happen now

*** in the kitchen kedi and ntombi prepared tea and cookies for the khumalos and they took the trays to them and knelt down while pouring tea for them ***

Jase: i can get used to this

Snakes: me too bafo

***kedi and ntombi shot them with death stare and the guys just laughed then jase stood up and helped kedi up and kedi and ntombi walked out ***

Elder1: you are whipped my boy

everyone laughed and jase just shook his head while smiling

Elder2: never hurt her nkosi i can tell just by looking at her that shes been through hell....be her safe heaven

Jase: i intend to mkhulu

Elder2: good cause i can tell shes gonna be your lucky charm

Dlamini: i can confirm that she already is

they laughed again

Baba: he knows what I'll do to him if he hurts her

Jase: baba come on even on my wedding day you're threatening me

Pops: il also cut off your balls if you hurt her

Jase: you too pops haaaaah come on

Dlamini: and il make sure your manhood never

works if you hurt her

Jase: ai i give up

all of them busted out with laughter.... after a while jay walked in with kedi's food and he sat down

Snakes: i can tell you two had spur ribs while we drank tea and cookies

Muzi: jealousy doesn't look good on you bafo

Snakes: mxm il get for this

***they just chuckled jase called kedi and gave her the food they bought for her and ntombi.....after a while the uncles came back and they said its time for the goat to be slaughtered.....they all went out and the goat was slaughtered and half of it was given to the khumalos and half of it remained with the uncles also the khumalos presented their gifts to the malapanes and then it was time to eat the yard was already full with people by now so

kedi and ntombi went to put their food in the car and went to help out with dishing out for everyone after everyone was served including the khumalos and the uncles, aunt boipelo saw that kedi and ntombi weren't eating so she saw this as an opportunity and she went to dish out for kedi and ntombi but she poured poison only on the plate intended for kedi and as she was about to walk out of the kitchen the two plates flew off from her hands as if someone slapped them off and they smashed on the floor and broke into pieces.....leaving her shocked ***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 15:47] Nor: INSERT.....70

.
. .

***NARRATED ***

*** boipelo stood there asking herself what just happened...after a while she cleaned the broken plates and spilled food on the floor and she went to the bedroom after a few minutes thabo entered ***

Thabo: is it done

Aunty: no...ummm....they....eish i dont know what happened

Thabo:what do you mean you dont know what happened

Aunty: i had the plates in my hands and on my way to give the food to them and its like the

plates were slapped off my hands and they fell on the floor

Thabo: what bullshit is that boipelo

Aunty: its not bullshit thabo ok im still trying to make sense of what just happened eish

Thabo: you can make sense of what just happened while you dishing out another plate

Aunty: so im not allowed to take a breather now

Thabo: we dont have all day ok

Aunty: ok eish

then uncle thabo walked out then all of a sudden she heard a whisper close to her ear

Voice: you gonna die

***she stood up quickly looking around the room and she felt chills down her spine and fear washed over her and she quickly rushed out of the bedroom to where the other women were including Gladys and she sat down with

her heart beating fast***

Gladys: are you ok boipelo

Aunty: yes i just have a headache

Gladys: ok

then she received a message it was from thabo"do it now shes sitting alone" then boipelo stood up and went to dish up for kedi and poured the remaining poison on the food and took it to her. ... after she stepped out of the kitchen all of a sudden she tripped and fell face down with her face hitting the ground hard and the plate also fell and broke into pieces with that poisoned food spilled all over the ground and she passed out instantly.... people rushed to her and her around she had blood on her face,the fall broke her nose and she also lost a couple of teeth in the process

Gladys: ohh my God what happened

she screamed out

Woman1: i just saw her falling face down to the floor i dont know what happened

Woman2: did she maybe trip

Gladys : but there's nothing that she could have tripped on to fall like this

Woman1:she needs to be taken to hospital shes bleeding too much

Gladys ran inside the house and told her husband and thabo to come to the back quickly cause boipelo fell and shes bleeding and they rushed after her

Baba: i wonder what happened

Dlamini: her death is near atleast that boy grew some new balls now

***he whispered ***

Baba: that dead boy

*** baba whispered back and dlamini nodded with a smile on his face***

Dlamini: i thought ghosts where stubborn but i guess i got through to him

he whispered back

Baba: this is just the beginning...what i have in store for them is way better

Dlamini: with that grin on your face im even scared to ask

they both laughed

***meanwhile thabo and thomas got to their sister and she was bleeding heavily inside her mouth and nose and thomas picked her up and rushed outside the gate to his car.....with people asking what happened and he put her at the backseat and thabo and Gladys also got in and they drove her to the hospital ***

Jase: and now

***jase, muzi and jay were standing outside the gate trying to organize booze for all those

people in the yard since the uncles don't give a shit about catering for them as for snakes and ntombi they went to the bnb to do what they do best being to fuck ***

Jay: i wonder what happened

Muzi: fuck whatever hit her on her face fucked her up big time

Jase: aow doctor ntuli why didn't you help her

Muzi: tsek

they laughed and kedi walked to them and jase opened his arm and he pulled her to his chest and kissed the top of her head

Kedi: what happened

Jase: we also dont know my heart

Jay: you good

she nodded

Kedi: can i please have the car keys i need my hot wings

she said that with her soft appealing voice that made jase have goosebumps in his stomach

Jase: lets go

he pulled her towards the car that had her food and he pinned her on the car and smashed his lips on hers while both his hands were cupping her faceafter a while they pulled out of the kiss both catching their breath and jase stared in her beautiful eyes....she was wearing her contact lenses

Jase: hi

he said smiling and kedi smiled too

Kedi: hi

and they continued to stare at each other

Jase: fuck i love you my heart

Kedi: i love you too my king

Jase: everyday i fall deeper and deeper in love

with you to a point that it has started to drive me absolutely insane...now i cant even sleep without you safely being in my arms,can you believe i didn't sleep a wink last night

***he said that with a straight face then a smile formed on his lips ***

Jase: i cant wait until we get home.... shit the things im gonna do to you nc nc nc

***he said that last part shaking his head and he bit his lower lip and kedi blushed and she put her hands on her face.. .it drove jase crazy when she did that ***

Jase: you see what you doing to me

he pointed at his visible boner

Kedi: you started it

jase bent down and kissed her again while he grabbed her ass tight and a groan escaped his mouth and he pulled out of the kiss and put his forehead on hers with his eyes closed

Kedi: people are watching khumalo

he opened his eyes

Jase: you are my wife so i can kiss you and grab your ass anywhere and anytime....they should look elsewhere if they not enjoying this view

kedi just smiled shaking her head then they took out her wings and they went to where jay and muzi where with jase's hands in his pockets

Jase: is the booze on its way

Jay: yeah they almost here

Kedi: im gonna go sit down my feet and back are killing me

Jase: since when

Kedi: since early in the morning....ntombi and i woke up and swept the yard and also cleaned the house since then my back and feet have been killing me

Jase: ok lets go sit down il give you a proper
massage when we get home ok

Kedi: ok

***they went to sit down in the veranda after a
while a van stopped by the gate full of crates of
beers and packs of different alcohol and guys in
the yard started whistling ***

***at the hospital.... thabo,thomas and Gladys
sat at the waiting area...waiting for the doctor
to tell them how boipelo is***

Thomas: i told you....i told you we are all in deep
shit but you all didn't listen to me....angel of
death ya masepa right thabo thats what you
said to me when i warned you right....you see
now see what just happened nx

he was pacing up and down

Gladys: thomas what are you talking
about....boipelo tripped and fell

Thomas: thats what you think right well honey
everything is not as it seems with him

Gladys: who's him

Thabo: stop it ok just stop it boipelo will be fine
so stop all this angel of death nonsense

Gladys: will someone tell me whats going on

***thomas and thabo kept quiet both of them
looking down with Thomas hands on his
head***

***back in the house....after jay,jase and muzi
including snakes who was now back with
ntombi from the bnb distributed the alcohol
amongst the people in the yard including the
two elders in the house they went inside the
house***

Pops: you four are running things in this yard as
if its your fathers houses

they all laughed

Jase: its our father in law's house haw

Baba: those evil bastards left their "in laws " alone in this yard can you believe it....

Jay: nah one of them is around in this yard hes more excited of the booze that just arrived than to entertain us or worry about his sister that was just rushed to hospital

Baba: mmmmh....nkosenye take me,your father and dlamini to my friend's graveside and the rest follow me to the car

he said standing up

Baba: brothers il be back the boys will take care of you until we come back enjoy yourselves

***they nodded looking happy cause the table was full of bottles of Irish scotch and brandy.

...they walked outside to the cars with people watching ,you could tell they are wealthy with the way they walk and the aura around them....you respect them without being told

to....they got to the car and stood there ***

Baba: boys i want you to do something for me

then kedi's uncle had to irritate baba by calling out at them

Uncle: my in laws you leaving already

they ignored him but he went to them

Uncle: my in laws are you leaving already

Baba: voetsek do we look like your in laws....dont go around vomiting rubbish out of your mouth calling us your fucken in laws nx the only inlaw i know you and your evil brothers and that bitch you call your sister killed him now fuck off from our faces

yho uncle stood there with his jaw dropped luckily baba wasn't shouting so no one heard them

Pops: what are you still waiting here for....go on and enjoy our fucken hard earned money....that's the speciality you and your

brothers are good at right enjoying another man's hard earned money

Jay: eeh papa move along

uncle took a deep breath and went back to the yard with his tail between his legs he was glad that no one heard all those insults that were showered on him

Baba: as i was saying i want you all to organise a few boys that work for us to come and rob this house of all that lobola money tonight after the yard is cleared of all this people and pin that whole thing to thomas cause hes the weakling between the three of them....im not counting that bitch cause she wont see the sun set tomorrow

Muzi: you want them to turn on each other

Baba: damn right ooh and use all of it to buy the best tombstones money can buy for my friend and her wife

Dlamini: you are one sly old man

Baba: and this is just the beggining.... once im done with all of them they'll call upon death and death will be scared to visit them.....make it happen boys and look after the girls

Them: noted baba

then they got inside the car and drove off....the guys went inside the yard and katli walked towards them smiling from ear to ear

Katli: aow my in laws we haven't been introduced formally

Snakes: VOETSEK DO WE LOOK LIKE WE ENTERTAIN PROSTITUTES

yho everyone that heard that laughed at katli while others gasped and the guys walked towards where kedi and ntombi were sittted

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 18:12] Nor: Diary ya kedi:the chozen one

INSERT.....71

.

.

.

KEDI'S POV

*** i saw some girls laughing at katli who walked away looking hurt....mmmm i wonder what was said to her anyway ive been sitting here with ntombi and shes been complaining about how sore she is down there,i saw by her

funny walk when she walked towards me that things were rough....now we've been sitting here gossiping here and there about this people in this yard especially the girls who are trying by all means to get the guy's attention who dont even notice them and we also remembered to call masibiya to start preparing dinner cause we are already tired to get home and start cooking

Ntombi: i wonder what nhlaka said to that bitch for people to laugh at her like that

Me: i wonder too did you see how hurt she looked

Ntombi: serves her right

Me: ntombi!

Ntombi: no kedi dont please after all the insults she showered on you i wish nhlaka slapped her also

***i just looked at her as she continued to eat

her burger....the guys came with chairs and they sat down ***

Jase: you good

Me: yep

Jase: ok

Me: where did baba,bab'dlamini and and your dad go to

Jase: to the bnb to take our luggage since we will leave straight home from here

Me: ok

***ok why did baba,pops and bab'dlamini go cause they could have sent the guys instead or maybe they forgot to take their high blood pressure pills or arthritis pills anyway we all sat here chatting away after some time i stood up i wanted to go to the restroom ***

Jase: where are you going

Me: i need to pee

Jase: do you want me to come with you. ..you know what lets go

he said that standing up too

Me: no bathong jase

Jase: what

Me: im going to pee il be back now

Jase: fine then hurry back and be careful

***i just shook my head and went to the outside toilet cause Gladys locked the one that's inside...after i did my business i walked out and washed my hands on the outside tap and my eyes landed on the storeroom aka my bedroom....i went inside and i looked around the dirty and stinking room and all those painful memories came rushing back to me , all those times sam would kick open the already broken door and rape me all night longincluding that time i tried to commit suicide by stealing panado pills in the main house and drinking

them only to vomit all of them out afterwards
....all those nights i slept hungry....all those
times i prayed hard to God to take my life...all
those times i ate rotten bread that had that
green fungus thingy on it i found in the dustbin
so that i dont sleep hungry....all those winter
days i would have sleepless nights because the
one blanket i had wasn't enough to keep me
warm for the cold winter nights,all those days i
was everyone's punching bag and the worse
part is i went through all those things in my
father's house a place where i was supposed to
feel safe and comfortable in, a place thats
supposed to be my safe heaven instead it was
hell for me ...i got down on my knees with my
hands on the floor and i let it all out, i just cried
out all that pain.... i cried like I've never cried
before, all that pain i let it all out then i felt
hands pulling me back i knew it was jase his
hypnotic cologne gave him away....he held me
tight rocking me back and forth***

Jase: shhhhh my heart its ok its all over

i continued to cry until i calmed down i was only left with hiccups

Jase: you calm now

i nodded then he stood up and pulled me up and took out a handkerchief from his pocket and wiped my face after that he cupped my face then he kissed the living daylights out of me, after a while he pulled out of the kiss with both of us catching our breath and he took a chair that was in a far corner of this room and he also took some dirty cloth on the floo and cleaned the chair then he sat down and pulled me to sit on his lap and he brushed my belly

Jase: did you use those three blanket even during winter

i nodded and he sighed then i put my head on his shoulder

Jase: i love you ok

me: i love you too

Jase: do you feel better now

Me: yeah my chest is lighter now....now i can let go and accept that im really not in that place anymore that im in a good place with people who actually adore and love me sincerely

he kissed my forehead and we continued to sit like that in total silence but it wasn't an awkward silence no no no it was a "lost in thought" silence after some time his phone rang and he answered

Jase: pops

Pops : its time to go now

***i could hear him ok when did they come back

Jase: ok we are coming

then they ended the call

Jase: lets go home my heart

Me: ok

***i stood up and he also did and we walked out of the storeroom and went inside the house immediately as we entered people, especially the woman from our neighbourhood started singing a tswana song that goes like this

" se mo tserere tserere senatla ×3" (a hunk has taken her)

"Ngwana o tserwe ke senatla ×1"(the child has been taken by a hunk)

"Heita mapantsula julle moenie worry ngwana o tserwe ke senatla ×1"(hey guys dont worry the child has been taken by a hunk)***

***they kept on repeating it over and over singing loud and i was blushing as hell....ntombi came and hugged me thne she took the bedroom keys and walked away and snakes followed her....as for jay he kept on touching and pointing at jase's muscled arm shouting "you see he is a hunk" anyway we walked out to

the car with people singing and jase and i got in the car so did everyone including the already drunk elders and ntombi and snakes.... then jase started the engine and all the cars hooted as we drove off...

***NARRATED ***

Earlier on.... the doctor finally came to give the uncles feed back and the nurse showed him the people that brought in the patient and he walked to them ...the uncles saw him approaching and they stood up

Thomas: how is she doc

Doctor: shes suffered a fractured skull and a broken nose and she also lost her front teeth

Gladys: will she be ok

Doctor: i cant say right now cause she drifted into a coma once she wakes up we will do more

test to determine how much damage is there

***he took a deep breath ***

Doctor: the truth is it doesn't look good im
sorry

***the uncles put their hands on their heads
looking up as for Gladys she sat down feeling
defeated***

Doctor: what happened to her if i may ask

Gladys: she tripped and fell

Doctor: no ordinary fall can fracture a skull like
that it doesn't make sense

Gladys : we were all there when she fell

***the doctor sighed and told them he'll keep
them updated about her progress then Thomas
asked if they can see her he said of course and
they followed him....after they saw her
surrounded by machines thomas and Gladys
couldn't take it so they walked out and went to
the car,as for thabo he stayed behind and he

held her sister's hand even though they didn't share the same mother but they shared the same father he loved her as if they shared the same womb....he is very fond of her even though hes a bit hard on her sometimes ***

Thabo: you need to wake up boipelo i need you in fact we all need you

he sighed

Thabo: i dont know what happened but i promise you il get to the bottom of this...please be strong and fight to come back to us please, fight for your children and husband ...i love you ausi

***he kissed her forehead and walked out to the car and they drove back home in complete silence, thomas kept on thinking that maybe if they stay away from kedi maybe that man will also leave them alone cause they were only accomplices even though they profited from everything, harold and susan are the ones that

actually did the job and killed his brother and wifewhat he needed to do was convince thabo cause hes the stubborn one ...after some time they arrived at home and the yard was packed and music was playing loud....they walked inside the house and found the khumalos ready to leave....baba,pops and bab'dlamini were back from the graveyard ***

Thabo: our inlaws please forgive us for rushing out like that without any explanation...our sister fell at the back and we had to rush her to the hospital since she was bleeding heavily

*** baba and pops couldn't care less of their stupid explanation now all they wanted was to leave this place***

Dlamini: will she be ok

Thabo: we just have to be hopeful

***bab'dlamini nodded knowing very well that his friend will end her life shortly...as for Thomas he was looking down all along asking

himself what the heck is going on ***

Baba: about next weekend i want to know that since you are facing this will you be able to make it to kzn

Thomas: il come and represent our family me and my wife

he wanted to make things right for kedi and maybe this old man can spare his life

Baba: ok...so should we arrange transport for you or are you covered

Thomas: dont worry about that im covered

Baba: good

Pops: we would like to take our leave now we still have a long way home

Thabo: have a safe journey back home

then pops called jase and told him its time to go

*** after an hour or soo due to traffic on the

road they finally arrived home it was now around 6 in the afternoon luckily kedi called masibiya to cook dinner for everyone cause she was just exhausted....what she needed was a warm bath and a nice massage and some serious rest.....all the cars drove in and parked, baba,bab'dlamini,kedi,ntombi and the two drunk elders went inside while the guys took out the luggages and the half sheep they got from kedi's uncles and they went inside....the girls immediately went to the kitchen and found masibiya done with cooking ,she quickly hugged both ntombi and kedi and congratulated kedi and they started preparing the dining room table and they dished up for everyone and called them to come and eat after everyone was done eating they helped masibiya with washing the dishes... once they were done they saw the men sitting in the lounge drinking whiskey and scotch chatting away as for kedi and ntombi they went upstairs to their designated bedroom

while masibiya went to fix the bedrooms the old men were gonna use....as soon as kedi entered the bedroom she immediately ran herself a bubble bath and took off her clothes and got in the bathtubshe just closed her eyes and let the warm water sooth and massage her skin, after sometime jase walked in butt naked and he got in the bathtub behind kedi and kedi rested her back on jases muscled chest and jase kept on brushing her belly***

Jase: remind me to give you a massage when we're done here

kedi: ok. .. now why aren't you with the other men downstairs drinking away the rest of the day

Jase: i missed you that's why and the elders went to their designated bedrooms its just us the guys...tell me my heart why does your dad share a name with your uncle thabo

Kedi: i dont know but what i know is they dont

share the same mother

Jase: ooh ok

even though kedi's dad was known as bra shakes in the mafia jase was curious as to why two brothers shared a name....now he had a feeling that maybe this hatred thing is way deeper than he thought

.

.

[08/06, 18:14] Nor: INSERT.....72

.

.

.

***NARRATED ***

***it was already dark outside now and since the booze was done including the traditional beer people started to leaveafter everyone

was gone the uncles and Gladys started picking up the bottles in the yard....after they were done they went inside and sat in the living room***

Thomas: we should all sleep over and we will leave tomorrow morning

Thabo: yah we will also share the money tomorrow nna im just tired and stressed out by boipelo's condition Gladys: ok let me bring something for you all to eat before we all go to sleep

Thabo: ok plus im starving

as for the other uncle he was passed out on the couch....Gladys brought them food and they all started chatting about what they will do with their share of the money

Thabo: and i think if boipelo doesn't wake up by tomorrow we should give her share to her husband

Gladys: oh my God we forgot to call him

regarding boipelo

Thabo: dont worry i already did

Gladys: ok

they continued to chat away until they heard the burglar door open they didn't react cause they thought it was amo and katli since they left with everyone to the nearest tavern but where shocked and scared when the door opened and four men wearing masks entered pointing guns at them

Guy1: move and you're dead

Thabo: please dont hurt us

Guy1: DID I SAY YOU CAN TALK.... NOW PUT YOUR HANDS WERE WE CAN SEE THEM

***thabo shook his head like a small boy and kept quiet....one guy went to the uncle that was passed out on the couch and shook him roughly and he started to snore louder he smelled like a brewery so they let him be ***

Guy2: good now where's the money

***they kept quiet and the guy crocked his gun and pointed it to Gladys ***

Guy2: ok im gonna ask again cause im a nice guy....WHERE THE FUCK IS THE MONEY

thabo: we dont know what you are talking about

the first guy's gun had a silencer on so he shot thabo on his leg and he screamed out in pain and Gladys cried out*

Guy3: shut up you stupid bitch

then he pointed the gun at Gladys and thomas screamed for them not to shoot anyone else he'll give them the money.....they told him to stand up and he led the way to the main bedroom*

in the living room the guys started talking amongst themselves

Guy4: jabu(fake name) fucked up bra thomas said we shouldn't hurt him or his family

members we find here and jabu just short his brother in front of him

thabo and Gladys heard that

Guy3: SHUT UP MAN YOU FUCKEN KNOW THE RULES..... NO MENTIONING OF NAMES
...WHATS WRONG WITH YOU

Guy4: shit hade joh please dont tell bozza

thabo and Gladys couldn't believe what they just heard....then thomas came back with the guy pointing a gun at the back of his head.....the guy had that briefcase in his hand....then they ordered everyone to lay on the floor facing down and the thugs rushed out

Gladys: THOMAS CALL AN AMBULANCE

thomas took out his phone and called an ambulance

Thabo: how.....could you tho...Thomas

Thomas: i had no choice thabo they shot you and they were gonna shoot Gladys

Thabo: you... you betrayed us

Gladys: save your strength thabo the ambulance is on its way

***as for the other uncle he was still out of it on the couch he didn't even see anything ***

*** JASE'S POV ***

***we finished bathing and now she laying in bed on her back and im giving her a foot massage but eish i know it wont end there...the way im hungry for her the moment she moaned out of pleasure mntungwa became hard as a rock i tried to behave at least until im done with massaging her but now muntungwa doesn't want to listen to me hes just standing firm ready to feast we are both naked under the towels we have on so i took off mine and took off hers and immediately

opened her legs wide and went down on her and started eating what's mine hard...she kept on jerking up and down but then i stopped when she started moaning out loud cause i remembered that the bedroom is not sound proofed damn i now know its time i had this room sound proofed...so i went to the closet and took out my vest with mntungwa throbbing and dripping wet with vains popping and he was painful as hell anyway i went back to the bed.got between her legs and i tied the vest around her mouth and i rubbed the tip of my already wet dick on her dripping wet pussy and i tried to enter her for like three times but damn my heart was tight as hell....i haven't made love to her in four days and already her pussy is this tight anyway i finally entered her and i felt her pussy walls expand and i tightened my jaws and groaned inside my mouth while she also moaned with that vest tied on he mouth....i started to move slow and she picked up on my

rhythm quickly and our waist movements started being in sync shit her nails dug into my skin on both my upper arms , right then i pulled her left leg up and i picked up my pace and started going in and out of her hard,fast and deeper it felt soo good i wanted to scream out loud or growl out loud or even groan out loud but eish i couldn't but yeses this felt too damn good....after some time i felt my body tense up and by this time my heart has already had her multiple orgasms and we are both sweating as hell trying by all means to minimize our moans and groans....i went way faster going deeper i was fucken losing my mind i swear it was like i was in another world, i think i hit her g-spot again cause she closed her eyes tight and her body shook uncontrollablyafter a few seconds i slammed into her hard and i released inside of her and my body shook uncontrollably too with my jaw clenched tight and the only sound that came out of my mouth was

"mmmmmm"....then i quickly pulled out of her and collapsed next to her breathing heavily***

Me: fuck! That was damn good

my heart untied the vest and took a deep breath and breathed out heavily

Me: you ok my heart...shit im sorry if i was rough...is my son ok

i said that turning quickly to look at her and she was laying on her back facing up with her eyes closed

Me: my heart

***she kept quiet while breathing heavily...i quickly sat up with my heart beating out of my chest now it wasn't because of the marathon i just ran but because of her silence ***

Me: my heart please say something

Kedi: i know you were starved for four days but haw khumalo what was i punished for cause you the one who said we should wait for

Saturday

she said that with a low voice with her eyes closed...i breathed out in relief mxm i wanted to tickle the daylights out of her for scaring me like that but damn i fucked her up pretty good she looked extremely exhausted more than i am

Me: my heart dont scare me like that

Kedi: haw khante you also get scared

Me: losing you or our son scares the living daylight out of me my heart

Kedi: im loved neh

Me: three much

she tried to laugh or was it supposed to be a giggle...damn she looked out of it and i perked her lips and forehead

Kedi: you too always remember you are loved hundred much

Me: wa ropa haw (you are cheating haw)

she quickly opened her eyes and looked at me with her exhausted eyes and a tired smile formed on her face

Me: yes i can speak tswana

i perked her lips

Me: i love you ok my heart

Kedi: i love you too my king

***then i took one towel and cleaned her up and myself and took another one to wipe off our sweat on our body's and we got under the covers and i held her from behind and we drifted off to sleep immediately. ...i know she loves it when i hold her from behind she once said its because she loves waking up to my dick poking her butt,she said its one of the best feelings ever for her....anyway my phone rang waking me up from my sleep ***

Me: what

Jay: are you two done

Me: tsek

***he chuckled ***

Jay: come downstairs man

Me: ok im coming

i ended the call and snuggled out of bed not wanting to wake my heart and i went to the bathroom and i took a quick shower,lotioned,got dressed in sweatpants and a vest....i kissed my heart on the forehead and went downstairs and found the guys eating

Me: please tell me you didn't bother masibiya with cooking for yall again

Snakes: ma taught us how to cook haw

Me: just checking

***i poured myself a glass of whiskey and i gulped all of it down and poured another one

and also gulped it all down my throat***

Muzi: was she that good

***the all laughed while i shook my head
smiling ***

me: voetsek

Jay: i didn't hear her screams this time around

Me: i had ways to minimize them

Muzi: you need to take it easy on that girl bafo
dont forget shes pregnant

Me:you meant my wife

Muzi: yeah your wife and our sister in law

Snakes : guess what? the boys did their job
really well

Me: thats great news

Jay: yeah great news indeed now let them turn
on each other

Muzi: but wait what if they kill each other before

Saturday

Me: nah i dont think they will....they are not as hard-core as Harold and susan but hey if they do im sure we can find a distance relative to represent her family im sure we can find some in that area

Snakes: yeah

Jay: so muzi are you ready for Wednesday

Muzi: eish bafo dont remind me

Me: you'll be fine man

Muzi: i may be worried about the outcome of our meeting Wednesday but im sure as hell that noma will be my wife by the end of next year

we all cheered him

Us: THATHA MUZIKAYISE!

muzi: yall are just stupid nje

***we laughed ***

Snakes: fuck i cant wait for next weekend...the

way we gonna celebrate its gonna be just out of this world

Jay: im gonna get so drunk to a point that the only way il be able to get from point A to point B will be by crawling

Me: yall know we will only start drinking when everyone has left right

Snakes: yeah even if we start drinking at 1am in the early morning of Sunday it doesn't matter the fact is we gonna get drunk

***we all laughed....im glad baba cut down on us traveling cause yeses we used to travel alot because of the mafia yho, we would only bond like this over the telephone thats how bad it was but since my heart came into my life things have changed....yah neh im blessed ***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 18:14] Nor: ☆☆ A SPECIAL INSERT ☆☆

INSERT.....73

.

.

.

*** NARRATED ***

***muzi sat in the restaurant hes supposed to meet noma in at the mall nervous as hell he kept on rubbing his hands together roughly every now and then and he also kept on looking at his watch constantly....after 30 minutes of sitting there waiting for her he started having a doubt that maybe she might not come i mean he knew she didn't owe him anything so her not

coming its highly possible.... an hour passed and still she hadn't showed up and it started to hurt a bit that she stood him up,he put his hands on top of his head looking down with his elbows on top of the table feeling like a fool for thinking that she would actually come after everything he did to her....then a woman's voice said " hi",it sounded like she had flu when she spoke and muzi knew only one woman that has a scratchy but sexy voice and he quickly looked up and it was her.... it was noma he couldn't believe she finally came....she looked different, now she had make up on which she never did when they used to date and a weave on ***

Noma: can i sit

Muzi: umm yeah...sure...of course sit

she sat down and looked at muzi who was still stunned that she actually came

Muzi: you look good

Noma: thanks and you still look good too

Muzi: i try

he chuckled nervously

Noma: you said you wanted to see me...whats up?

muzi cleared his throat... he couldn't believe she just went straight to the point just like that

Muzi: can...can we order first

Noma: im not hungry but il have a glass of juice

Muzi: ok

***he signalled for the waiter to come and he did....he ordered two glasses of juice then he sat back and looked at noma....she still looked beautiful but he knew she looked more beautiful without all the eyelashes and a weave she had on ***

Noma: why did you want to meet muzi

Muzi: to apologise

Noma: you apologised after you chose her over me and i forgave you even though i never told you

Muzi: then i apologised cause i could see you were hurting which was my fault now im apologising cause karma visited me and made me see things clearly especially after i almost met my ancestors....you see a near death experience i had made me see things differently it made me acknowledge the most important things in life and it also showed me that when you tempt with fate your life will never be the same again

Noma: what do you mean by "a near death experience"

***muzi took a deep breath ***

Muzi: the woman i left you for put my family in danger and paid people to kill me

nomas eyes popped out shocked at what she just heard

Noma: wow

Muzi: yeah thats karma for you she dealt with me accordingly

Noma: where is she now... shes Natasha right?

Muzi: in hell...look can we not talk about her

Noma: ummm ok

Muzi: are you happy noma

***she took a deep breath and nodded ***

Muzi: the truth noma please

***she looked away then muzi noticed something on her neck that grabbed his attention he knew what it was and what it meant and that made him angry instantly ***

Muzi: what is that on your neck noma

she quickly fixed her scarf and looked down

Muzi: i asked you a question

Noma: its nothing muzi

Muzi: do i look stupid to you noma....im a fucken doctor i know what dose marks are

Noma: muzi please let it go

Muzi: he hits you

***noma looked down and a tear escaped her eye and she quickly wiped it and she stood up

Muzi: SIT!

***he roared and noma sat down slowly ***

Muzi: i asked you a question

she shook her head

Muzi: since when have you became a liar ...its not you

Noma: muzi let it go please

Muzi: take off that scarf

***noma shook her head and muzi stood up

and noma stood up too...muzi looked at noma with a straight face but then she grabbed her handbag and rushed out of the restaurant then muzi quickly took out a couple of hundreds from his wallet and put them on top of the table and went after noma ***

Muzi: NOMA WAIT

***she was running towards the exit door of the mall but luckily muzi caught up with her as soon as she exited the door and pulled her to a more quiet place ***

Noma: leave me alone muzi

Muzi: lets go somewhere and talk please

Noma: i cant muzi please leave me alone

Muzi: please

Noma: muzi first of all we are not friends and secondly im not your responsibility and thirdly what happens in my life or relationship is none of your business so leave me alone nx

Muzi: noma

Noma: no muzi...you left me for her after i gave you my all and you threw me away like a used pad or condom...you broke me and now after three years you stand here pretending to fucken care cause now things aren't going well for youyes he beats me up and its been happening for 7 months now at least hes man enough cause he wants to make me his wife unlike you....you broke me muzi, pain has been my everyday meal since you left me for another woman and the worst thing is few days after you left me i found out that i was pregnant and two weeks later i lost the baby because of stressnow please let me be nx just go deal with your skeletons alone and leave me the fuck alone

***then she walked away leaving muzi's heart broken to the core.... he was still trying to stomach what she just said to him especially the fact that she was pregnant and she lost the

baby.....he balanced himself with the wall feeling like someone was busy stabbing his heart with a sharp knife, he took out his phone and called jay***

Jay: foza

Muzi: im...im at the mall come now bafo i think im having a panic attack

he said that holding his chest

Jay: shit im on my way

muzi stood there balancing on the wall trying by all means to calm down but he was failing dismally cause his mind was always going back to noma and what she said to him....after some time jay rushed to muzi

Jay: muzi whats wrong

Muzi: take me home i need to lay down ***they slowly walked to the parking lot and got inside jay's car and as soon as muzi sat down he put his head on the dashboard and a low sob

escaped his mouth he couldn't hold it in anymore all that time he was waiting for jay he had a lump on his throat that kept on growing now he couldn't hold it in anymore ***

Jay: bafo what happened

***he sobbed until he calmed down ***

Muzi:she said she was pregnant when i left her for Natasha and....and she lost the baby three weeks later due to stress

Jay: fuck! Eish

he said that looking up

Muzi: and that bastard abuses her bafo she said its been happening for 7 months now

Jay: what

Muzi: i failed her bafo i chose a bitch over a woman

Jay: we can't let her stay with him bafo....there's no way in hell we will let her

Muzi: she hates me bafo

Jay: i dont believe that muzi....that girl loved you like no other and that kind of love doesn't just die just like that....she doesn't hate you shes just angry bafo

jay took out his phone and called jase and snakes and told them they have an emergency and that they should meet at muzi's house asap then they drove to muzi's place and went inside after a few minutes jase and snakes walked in

Jase: whats wrong

***jay told them what muzi told him ***

Jase: hade bafo i know that pain very well but please muzi dont let that anger,hurt and guilt consume you remember what you said to us that no matter what the outcome of your meeting with her today by the end of next year shes gonna be your wife

Snakes: hade foza

Jay: now we need to make sure she leaves that bastard

***they continued to discuss some more until muzi's phone rang he answered without looking at the screen ***

Muzi: yah

***he heard a person sniffing and he quickly looked at the screen and it was noma who called ***

Muzi: noma....noma whats wrong

Noma: help me muzi

then a voice in the background spoke

Voice: WHO ARE YOU CALLING HUH ITS THAT BASTARD YOU WERE SEEN WITH ISN'T IT...YOU FUCKEN WHORE

***muzi kept on calling noma's name until he heard what sounded like a loud slap and noma

screaming***

Voice: STAY THE FUCK AWAY FROM MY WIFE
YOU SON OF A BITCH....SHES MINE YOU HEAR
ME...SHES FUCKEN MINE

muzi: you better start running boy and never
look back cause im coming for you and your
entire family

***he said that soo calmly that it scared the
guys then he dropped the call and he stood up
with his face hard ***

Jase: what happened

Muzi: he beat her up again and im gonna burn
him alive

then he rushed upstairs

Jay: something snapped in him

Snakes: ive never seen him like this before

Jase: and his eyes became darker

Jay: shit

***muzi came downstairs with a bag on his hand and the guys followed him to the cars and drove off to noma's place when they arrived there muzi and jase jumped the wall it wasn't that high and they went to the main door with their guns already drawn out and muzi knocked on the door...after sometime they saw the door handle move and they both put their hands on their backs hiding their guns and the door opened and Charles(noma's fiance) was standing at the door with a glass of brandy on his hand ***

Charles: who the fuck are you and how the fuck did you get in

***then jase quickly brought his gun forward which had a silencer on and shot Charles on both of his legs within a blink of an eye that's how good he was and Charles fell on the floor screaming in pain then muzi pulled the burglar door with the attempt to open it and luckily it wasn't locked and they went in and muzi knelt

in front of Charles looking at him with a hard and scary face***

Muzi: i told you to run and never look back didn't i and look now you made my brother waste his expensive bullets on you nx

***Charles didn't say anything he was crying due to the pain he was feeling on his legs and muzi stood up and left him there with jase walking further inside the house calling out for noma ***

☆☆ TO BE CONTINUED ☆☆

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 18:14] Nor: ☆☆☆A CONTINUATION OF
INSERT 73☆☆☆

.

.

.

***NARRATED ***

*** muzi rushed to each room in that house calling out for noma until he barged into what looked like the main bedroom and went to the in-suit bathroom and found noma on the floor bleeding and quickly rushed to her and checked her pulse and it was still there ***

Muzi: noma its me muzi open your eyes please

***she slowly opened her eyes but only one eye opened wide but the other one was swollen....muzi helped her up and scooped her up bridal style and went and put her on top of the bed and checked for any broken bones and

every time he pokes her ribcage she would flinch and cry so he knew its either its broken or fractured ***

Muzi:where's your id book and other important documents

Noma: huh

Muzi:you heard me noma now focus where are they

Noma: second door on the drawer

***muzi went there and found a white envelope and checked inside and went to where noma was and took out a sedative ***

Muzi: you gonna be ok...this injection is gonna knock you out so the pain can subside but you'll wake up to find me next to you....im not going anywhere ok

noma nodded and muzi injected her and a second later she started feeling dizzy

Muzi: rest my love

and it was lights out for her....then muzi picked her up from the bed with the envelope on his hand and went with her to the living room and he found all the guys in there busy slapping Charles around... now he was tied on a chair crying like a baby

Snakes: is she gonna be ok bafo

he said that as soon as he saw muzi carrying noma

Muzi: she'll be ok il make sure of that...spilo please take her to the car and make sure shes comfortable in the backseat

***jay took her and muzi also gave him the envelope too and he walked out while muzi walked to the garage and searched around until he found what he wanted which was petrol...he started pouring it from the garage and he went to the bedrooms and he poured some on top of the beds and he went back to the living room and started pouring some on top of the

couches and poured the rest of it on top of Charles...it was five liter so it went a long way then he took a chair and sat in front of Charles while snakes went around the house checking if the were security cameras and the weren't any

Muzi: 7 months Charles seven fucken months you've been abusing her

Charles: please man im so...sorry please call an ambulance im bleeding to death here please man

he said that with a low voice his face was covered with sweat,blood,mucus, petrol and tears it was just a mess nje

Muzi: thats what i want for you to die a painful death screaming from the top of your lungs like the way noma was screaming for you to stop

Charles: please man il...il leave her alone....il go away

Muzi: too late for that Charlie. ...fuck im gonna enjoy this

the guys were shocked to see this side of muzi cause they always thought he was the sane one amongst them but now they weren't too sure anymore

Muzi: i want to hear you scream Charlie please dont disappoint me

***he said that winking at him and he stood up and went to the garage and set it alight and went to the bedrooms and set them alight too then he went to the living room and threw a match stick on top of the couche that had the petrol on and it immediately started to burn then he went to Charles who was now crying silently ***

Muzi: remember i wanna hear you scream man

***then he took a few steps back and set the match stick alight and threw it on Charles and he immediately started burning...he wasn't

screaming loud cause he was weak from the blood loss, he tried to move but he was tied up now smoke started filling the living room and things were falling then the guys quickly rushed out and drove away...they arrived at muzi's place and muzi carried noma inside the white room and he did his things and let her rest....he went to the lounge after 2 hours***

Jase: will she be ok bafo

he sighed

Muzi: yeah but that bastard fractured two of her ribs and worst of all she already had three ribs on her other side that were also fractured but luckily they are healing nicely

Jay: that son of a bitch turned her into a fucken punching bag

Snakes: nx bastard

Muzi: i failed her bafo

Jase: no bafo dont do that i wont let you do that

to yourself ok

Jay: bafo that bastard is the one who abused her not you

Snakes: now that shes here make sure you never let her go no matter what

Jase: yah bafo remember it wont be easy cause you know she can be stubborn if she wants but never give up on her bafo

Muzi: im never letting her go bafo

Jase: good

jase's phone rang it was his heart

Jase: my heart

Kedi: jase are you gonna come back late

Jase: no... you've been crying whats wrong my heart

Kedi: you said when you come back you'll bring me hot wings and a big mac and you still not here and nna im hungry

she sniffed...jase sighed cause he knew she didn't tell him about hot wings or a big mac

Jase: stop crying my heart i already brought them i just went past muzi's place now im leaving ok im coming home

Kedi: ok

Jase: i love you

Kedi: i love you too

***then he ended the call ***

Jay: and now

Jase: those evil hormones are back at it again....apparently i promised to bring her hot wings and a big mac and i know nothing of that mxm

Muzi: be thankful she called you while you're still here imagine walking in and she asks you where her hot wings and big mac are

Snakes: ICU is where you would have ended up

tonight

they laughed

Jase: tsek....yall have girlfriends now and i wish they fall pregnant too

Them: mxm

Jay: well dont include me on that one remember im single

Jase: not for long one thing i know is that nomhle stole your heart

Jay: stole whose heart

Jase: dont forget im you and you are me so i know what im talking about....you may deny it all you want bafo but you know im telling you the truth

he said that standing up

Jase: il see yall tomorrow let me go and feed my heart....muzi take care of our kotiza and fix things bafo Saturday i want her ekhaya enjoying

the day with us....there's no playing hide and seek manje fix things ,you wasted three years, no more wasting time

***muzi nodded ***

Jase: ok im out

then he walked out to his car and drove out

Snakes: kray has grown up

Muzi: yeah

Jay: and his mouth has grown too...who said nomhle stole my heart

Muzi: ok ok bafo so you wont mind if i hook up one of my colleagues with her....he likes her but i warned him to keep away from her cause you know i take her as a little sister now i can just give him the go ahead

Jay: what is your colleague's name

Snakes : why

Jay: i just want his name....what is his name

Muzi: so he can wake up a dead man
tomorrow.... no im not gonna tell you

Jay: its fine il find out myself and it better not
be that skinny fool that walks like hes about to
take his last breath cause il fucken rip his
useless heart out with my bare hands nx

Snakes: calm down will you

***jay stood up ***

Jay: il see yall tomorrow....tonight i need to
fuck im fucken tense

Muzi: why are you tense

Jay: tsek

muzi and snakes chuckled

Jay:take care of noma bafo

Muzi: sure

Jay: mamba tomorrow

Snakes: sure

*** then he walked out***

Muzi: jay in love fuck i never thought il live to see this day

Snakes : believe it bafo and i can already sense some trouble coming cause as old as jay is its the first time hes fallen for a woman and remember nomhle is engaged to be married and she doesn't look like someone who would defy her father just like that by calling off the engagement

Muzi: eish we must prepare ourselves cause jay is more heartless than the three of us combined bafo so its gonna be one heck of a ride

Snakes: yah eish anyway let me get going i miss my crazy woman...take care of noma and remember what jase said fix things cause we wanna see her ekhaya on Saturday

Muzi: yeah

Snakes: ok il see you tomorrow

Muzi:sure

they fist bumped and snakes left....muzi went to the white room and took the drip out of noma and all the wires connected to her and he picked her up and went upstairs to the main bedroom and gently put her under the covers and took a chair and put it next to the bed and sat down and watched her sleep after some time noma opened her eyes and looked around the bedroom she wasn't familiar with and her eyes landed on muzi when she looked on her right side

Muzi:hey

Noma:where...where am i

Muzi: my place

Noma: ok

Muzi: do you need some water

noma nodded and muzi helped her drink some and she layed back on the bed

Noma: will i be ok

Muzi: yes you will

Noma: ok

Muzi: im sorry about what happened noma

she just nodded and looked away

Muzi: ok let me go fix you something to eat

he stood up and walked to the door

Noma: muzi

he stopped walking and turned to look at her

Noma: can i use you phone to call my brother to come and pick me up

Muzi: no

Noma: huh..... ummm please i dont know where my phone is

Muzi: you are not leaving me noma....i lost you once and im never losing you again....il nurse you back to health then il also win your heart back but be rest assured that im never ever letting you go again i made that mistake once and im never gonna make it again

***then he walked out leaving noma tongue tied....after a few minutes muzi walked in with two plates of food and two glasses of juice on top of a tray and helped noma to sit up and muzi kissed her forehead and he also stole a perk on her lips that left noma speechless then he sat down and they started to eat in silence

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 18:14] Nor: INSERT.....74

.
. .
. .

****KEDI'S POV****

***the whole week was just ok I was only nervous about Saturday but thank God everything went well and all the traditional rights were done, ntombi also helped me with buying the gifts so everything went well I was welcomed to the family with style I even got to see the brothers dance the traditional Zulu dance yho and I must say they are good at it i didn't even know they could danceeven uncle Thomas and her wife Gladys came,I was shocked when uncle Thomas gave a well thought out speech to me in front of everyone

he even said he's proud of me and that wherever my parents are they are also happy and proud of me.....i couldn't believe that uncle Thomas would one day say something so heart warming to me but hey who knows maybe he's just buying face the fact remains I don't trust him or anyone from my family but I appreciate him being here.....i even met noma (muzi' s noma)and I must say she's beautiful shem I'm glad muzi finally got his noma backalso jase' s aunts took me to some bedroom and gave me marriage advice, the things they said to me would make one reconsider this marriage thing but I can't chicken out now cause I love jase too much.....now I'm sitting out here with ntombi and noma and two other girls who are ntombi's cousins they are drinking alcohol while noma and I are drinking juice,it's already getting late and I'm tired as hell my feet are swollen and my back hurt and this old women have been calling me left right and center not

minding that I'm pregnant I don't know if they are trying to prove a point or what but I can't anymore.....mnqobi has been restless the entire week his movements and kicks are stronger now and my belly is a bit bigger we even went for some checkup at muzi's practice and he said the lil ninja is ok he's just growing and the cramps I feel sometimes is my womb stretching trying to accommodate the baby but I feel like something is not ok cause I visited Google and what I'm going through now I'm supposed to experience it next month or so but here I am being kicked at left right and center like I'm 8 months pregnant and as if this lil ninja is ready to pop out mxm***

Ntombi: you good

Me: my back hurts ntombi and look at my feet

Ntombi: askies love

Me: it's ok.... people used condoms and I decided to have it skin to skin this is payback

***she just busted out with laughter that made me and noma to laugh too mxm ***

Ntombi: mxm you are crazy shem

Noma: once you hold him in your arms you'll forget about all this back pain and swollen feet

Me: I should give birth already no no no this lil ninja is just too much now he's too comfortable in here,he kicks me like I owe him something and he moves around as if it's his father's house in here nx

they busted out with laughter again

Noma: you are crazy shem

Ntombi: and she always says I'm the crazy one

we laughed again

Me: I'll be back neh

ntombi: were are you going

Me: to make myself a sandwich I'm hungry

Ntombi: ok

***I stood up and went inside to the kitchen I was craving a peanut butter and tomato sauce sandwich ***

Voice: hi

I turned to look who it was and it was some woman who was chatting with the guys....she looked older than me but she was beautiful with a tiny waist and a big butt

Me: hi

Lady: ummm congratulations for your traditional wedding

Me: thanks

Lady: ummm my name is Casey I'm Friends with your husband and his brothers

Me:ok

Lady: I see you managed to change him or should I say tame him

Me: is that a compliment

Casey: ummm yeah sure

mxm compliment my Ass nx

Me: what can I do for you Casey

Casey: there's nothing you can do for me honey
I just wanted to see the woman who managed
to tame kray cause you see many have tried
but they failed me included

wow ok

Me: so you two used to fuck

Casey: not necessarily fuck but we were in a
relationship you know

Me: mmmm I see so now you have seen me so?

Casey: the thing is you not his type you know

Me: point of correction sweetie I'm his type
hence he's marrying me and every other slut he
fucked before they are just that "sluts and
whores"

***she laughed then her face became serious it

seems like I hit a nerve there ***

Casey: aren't we overreacting now about the sluts and whores

Me: really

Casey: look since you are so confident lil Miss

Me: you mean Mrs khumalo

ok I see what this bitch is trying to do but I won't let her ruin the rest of my special day nX

Casey: mxm whatever....since you are confident about your place next to kray "Mrs khumalo" I wonder if you have the stomach to handle the mafia business.... being part of the mafia is no child's play honey you are too soft and gullible to run this business with kray he needs.....

***I interrupted her I was pissed off by now and hurt I wished whatever she said about jase being part of the mafia was false ***

Me: SHUT UP...GET THE FUCK OUT OF THIS

KITCHEN BEFORE I WIPE THAT MUD OFF YOUR
FACE WITH A HOT SLAP

I shouted and Jay walked in the kitchen and immediately as our eyes locked tears streamed down my cheeks mxm stupid hormones and I quickly turned and looked away

Jay: Kedi what's going on

***I kept quiet and I wiped my tears...my mind was all over the place....its like she knew what she was talking about she even call him krayi was interrupted by a hand on my shoulder

Jay: what happened Kedi why are you crying

Me: it's....nothing

Jay: don't tell me it's nothing I heard you shouting and now you crying

Casey: we just had a lil misunderstanding Jay please let it go

Jay: what did you do to her

Casey: nothing

Jay took out his phone and dialled

Jay: come to the kitchen now

***and he dropped the call i knew he called jase mxm.....he looked at Casey with cold eyes I attempted to walk out but then jase walked in and he walked to me and put his hand on my belly and mnqobi moved then he brushed my belly.....i couldn't even look at him in the eyes I was really hurt ***

Jase: my heart what's wrong

I just kept quiet *

Jase: bafo what's going on

Jay: I found her shouting at Casey and crying

***jase looked looked at Casey with a cold face and i saw Casey start trembling with fear ***

****JASE' S POV****

*** I looked at Kedi and i knew Casey said something she wasn't supposed to say to her she couldn't even look me in the eyes****

Me: what did you say to my wife

Casey: I.... i didn't know she doesn't know jase I thought since you marrying her she knew everything about you

***I couldn't believe this i just chuckled in disbelief ***

Me: SINCE WHEN ARE YOU MY SPOKE PERSON
CASEY HUH

Casey: jase I'm sorry

Me: VOETSEK YOU STUPID BITCH ...LISTEN
AND LISTEN GOOD CASEY STAY THE FUCK
AWAY FROM ME AND MY WIFE YOU HEAR ME
I'LL FORGET THAT I'M IN BUSINESS WITH
YOUR BROTHER AND REARRANGE THAT UGLY
FACE OF YOURS NX

Casey: jase look I'm.....

she didn't finish her sentence cause jay grabbed her weave and dragged her outside and i looked at my heart and i knew i had some explaining to do

Me: my heart

Kedi: you shouldn't have married me jase she's right about one thing.....I'm gullible,soft and weak that's why you didn't see it fit to tell me about your other life right

no no no i can't let this happen i won't let her belittle herself because of my stupid choices

Me: my heart don't do this please

Kedi: don't do what jase huh say the truth.....on my traditional wedding day i find out you are part of the fucken mafia worst part is i hear all that from your girlfriend

***whooo what does she mean girlfriend.....i tried to touch her but she pushed me away and

walked out of the kitchen and i rushed after her
she went up the stairs to our bedroom and i got
in and closed the door***

Kedi: why jase huh you know everything
there is to know about me even my darkest past
but you hid your other life to me jase

Me:Kedi look i love you ok I'm sorry i....

she interrupted me

Kedi: dont tell me you're sorry i don't want your
stupid sorries they are useless to me jason

***i sat down at the edge of the bed looking
down.....she just called me jason I'm in deep
shit***

Kedi: i don't care about your stupid mafia thingy
jason and I'll never judge you but I'm hurt jason
you fucken lied to me its like i don't even know
you and on top of that.. that bitch ruined my
wedding day

***i didn't say anything i just couldn't.... the fact

that my heart is swearing means she's angry
and really hurt***

Kedi: im disappointed in you jason i really am
***she wiped her tears and took off her dress
and wore her pyjamas and got under the covers
and looked the other way.....her words really hit
home i sat here on the edge of the bed trying to
make sense of what just happened i heard her
sobbing and that broke my heart.....i stood up
and i pulled her covers off ***

Me: my heart I'm sorry for not telling you.....i just
didn't know how or where to start

***she kept quiet and i turned her and i wiped
her tears and i kissed both her eyes ***

Me: today its our wedding day my heart its our
happy day please don't let her ruin this day for
us please

Kedi: I'm hurt jase you kept this from me only
for me to find out on my traditional wedding

day and worst of all by your ex girlfriend.....today was my day jase you said this was it for us our happily ever and after and now this

Me: it is our happily ever and after my heart please forgive me for not telling you sooner about that other part of my life

Kedi: I'm hungry jase

***i looked at her with my eyes all out and she was serious ***

Me: ok we will go downstairs to fix you two something to eat but before we go i wanna know if you forgive me my heart

Kedi: I'm tired of being angry ,hurt and sad i just want to be happy jase

***i hate seeing her like this i promised her happiness and thats what I'll give to her from now on until death do us apart and as for that bitch Casey I'll deal with her my own way no one

and i mean no one make my heart cry and gets away with it...even the fact that we do some business with his brother will not stop me my wrath is what she'll feel***

Me: i love you Kedi and I'll fix this ok

***she nodded and i kissed her lips and forehead and i wiped her remaining tears and she got out of bed and she wore her gown and we went downstairs to the kitchen ***

Me: what would you like to eat

Kedi: a peanut butter and tomato sauce sandwich

i looked at her with a frown

Kedi: its what mnqobi wants

***i kissed her forehead and started fixing her sandwich.....no no no this lil ninja can't be making my wife eat thisimagine peanut butter and tomato sauce spread on a bread ***

Me: we good my heart?

***she nodded looking down and i made her look at me then i sighed ***

Me: firstly Casey and i once fucked during my early 20s and thats were it ended it didn't even qualify as a relationship and secondly i didn't invite her and thirdly she's a none factor Kedi she's just a bitter bitch.....all this women are jealous of you cause you own my heart and that you changed me from being a fuckboy to a man,husband and a father to be and as for the mafia issue we will discuss it tomorrow you'll ask your questions and I'll answer them ok

Kedi: ok but you're not off the hook just yet I'm still hurt and mad at you

Me: don't worry I'll take care of that later in the bedroom

Kedi: you're not getting any until further notice

Me: uyahlanya (you are mad) that pussy is mine and mine alone and i can have it anytime and anywhere.... I'm even prepared to kill for it

she smiled while shaking her head and that beautiful smile confirmed that we will be ok....fuck my heart has grown up the fact that she's not throwing tantrums and giving me the silent treatment shows that im one lucky son of a gun, now i need to show that bitch Casey what i do to those who make my heart cry

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 18:14] Nor: INSERT.....75

.

.

.

NARRATED

after jase made Kedi her sandwich he said they should go sit outside with everyone

Kedi: I'm wearing pyjamas and a gown jase

Jase: so...look this is your home now my heart no one can say shit to you and plus its dark outside and people have left by now I'm sure its only family and friends now

Kedi: ok

***jase was holding her cup of rooibos tea while she held the plate with her sandwich and they went outside and the guys gave jase a look it was like they spoke with only their eyes and after that talking with their eyes scene they sighed in relief and started to relax....jase and Kedi sat down and Kedi started to eat then jase's phone rang and he answered then he ended the call ***

Jase: my heart I'll be back ok pops is calling me

Kedi: ok

***he kissed her lips and went inside as for ntombi she was now drunk and snakes stopped her from drinking some more and made her a strong cup of coffee ***

Ntombi: haw pyjamas now

Kedi: after eating my delicious sandwich I'm off to bed

ntombi could see kedi wasn't bubbly like before

Ntombi: what's wrong kedi

Kedi: its nothing

Ntombi: we lie to each other now

***kedi kept quiet ***

Ntombi: kedi what's wrong

Kedi: do you know Casey

Ntombi: yeah you mean that bitch over there right.....what did she do

Kedi: she insulted me earlier on in the kitchen saying I'm not jase' s type and that he shouldn't have married me

Noma: whooo what

Ntombi: she did what

she didn't tell them about the mafia part

Kedi: yeah but jase and Jay handled it

*** Ntombi stood up***

Kedi: where are you going

Ntombi: I'll be back

Kedi: Ntombi don't please

***she ignored kedi and walked to where Casey was sitting with some girls and some guys and she grabbed her by her weave and she pulled her and she fell on the floor on her back and ntombi got on top of her and started bitch slapping her ***

Kedi : Ntombi stop

*** snakes and the guys rushed to her and pulled her from Casey with her kicking and screaming....the alcohol in her system also played a part to her losing it like this ***

Snakes: are you fucken mad ntombi what the hell is wrong with you

Ntombi: is this your loyalty snakes...letting this bitch stay here and enjoy herself after she insulted kedi how the hell do you all think shes feeling right now looking at this thing

Jay: ntombi stop this since when are you acting like a church rat huh did we say we not handling things

Ntombi: she's still here and laughing with her friends so you ain't handling shit nx

***she went to kedi and helped her up ***

Ntombi: lets go inside you don't have to look at her any longer this three including the one that went inside can stay here and intertain her

since she's that important to them...noma you staying behind

noma was shocked beyond words at ntombi but she also stood up and they walked inside to the lounge leaving the guys shocked as hell at ntombi's outburst

Kedi: you know you shouldn't have done that right..did you see how angry nhlaka was

Ntombi: he'll be strong....i saw how she was looking at jase since she got here and i warned her to tread carefully but she decided to be a bitch instead now i showed her how bitches are treated here

Noma: remind me never to mess with you

Ntombi: you are muzi's bae so relax you are family

*** then snakes entered the lounge and signalled for ntombi to come and he walked away....he looked pissed off***

Kedi: he looked angry ntombi

Ntombi: don't worry i have ways to calm him down

Noma: if it works you better start sharing those ways with us

Snakes: NTOMBI!

she rolled her eyes and walked out

Noma: ooh my God ntombi is crazy did you see how she attacked that girl

Kedi: yeah she's like that you should have seen her last week when she put my step sisters in their place she's hardcore like that

Noma: i wish i had her courage

Kedi: you soon will don't worry it will rub off on you as it has on me

Kedi: so are you two back together... you and the magnificent doctor

Noma: i think so

Kedi: huh

Noma: i think its too soon i mean i just left my ex and already he's introducing me to his family

Kedi: i don't know what really happened between you two but what i know is that he'll never let you go noma so i think its high time you got comfortable cause you're here to stay sistaz....ive never seen muzi this obsessed and in love before even with Natasha he wasn't even close to this

Noma: so you've met her

Kedi: and she didn't like me and ntombi so i say good riddens to bad rubbish

Noma: but i think its too early to start dating again kedi

Kedi: y'all have wasted all those years apart noma but if you have concerns discuss them with him don't just bottle things inside remember communication is key noma...talk to

your man don't die alone in silence

she nodded and jase rushed in the lounge and rushed to kedi

Jase: are you ok....they just told me what happened

*** he said rubbing her belly and kedi nodded then muzi walked in and went to noma and sat next to her and kissed her cheek***

Jase: ntombi shouldn't have done what she did

Kedi: and why not

Muzi: fighting kedi....we don't want our women acting all ratchet

Kedi: wow..you know what atleast ntombi's loyalty to me is not questionable y'all let that bitch stay and enjoy in this yard after she insulted me on my traditional wedding day now ntombi is acting ratchet cause she did what y'all failed to do mxm

Jase: what's that supposed to mean kedi

he asked with a straight face

Kedi: exactly that...good night noma

Noma: ummm good night

***then kedi stood up and walked upstairs to the bedroom and she took a shower after she was done she went back to the bedroom and found jase laying in bed looking up in the ceiling...she lotioned and got dressed in her pyjamas ***

Kedi: jase move i want to sleep

Jase: you think I'm not loyal to you

Kedi: jase can we not do this now

Jase: why not

Kedi: jase please

Jase: you questioning my loyalty now kedi

Kedi: jase please i was just angry ok i didn't mean what i said i also have a right to be angry after everything that happened today

Jase: ANGRY AT WHAT EXACTLY HUH YOU WANTED ME TO BEAT HER UP OR THROW HER OUT LIKE RUBBISH HUH I FUCKEN AVOIDED CAUSING A SCENE,I WAS GONNA HANDLE THE WHOLE SHIT MY OWN WAY AND NOW MY LOYALTY IS QUESTIONED

kedi: jase don't sh.....

he interrupted her

Jase: SHUT UP I'M STILL TALKING

***kedi got frightened and she kept quiet looking down ***

Jase: RESPECT KEDI...JUST BECAUSE I'M SOFT AND LINIENT TOWARDS YOU DOESN'T MEAN I'LL FUCKEN TAKE IT WHEN YOU DISRESPECT ME AND QUESTION MY LOYALTY JY VERSTAAN I'LL FORGET THAT YOU PREGNANT AND IL FUCK YOU UP DON'T TEST ME WOMAN

***he said that pointing at her he was really pissed at kedi for questioning his loyalty

especially in front of his brother and his woman.....kedi stood there scared jase's face was now red with his eyes bloodshot red ***

Jase: i now see that i spoil you too much and now you taking advantage now listen and listen good, question my loyalty again and you won't like what i do test me and just try it again and you'll see

then he walked out of the bedroom and slammed the door leaving kedi in total distraught and shakenhe kept on thinking about all hes done for kedi and now shes questioning his loyalty because of this small thing....one thing about jase and his brothers is that loyalty means everything to them and the fact that his heart questioned that made him angry... whether she meant it or not the fact is she said it....he went to where the guys were and they started chatting away and drinking with jase now feeling like shit for talking to kedi like that

Jay: you good

Jase: yeah now lets get drunk please

Snakes: now you talking my language

Muzi: i hope you didn't punish ntombi too much

Snakes: lets just say she won't be able to walk tomorrow

Jay: poor ntombi

Snakes: i won't have a straatmate as a wife bafo even if it means fucking her back to her right senses I'll do it

Jase: what about you muzi how are things between you and noma

Muzi: eish she's not giving me her all bafo

Jay: what do you mean

Muzi: she's not all in i can feel it....im afraid one day I'll wake up and she'll be gone that's why i need to get her pregnant

Them: WHOOO WHAT?

muzi: she doesn't trust me and it kills me bafo i know im to be blamed for that but i love her and since I'm never ever letting her go I've rather knock her up

Snakes: why do i have a feeling you've already started

Muzi: i switched her birth control pills with some vitamins pills

Jase: what

Muzi: I'm desperate bafo ok i know its wrong but I'll cross that bridge when i get to it for now I'll do anything to keep her with me until death do us apart

Snakes: i guess a man is gotta do what a man is gotta do

Them: yep

Jase: I'll drink to that

***he raised his glass and they all followed and raised their glasses and they continued to

drink***

****KEDI'S POV ****

***i woke up with a heavy head from all the crying i did last night.....jase didn't sleep in our bedroom last night but i don't blame him i questioned his loyalty last night and i didn't even mean to and now my marriage have started on a bad note.....our relationship was build on lies and secrets and now this ai i don't know anymore... anyway i got out of bed and i took a quick shower and i wore a long summer dress and i covered my head with a scarf and i put a shawl around my shoulders and i wore my glasses and i put on some lip gloss on my lips and went downstairs yho and the house was clean i went to the kitchen and found one of the house maid busy with breakfast she was older than me.....old enough to be my mother

Me: morning ma

Maid: morning sisi

Me: i see the house is clean i should have woken up earlier

Maid: you looked tired yesterday and plus your feet were swollen you needed your rest

Me: even now my back hurts and even this ninja is kicking me every chance he gets

Maid: that means you're close to giving birth

Me: i doubt i am cause im starting my seventh month next week

Maid: that's strange cause even your belly is showing that you not far to the finish line

Me: well i guess my pregnancy is different

Maid : as long as the doctor said the little khumalo is ok then you can relax

Me: yeah i guess

i continued to help her make breakfast for everyone

Voice: ma can you please excuse us

i knew it was jase and the maid walked out and i felt hands around my waist and he brushed my belly

Jase: i love you my heart

i just kept quiet cause i thought he was angry at me

Jase: i love both of you too much

i sighed

Me: i need to finish up here jase

Jase: sis khethiwe

***the maid walked back in ***

Jase: please finish up here

Maid: ok bhuti

***then he pulled me out of the kitchen to the

patio and we sat down ***

Jase: how's my son

me: hes ok even though he was restless the whole night

Jase: mmmmh have you eaten

i shook my head no and he just kept on looking at me as if he's reading me and i looked down all along

Jase: did you mean what you said

i shook my head no

Me: I'm sorry jase please you not sleeping next to me last night is punishment enough....i didn't mean what i said

he kept quiet and i wiped my tears

Me: do you still love me

Jase: of course i love you kedi you are my life and the reason i breath

Me: then why did you walk out on me

Jase: cause you hurt me kedi when you questioned my loyalty

Me: jase you know me you know i didn't mean that

Jase: if you ever say what you said last night to me again we will have problems kedi ok

i nodded

Me: and if you walk out on me again we will have problems

he raised his eyebrows and a smile formed on his face

Me: and under no circumstances should you sleep outside our bedroom

Jase: i apologize about that i slept in jay's room i was too drunk and i didn't want to wake you up

Me: you dont look like someone who has a hangover

Jase: there's nothing some painkillers won't fix

***he got closer and he kissed my lips and forehead and he sighed ***

Jase: i felt like shit after our argument my heart

Me: and i cried like a baby

***he kissed my lips again ***

Jase: no more fighting ok

Me: ok...i love you khumalo

Jase: and i love you too much makhumalo... .
look we will talk about the mafia issue later now
i need to bury myself inside of you and then
feed the two of youcome

***he pulled me up and we went inside....but i
must say jase put me in my place last night
even now im scared to piss him off again***

☆☆☆ WE HAVE TEN INSERTS OR LESS LEFT
AND IL IMMEDIATELY START WITH
"NOMHLEKHABO MY CHOZEN ONE" ☆☆☆

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 18:14] Nor: INSERT.....76

.

.

.

***NARRATED ***

after four steamy rounds jase and kedi lay in bed trying to catch their breath

Kedi: that was epic but my pussy is burning up
jase i think its also swollen

Jase: i live to impress you my heart and that

punani has to burn a bit as a sign that your man gave it to you hard and good

Kedi: cocky aren't we

jase chuckled and kissed kedi then he looked into her eyes

Jase: I'm sorry for stressing you yesterday especially last night

Kedi: it's ok but khumalo i think something strange is happening in my belly

Jase: what do you mean

Kedi: mnqobi was kicking and moving frequently last night not like he normally doeseven mamkethiwe said i look like im about to give birth and its not possible cause i about to start with my seventh month

Jase: i can call muzi to come check you up

Kedi: you don't look bothered

Jase: i am kedi i just don't want to start

panicking...are you in any pain

*** she shook her head no and jase kissed her forehead***

Jase: ok

Kedi: about the mafia issue

jase took a deep breath

Jase: ask away

Kedi: do you do human trafficking

Jase: me and my brothers don't but there are people who do it we know

Kedi: how do you know them

Jase: well they do their business on our territory so they pay some sort of a fine every month to us

Kedi: so you profit on little girls being abducted

***she said that getting out of bed and so did jase ***

Jase: its not like that

Kedi: you have a little sister and female cousins but you profit at other people's children being abducted and sold for prostitution

Jase: you said you won't judge me kedi

Kedi: I'm not judging you jase I'm simply stating the fact I'm about to become a mother and you a father and there's no way in hell I'll share a bed with an accomplice to human trafficking for the rest of my life

Jase: what's that supposed to mean

kedi kept quiet trying calm herself down

Jase: i asked you a question

Kedi: i will not have an accomplice to human trafficking as a husband jase i will not tolerate that...im a woman jase and about to be a mother i will not be a coward and support nonsense I'm sorry i can't

***jase couldn't believe what he's hearing...he

stood there looking at kedi who was dead
serious***

Jase: what exactly are you trying to say to me
kedibone

Kedi: you choose its either me and your son or
that human trafficking rubbish

Jase: you giving me an ultimatum kedi
kedi kept quiet

Jase: I'M FUCKEN TALKING TO YOU

kedi: don't shout at me

Jase: OR WHAT HUH WHAT...YOU SAID YOU
WON'T JUDGE ME AND NOW YOU'RE HERE
GIVING ME ULTIMATUMS USING MY SON TO
GET WHAT YOU WANT

kedi: I'm not using your son for anything

Jase: THEN WHAT THE FUCK ARE YOU DOING
***kedi kept quiet ***

Jase: TALK!

kedi continued to keep quiet

jase: i should have known you won't be able to handle this business nx i should have known

then he walked to the bathroom leaving kedi thinking about what Casey said to her about being weak,gullible and soft to handle things next to jase and tears rolled down her cheeks and she wiped them when jase came back to the bedroom and she went to the bathroom and took a quick shower,lotioned and wore the dress she wore earlier on and a shawl around her shoulders and a scarf on her head and she walked out of the bedroom leaving jase laying in bed looking up to the ceiling....she went to the kitchen and made herself a sandwich and a cup of rooibos tea and she sat on the high chairs and started to eat then jay walked in

Jay: kotiza

Kedi: hi

***jay could see something was wrong with

her***

Jay: are you ok

kedi nodded while rubbing her belly

Jay: i can see you're not ok but please don't stress yourself kedi remember its not good for the baby

then he took out bottled water in the fridge and walked out and kedi quickly wiped a tear that just fell

***meanwhile jase layed in bed thinking about the argument he just had with kedi and her ultimatumone thing he couldn't stomach was losing Kedi or his son and at the same time business was good with the Nigerians they had other businesses they handled together and plus him distancing himself from a good business because of a woman would make him seem weak and controlled and he can't have that and it might also jeopardize his other business deals he has with them ...he was

caught between a rock and a hard place.....he made the bed and went downstairs to the kitchen and he found kedi staring into space and he made himself a sandwich and he took his plate and walked out to sit in the lounge***

JASE'S POV

***its been two weeks since our traditional wedding and i must say its been hell for me kedi is still mad at me because of my decision....i decided to stand my ground and not distance myself from the Nigerians.. jay said i should just lie to her for peace to rein but eish i couldn't,we even went to the magistrate court last week Wednesday to sign,but i must say my heart has been distant even when we make love i can tell she doesn't give her all and its been stressing the fuck out of me cause i can't function well without my heart's attention or

seeing her smile.....the study room door opened slowly and she peeped in***

Kedi: supper is ready

Me: come in

she raised her eyebrows and walked in slowly and stood not far from the door

Me: please come closer my heart

***she walked to me slowly and she stood next to the table and i stood up and walked closer to her and i brushed her belly and mnqobi kicked ***

Me: i miss you kedi

Kedi: we live together khumalo

Me: you're distant kedi.....you're drifting away from me and its stressing me out

Kedi: you chose your deals over us jase

Me: my heart that's not true

Kedi: i asked you to choose and you chose

money over us jase

***i sighed ***

Me: my heart i didn't i just didn't wanna seem weak for just walking away from a deal because my wife wants me to....in this business being weak or looking weak is not an option

Kedi: jase i can overlook the drugs and gun smuggling that i know you probably do but human trafficking i just can't

i sighed looking at her

Me: so what.... things will continue like this forever

she shrugged her shoulders and i just looked at her

Me: do you still love me

Kedi: of course jase

Me: then why can't you overlook this

Kedi: cause I'm a woman and a mother to be

Me: kedi

Kedi: maybe.....maybe we rushed into this marriage thing jase we are failing at it and we just started

***i just closed my eyes cause i couldn't believe she just said that i pulled her closer to me and i smashed my lips on her....we kissed deepening it after sometime i pulled out of the kiss and stared into her eyes ***

Me: you're hurting me kedi please don't say that

Kedi: jase you said from now on it will be happiness for us but instead its been one heartache after another its draining

Me:i know my heart and I'm sorry

Kedi: those girls that are abducted are used as sex slaves jase....they are raped and....

***she kept quiet.....shit shit shit i looked at her and i saw pain on her face ohh God what have i done ***

Me: I'm sorry my heart i feel like a jerk now for being insensitive....im sorry my queen I'll fix this ok

***i felt like shit now....two fucken weeks my heart has been reliving the rape ordeal through my involvement with the Nigerians alone while i concentrated on not being seen as weak or shit like that nx how can i be this stupid ***

Kedi: supper is ready khumalo lets go and eat

Me: i want you as the main course

Kedi: jase lets go and eat tuu

*** i picked her up and put her on top of the table and i got between her legs and started kissing heri needed this i feel like an insensitive asshole now for what i did i need to feel her and hear her scream my namei can't loose kedi it will be the end of me....how can i not see things from her own perspective eish....i swear once im done with Casey she'll wish she never even came to the wedding.... what shes

going through now after jay dealt with her will be nothing compared to what i will do to her for not keeping her mouth shut***

as i was trying to pull her shirt up she screamed holding her belly

Me: what's wrong my heart

Kedi: pain or cramps

Me: is it the baby

she nodded shit my heart started beating out of my chest i picked up my phone on top of the table and called muzi and told him what's going on while I'm rushing outside to drive the car out of the garage....he told me he'll meet me at the hospital.....after driving the car out i rushed to the study room and picked my heart up and i rushed to the car and i drove out in total speed

Kedi: slow down you gonna get us killed.....aaaaaahhhh

***she screamed holding her belly ***

Me: we almost there my heart hold on ok

***she was sweating and breathing heavily with her legs wide opened as for me i was shit scared.....no no no she cant be in labour its too soon the male children in my family are born on the 8th month and my heart just started her seventh month so something must be wrong

.....we finally arrived at the hospital and i parked the car and got out and quickly went to her side and i took her out and muzi rushed to us with a stretcher and i put her on top of it and they wheeled her away.... i sat at the waiting room waiting for muzi then i saw jay and snakes rushing to me muzi must have called them ***

Jay: how is she

Me: i don't know muzi is still busy with her

Snakes: what happened bafo

Me: i think i stressed her too much

Jay: Nigerians deal

i nodded i didn't know how to feel or what to think i was just numb....after some time muzi walked to us and we met him half way

Me: how are they

Muzi: relax they are both fine the little ninja was turning facing down

Jay: heeh

Me: bafo she was screaming in pain

Muzi: for some its a painful ordeal as if they are in labour while for others is not that bad

Snakes: so they going to be ok

Muzi: yeah but her BP is a bit high so im gonna keep her here for two days tops to monitor it....you should have seen the nurses shocked at the fact that the baby was turning this early.....they said maybe she miscalculated her months if only they knew we have a little beast in there

Jay: I'm just glad they are both fine

Me: can i see her

Muzi: sure foza lets go

i followed him to her ward relieved as hell

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 18:14] Nor: INSERT.....77

.

.

.

***KEDI'S POV ***

***i opened my eyes to find jase staring at me
he had a serious look on his face***

Me: hey what's wrong

***he kept quiet and continued to stare at
me***

Me: jase

Jase: don't ever do that to me...dont ever scare
me like that kedi

Me: you should be saying that to your son not
me

***a smile formed on his face and he stood up
from where he was sitting and he bend down
and kissed me on my lips and my forehead ***

Jase: both of you should never scare me like
that....how are you feeling now

Me: i don't feeling pain anymore so I'm ok

Jase: i never want to see you like that again my
heart

i could hear the sadness in his voice and also see it on his face

Me: I'm still gonna go through labour pains jase

he sighed and kissed me again...gosh the kiss was just amazing to a point that i moaned softly then we heard someone clear their throat and we looked towards the door and it was jay and snakes

Jay: don't forget that this is a hospital

Jase: don't forget that this is my wife

Jay: mxm

Snakes: how are you feeling makhumalo

Me: much better

Snakes: that's good to know

Jay: bafo we leaving i guess you're sleeping here tonight

Jase: yah i can't sleep without my heart safely in my arms

Snakes: just don't fuck in here remember its a hospital

Jase: tsek

Jay: kotiza I'll see you tomorrow take care of yourself and our cub ok

Me: ok

then he brushed my belly and they fist bumped with their brother and they left

Jase: scoot over

Me: huh

Jase: make space for me

Me: are you allowed to share a bed with me

Jase: if they know what's good for them they'll keep their mouth shut and not start with me

Me: yho ok

***i made space for him and he got in bed with me and i layed my head on his chest and he wrapped his arms around me tight while he

kissed the top of my head***

Jase: i love you makhumalo

Me: i love you too khumalo

Jase: will we be ok

Me: i don't know

he sighed and kissed the top of my head

Jase: i understand where you coming from

Me: but

Jase: i have other businesses with them and im gonna loose millions if i distance myself from them

Me: so you've rather have your millions and loose us

my heart was aching by now

Jase: of course not my heart

Me: then what is it

Jase: this is not about me only kedi what about

the guys huh they'll also loose millions because of me

Me: atleast i know where your priority lies

Jase: askies

i wiped my tears and closed my eyes i was really hurt by jase i don't wanna lie

Jase: i love you makhumalo please don't say that cause its not true

i kept quiet with my eyes shut

Jase: my heart

***i didn't say anything then he sighed ***

***JASE'S POV ***

***i couldn't sleep the whole night i was worried for the first time in my life i was caught between a rock and a hard place and i didn't know what to do.....i woke up early in the

morning and i drove back home to shower and to pack a bag for her i also took her phone and i drove to jay's house at least he wasn't in his apartment shagging some hoe ***

Jay: you look like shit

***he said that as soon as i sat down on the high chair in the kitchen he was almost done with preparing breakfast ***

Me: i feel like shit

Jay: what happened

Me: i don't know what to do concerning the Nigerians

Jay: let me take a lead with them and you'll tell her you distancing yourself from them

Me:so you've rather have her see you as a human trafficker and hate you

Jay: what do you mean

Me: the trafficking shit is close to home for her

hence the rape ordeal she went through

Jay: shit i forgot about that

Me: she even said maybe we rushed to get married and shit....i can't loose her bafo you know i can't

Jay: so you wanna let go of every deal we have with Chidi

Me: i don't have a choice

Jay: we gonna loose millions jase

Me: and I'm gonna loose kedi

Jay: i don't like this kray i don't fucken like it.....it took us forever to secure that gun smuggling deal with him before you even knew kedi existed and now you wanna let it go just like that

i just kept quiet looking down like i said I'm caught between a rock and a hard place

Jay: we will stop the deal of them using our

territory to traffic girls only other deals stay this is not about you only kray it also concerns me,muzi,baba,snakes and pops and our clients

Me: shes gonna leave me

Jay: that will never happen neither of us will allow that to happen....just talk to her bafo tell her we will stop the trafficking deal only but we have other businesses we have with them we can't get out of

i just kept quiet and continued to eat my breakfast thinking about kedi.....after i was done i drove to the hospital and i found her with muzi

Me: morning mense(people)

***i put the bag down ***

Muzi: foza

***we fist bumped and i kissed kedi' s forehead

Muzi: follow me outside bafo

Me: I'll be back my heart

she didn't say anything she just looked away and i sighed and followed muzi

Me: talk to me bafo

Muzi: her BP is not going down bafo

i sighed deeply

Me: she wants me to distance myself from the Nigerians hence the human trafficking shit

Muzi: we have other businesses with them bafo and they bring in millions for us

Me: i know bafo ok but what can i do... now you telling me her BP is high and we know why

Muzi: eish bafo shes your wife just talk to her

Me: shes stubborn bafo and you know that

Muzi: eish

Me: how's noma

Muzi: shes good we had the talk and she told

me her fears and all so yha I'm trying by all means to show her that I'll never hurt her or leave her or let her go

Me: eish yah neh

***his phone rang ***

Muzi: its baba let me take this I'll see you later

we fist bumped and he answered the phone and i went inside and my heart wasn't in bed....i went to the bathroom door and i knocked

Me: my heart are you ok in there

Kedi: yeah

she said with a low voice after some time she came out in her pyjamas and she put the bag down and got into bed and pressed the emergency button and the nurse came in it was nomhle (jay's nomhle) she greeted me and i replied and she connected kedi's drip and other wires on her belly and she left

Kedi: you know her

Me: yeah

Kedi: mmmmh

Me: jay is interested in her but she says shes engaged

Kedi: mmmmmh

Me: please stop that mmmh thing

***she kept quiet and looked away and i took a deep breath ***

Me: I'll distance myself from the trafficking shit but I'll continue with other deals i have with them

Kedi: i want space jase we need some time apart

ok what? Jesus i felt like someone just punched me on the gut

Me: askies

Kedi: i can't deal with this other life you have on you're destroying other people's lives and you

ok with it... well I'm not ok with it I'm sorry

Me: kedi

i took a deep breath cause i could feel my body shaking with rage

Me: since when are you this selfish and self centered....you want me to compromise but wena you fail to do so

Kedi: you chose money over us jase blood money you work with people who sell young girls to be sex slaves even though you know I'm a victim of rape from a young age....you still want to dine with those monsters jason after i pleaded with you to choose..... that means my feelings dont mean shit to you so i need space from you i can't deal with this

***i felt soo much pain and anger in me i knew i had to leave here before i do something I'll regret ***

Me: i guess Casey was right you are weak and

on top of that youre a fucken coward and for you to say you want space from me shows that you'll never rule besides me and you're not loyal
nx

i stood up and walked out leaving her crying....how can she say that to me two weeks we've been married and already she wants space nxi bumped into ntombi and noma on my way out....they tried to say something but i just kept on walking i was angry beyond words.....i drove out of the hospital and i went home i needed to punch something to calm down cause i was losing it now.....after 3 hours in the gym i went to take a cold shower and got dressed then my phone rang it was muzi

Me: bafo

Muzi: kedi is discharging herself bafo

Me: WHAT

muzi: i tried talking to her

Me: I'm on my way

i dropped the call and went downstairs and i took my car keys and drove out i got there and i rushed inside and i found her in the reception area with her bag with muzi sitting next to her

Me: what's all this kedi

she kept quiet looking away

Me: lets go back inside

Kedi: don't touch me

me: kedi

Kedi: don't even call my name....im weak and a coward right you agree with your girlfriend Casey that i am so let me be weak and a coward alone in peace

i stood here looking at her pissed as hell i mean my kedi doesnt behave like this

Muzi: kedi think about that baby in your womb

ok all of this is not good for him

Kedi: muzi leave me alone please

***her phone rang and she answered ***

Kedi: ok I'm coming

then she ended the call and stood up

Me: YOU'RE NOT GOING ANYWHERE STOP ALL THIS WHAT'S WRONG WITH YOU

Kedi: you are what's wrong with me now leave me alone

Me: you pissing me off now kedi

i said pointing at her

Muzi: guys not here please p

***i took her bag from her roughly and i grabbed her hand and pulled her outside to my car and i unlocked it and shoved it in the back and pulled her to the passenger side and ordered her to get in and i drove straight home... i don't get it she saw my beast kill someone and sge

accepted it just like that but shes against my
underworld life....ai***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 18:14] Nor: INSERT.....78

.

.

.

***JASE'S POV ***

after we arrived at home yesterday she went straight to bed and muzi came later on to check her BP and the babyi didn't sleep a wink last night i was worried and still am even now at the office i can't even concentrate on work I've been staring at this files for 20 minutes now...im worried about kedi and moreover about her leaving me the fact that she asked for some space is driving me insane,i can't imagine my life without her.... my phone rang disturbing me from my thoughts nx it was Casey's brother

Me: Marcus to what do i owe this phone call

Marcus: i just got back from a business trip and Casey told me she was attacked at your traditional wedding

Me: ohhh she did

Marcus: what's going on kray why was my sister attacked

Me: first of all i don't fucken answer to you or anyone else for that matter and secondly your

stupid sister had a fall out with my female cousin and i for one don't get involved in women squabbles so don't call me asking me stupid things i have better things to do

Marcus: shes my sister kray and you know how protective i am of her

Me: and I'm fucken protective over my cousin but that doesn't mean i should act like a bitch and get myself involved in their squabbles

i was getting pissed by this bastard now

Marcus: look i was just asking ok

Me: ASKING YAMASIMBA...YOU SHOULD BE TELLING ME WHEN YOU'RE GOING TO PAY ME BACK MY MONEY AND NOT PISSING ME OFF WITH USELESS SHIT....YOU HAVE TWO WEEKS TO PAY ME OR YOUR SISTER BEING BITCH SLAPPED BY ANOTHER WOMAN WILL BE THE LAST THING YOU WORRY ABOUT NX

Marcus: but...but you gave me three months to

pay

Me: you have all the time in the world to be asking me about useless shit than to find ways to pay me now i want my money in two weeks time or you're fucken dead along with that rotten mouth you call your sister nx

then i ended the call nx then my office phone rang it was my new gay PA.... i chose a gay PA to avoid the palesa saga and a straight male PA crushing on kedi so a gay PA is the safer option

Me: Casper

Casper: sir there's a lady here by the name of Casey to see you

serious this is witchcraft....really this bitch doesn't know her limits i swear to God shes asking for my trouble

Me: listen here Casper if you still want your job make sure that bitch leaves this building and

never set her feet here again do i make myself clear

Casper: ye...yes sir

***then i put the phone down and i started hearing commotion outside then the door opened and jay walked in laughing ***

Jay: damn your PA is busy gayhandling casey out there

Me: really bafo gayhandling

Jay: what

Me: mxm

Jay: i couldn't sleep last night i was restless and i know its because of you what's wrong

i sighed and brushed my hair roughly

Me: she wants space

Jay: the hell

Me: she even discharged herself yesterday

Jay: what

Me: I've never seen her like that jay

Jay: so you gonna give her her space

Me: over my dead body

Jay: maybe its her hormones bafo i mean they are driving her crazy

Me: I'm tired bafo i mean we just got married and already we fighting like nobody's business and shes also asking for space I'm just fucken tired

Jay: don't say that bafo

Me: maybe we did rush into marriage

Jay: jase stop it you can't be giving up just like that

Me: jay I'm not giving up ok I'm just saying I'm tired this was supposed to be our honeymoon phase not thiswe were supposed to be looking forward to our son's birth not her asking

for space

jay sighed....this whole shit that's going on between kedi and i was really getting to me and the fact that she discharged herself putting my child's life in danger made me angry i mean she has beef with me now why put my child's life in danger like that nx

Jay: look kray you and i both know why shes acting like this i think those buried memories of her being sexually assaulted have resurfaced because of the human trafficking shit remember she never went to see a therapist or something after the whole ordeal

i think jay is right cause shes acting up and its worrying the shit out of me

Me: eish

Jay: just go home and talk to her bafo the stress is not good for her and the baby

Me: she doesn't want to talk bafo she wants

space

Jay: shut it before i punch you on your face...since when do you talk like this shes your wife go home and talk to her and stop this nonsense..... remember there are sons of bitches out there who are waiting for you to fuck up and they'll scoop in and play hero to her
just thinking about kedi with another man made my blood boil

Jay: i know I'm not supporting us cutting ties with the Nigerians but that doesn't mean we should ignore what shes going through with this trafficking shit and that trauma of her being sexually assaulted is still there bafo all you need to do is talk to her

Me: i know all that bafo ok

Jay: now go home and fix things with her and don't loose your cool cause i know you when you feel cornered kray takes over

Me:mxm

Jay: just go home cause i can see your mind is not even here

***i stood up and packed my things and took my car keys and i walked out with jay following me and i found Casper busy on his desk ***

Me: Casper postpone all my meetings to next week you'll find a suitable day

Casper: ok sir

Jay: and make sure that bitch Casey never sets her feet in here

Casper: yes sir

Me: ohh and if anything important comes up you have my cell numbers or my brother's numbers

Casper: yes sir

then we walked to the elevator

***i arrived at home and i went upstairs and

found my heart in bed sleeping.....i took off my clothes and was left with my boxers and i joined her in bed holding her tight from behind and she moved a bit***

Kedi: jase

she said it with a low voice

Me: my heart

Kedi: I'm sorry

ummmmm ok i kept quiet cause i wasn't expecting that all

Kedi: i didn't mean it when i said i wanted space....i know i acted like a crazy person i even put our child's life in danger cause i acted without thinking first

Me: i didn't expect you to apologise

Kedi: I'm in the wrong so im sorry

i took a deep breath and i kissed her neck

Kedi: I'm just scared jase

Me: scared of what

Kedi: of being raped again

whooh ok..what the hell..... i sat up straight looking at her

Me: turn around and look at me

***and she did eish her eyes were red and swollen....i closed my eyes and sighed deeply seeing her like that felt like someone was stabbing my heart with a sharp object ***

Me: talk to me my heart please

***she looked away ***

Kedi: what....what if your other business deals with those trafficking people doesn't go accordingly and they abduct me and use me as a sex slave.....i can't go through that again jase I've rather die than go through that again

***i bend down and kissed both her teary eyes and her forehead ***

Me: that will never happen my heart I'll unleash my beast and it will rack havoc all over....look you're safe and also know that we are always steps ahead from our enemies kedi we always make sure we know what our enemies are planning before they even consider implementing it....i love you my heart to a point that I'll kill for you infact the guys care about you to a point that they'll also kill for you as much as I'll also put a bullet through someone's skull for ntombi and noma

she looked at me with her eyes pooped and i perked her lips

Me: what changed your mind about the space thing

Kedi: the thought of being away from you didn't sit well with me i just couldn't stomach it and i once adviced noma to talk to muzi about her fears and not push him away and die in silence so i figured i shouldn't be a hypocrite and that i

should practice what i preached

***i looked at her intensely feeling like a dickhead i mean i failed at putting myself in her shoes and i felt cornered and i let kray take over...i feel like shit for lashing out at her yesterday ***

Me: I'm sorry my heart please forgive me for all the shit i said to you....that Casey bullshit i didn't mean it my heart you are not weak or a coward and you are loyal my heart I'm sorry for being a jerk to you and for making you cry

i sighed

Me: i need to learn to put kray on a tight leash around you my heart i feel like shit for lashing out on you

Kedi: your alter ego

***i raised my eyebrows ***

Kedi: I've met him and hes rude and an ass i dont like him

i chuckled

Me: he's the mafia man, you were not supposed to meet him but eish when i feel cornered he takes over but i promise from now on I'll leave him outside the gate when i come home

***she kept quiet and took a deep breath and i layed next to her facing her ***

Me: talk to me my heart

Kedi: i think casey was right I'm weak....

i interrupted her

Me: no you not and you never will be that bitch Casey was never sexually assaulted since she was young and she was never kidnapped and see a half beast man kill someone in front of her and she was never abused and slept hungry and she was never cheated on and lost one twin in the process and still managed to forgive the perpetrator being me...should i go on? Look my heart i didn't mean what i said i

was a jerkass and insensitive I'm sorry so
please don't ok please don't

***she wiped her tears with the back of her
hand and i pulled her closer to me and held her
tight***

Me: talking about Casey she came by the office
today

***she moved uncomfortably and i tightened
the grip around her***

me: and i asked Casper to throw her out cause
if i did i would have committed murder and jay
walked in my office laughing saying Casper was
gayhandling her

***she looked up at me ***

Kedi: what did she want

Me: i dont know and i don't care i was way too
stressed and worried about you to care about
what she wanted

Kedi: make sure she keeps away from either

you or me jase or I'll forget that im pregnant and I'll confront her

***i raised an eyebrow looking at her and she was serious ***

Me: forget about her I'll ask jay to deal with her

***she kept quiet and snuggled closer to me fuck this is the best feeling ever ***

Me: do you forgive your king for being a jerk

Kedi: yeah and do you forgive your heart for behaving crazy

Me: you forgiven....i love you ok

Kedi: i love you too

Me: no more fighting my queen... my heart cant take it anymore please talk to me if something is bothering you please remember communication is another important key to a happy, healthy and successful marriage

Kedi: ok i promise to confide in you

i kissed her forehead

Me: have you two eaten recently

she shook her head no

Me: ok let me go fix you two something ok

Kedi: ok

i got off bed and i went to the closet and i took out a vest and sweatpants and i wore them and i took my phone and kissed my heart on the lips and brushed her belly and my lil ninja moved twice

Kedi: ai mnqobi is really a ninja he keeps on kicking on both sides on my belly and muzi said he turned he's looking down so it doesn't make sense

Me: as long as my lil ninja is ok my heart anything else doesn't matter

i kissed her again

Me: i'll be back ok

she nodded and i walked out of the bedroom going downstairs grinning like a chimpanzee happy that me and my heart talked and fixed things...i dialled snakes numbers and he answered on the third ring

Snakes: bafo

Me: Marcus called concerning ntombi fucking up her sister

Snakes: should i be worried

Me: no but you know we dont take chances concerning our loved ones so keep a close look on ntombi

Snakes: that bastard had better keep away from my woman or he's dead along with his family

Me: you'll take a lead on this since it concerns ntombi and tell us on what to do concerning him cause hes fucken useless to us now remember he owes us tons of money

Snakes: don't worry we will get our money from

him and I'll make sure of it and then I'll teach him a valuable lesson to never get himself involved in women squabbles especially knowing the kind of bitch his sister is

Me: ok mamba we will talk later

Snakes: sure

i ended the call and i started cooking spaghetti and mince for my heart

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 18:14] Nor: INSERT.....79

.

.

.

***KEDI'S POV ***

***its been three weeks now and i must say things between me and my jase have been good yho he spoils me rotten and the sex yeses its out of this world i mean we have it two to three times a day before we even go to bed but what can i say I'm always horny so yah....and about the human trafficking thing he promised to stop the deal with the Nigerians but they will continue with other businesses with them i don't like it but he said he'll make sure that human trafficking shit will stop in their territory(what ever that means) and that no girls or children will be abducted in their territory so its better than nothing atleast he chose me and my feelings over money so I'm grateful for that....so now I'm on my way to jase's office i miss him and I'm horny as hell.....the elevator

opens and i walk to his PA***

Casper: Mrs khumalo

Me: hi Casper is he in

Casper: yes he is but he's in a meeting with an important client

aaarg so now i must wait mxm

Me: its ok I'll wait but please let him know I'm here since he's not answering his phone

Casper: yes mam

***i sat on the couch not far from his office and i went through my facebook timeline....after some time the door opened and he walked out with a beautiful white woman who was wearing a really short high waist skirt and a shirt and some really high heelsshe wanted a hug but jase shook her hand instead i could see the disappointment in her face then she walked away and jase came to me and extended his hand and helped me up then he kissed my lips

then my forehead while brushing my belly***

Jase: hi Mrs me

Me: hi

Jase: lets go inside...ummm Casper hold all my calls and please order lunch for us from spur it must be meaty

Casper: ok sir

then he pulled me inside his office and he closed the door and i went to sit on his chair like i usually do when i come here and he sat on top of the table facing me

Jase: are you ok

***my mind was far away i was thinking about that skinny white woman that just left....that's the down part of being married to a handsome rich man you're always worried about skimpy women always throwing themselves at him and him being tempted while me the wife look and feel like a whale with this huge belly but hey we

must trust them right even though they've once cheated... i felt him shaking me shit i must have zoned out ***

Me: huh

Jase: what's wrong my heart

Me: ummm nothing

***he sighed ***

Jase: its that skinny white woman that just left right

Me: what nooo its nothing really

Jase: first of all i know you so you're lying to me

Me: will you just stop i didn't come here to argue or talk about a skinny white woman i came here cause i missed you and I'm horny

***he stared at me and then he bend down and kissed my lips ***

Jase: shes not my type

Me: ooh you have a type Mr khumalo

Jase: yes my sexy as fuck wife is my type

i just smiled shaking my head...i stood up and stood between his legs and he brushed my belly and this lil ninja started kicking multiple times mxm

Me: I'm hungry for you jase

Jase: but my heart i gave you the most intense morning glory ever

Me: mxm its fine I'm sure that handsome guy i met in the mall won't mind helping out a pregnant woman

*** im joking but yeses gosh his face changed instantly to scary and hard sometimes i forget how scary jase is when he's pissed off or angry***

Jase: you want me to commit murder neh

Me: nope I'm kidding haw

Jase: you better be kedi cause i won't take it lightly if you not

yho ok

Me: come on khumalo who would be interested in a pregnant woman with this huge belly and swollen feet and big nose

Jase: first of all you're sexy as fuck and this Ass of yours drives me totally insane and your pussy is tight and warm... shit look what you doing to me

***i looked below his belt and he was hard gosh i became wet instantly down there....i bit my lower lip while touching his hard shaft and he groaned....we started kissing deeply and he pulled my dress up and took it off and threw it on the floor and i was left with a matching lacy bra and thong ***

Jase: fuck kedi

he said that grabbing my Ass tight i could feel his whole body shaking and i knew he's gonna fuck me and not make love to me and i couldn't wait any longer

Me: have me now jase please

i helped him take off his clothes and he took off my thong and bra and we were both stack naked and he picked me up and put me on top of the table and got between my legs with his hard veins popping huge dick even today i can't get used to how huge it is....he rubbed his wet dick on my wet pussy and he entered me slowly and he groaned out loud while i moaned while biting my lower lip and he stood still

Me: shhhh Casper is outside khumalo

***he didn't say anything then he started to move fast while groaning and i held on to the end of the table as he pulled my leg up and gosh the things he did to me was just.... Jesus it was just amazing after racking havoc on my poor pussy we both came at the same time after i came multiple times....he pulled out and kissed my lips and my belly and went to the in-suit bathroom and came back with a wet towel

and cleaned me up and himself and helped me get dressed and he did too then we went to sit on the couch that is in his office with my head on his chest***

Jase: i love you my heart

Me: i love you too my king

Jase: i hope your driver is the one that drove you here

Me: of course haw

Jase: good so how are feeling

Me: I'm ok khumalo

Jase: ok and my son

Me: kicking a lot but he's also ok

Jase: ok

Me:where's our food i still have to go by the mall

Jase: to do what

***ok his tone was changing aaarg mara
jase***

Me: to buy baby things

Jase: i thought we bought everything last time

Me: no we didn't

Jase: mmmh so you meeting up with ntombi or
noma

Me: nope

Jase:mmmh

Me: what's with the mmmmmhs

***then there was a knock on the door and jase
shouted"come in" and Casper walked in and put
our food in front of us and walked out.....we ate
while having a light conversation after we were
done i threw away the dirty takeaway containers
and i cleaned the table***

Me: let me get going

***jase pulled close to him and kissed my

lips***

Jase: I'll see you at home and i better find you
naked

i giggled

Me:yes sir

Jase: you're going straight home

Me: ummm but i said I'll go past the mall
khumalo

Jase: no we will go buy whatever we forgot to
buy together on Saturday

mara jase

Me: but....

Jase: no buts please

he kissed me again

Jase: i love you my heart and remember I'll slay
dragons for you

***i sulked and kept quiet ***

Jase: i don't think i heard you

mxm

Me: i love you too khumalo and i know

Jase: good now lets go

he took my handbag and we walked out and i said goodbye to Casper and we got inside the elevator

Jase: you going straight home right

Me: its not like i have a choice

Jase: askies

Me: no.....nothing

***my phone peeped and it was a message from my ex colleague Theo (you remember him the one that was with us when mpendulo and his men started shooting at the restaurant we were in.....yes him)i bumped into him at the mall and we catched up over lunch and we've been talking on whatsapp since then and he's even

engaged and about to pay lobola for his fiancée this coming weekend and I'm happy for him. She's so young but this beast in front of me won't understand that he's not a threat but just a friend ***

Jase: who's that that's making you smile like that

I looked up and his face was hard while he's looking at me intensely

Me: it's Theo my ex-colleague he's paying lobola for his fiancée this weekend and he's nervous as hell

Jase: who the fuck is that

I took a deep breath

Me: an ex-colleague and a friend he's harmless khumalo

Jase: I'll decide on thatno other man in this fucken planet will make my wife smile like that except me kedi do you hear me

***bathong the poor guy just said maybe he should sit in on the negotiations cause he doesnt trust his uncles that's why i just smiled i didn't want to laugh infront of jase ***

Me: bathong khumalo

he took my phone and did something on it then i heard his phone beep and he gave me my phone back mxm I'm not even gonna get mad cause it will be a waste of time and energy.... i married him knowing that hes possessive towards me

Jase: i love you and i won't be home late ok

i just nodded and he kissed my forehead and the elevator opened and we walked to my car and i knocked on the driver's window it looks like he was sleeping he quickly opened his eyes and he looked at me and panicked when he saw this beast man next to me and he unlocked the doors

Me: ok I'll see you later

we hugged and he whispered to me

Jase: I'm possessive when it comes to you my heart and im not ashamed of it ... harmless or not that guy had better stay the fuck away from you if he knows what's good for him

then he pulled out of the hug and smashed his lips on mine and we kissed deeply after some time we pulled out of the kiss to catch our breath and he kissed my forehead and opened the back door for me and i got in and we drove off

JASE'S POV

***things have been great between my heart and i for the past three weeks and our sex life is just our of this world sometimes she would just pop up at the office for a quicky and trust me im not complaining infact no man will....two

days back i found out shes been talking to some guy she said its her ex colleague and "friend" i trust my heart but i dont trust any man around her so i called that bastard and warned him to stay away from my wife and you won't believe what he said to me he said he would do that only if she tells him too and he dropped the call on me nx that was his worst mistake cause i told snakes to do some research on him and he found that apparently there's no fiancée and yesterday my boys picked him up and roughed him up until he confessed that he's just in love with kedi and that he meant no harm blah blah blah nx.... well he wont be alive for long anyway now im on my way home from my 11h00 am meeting that was held closer to home so I'm just gonna check on my heart and give her two rounds and head back to work....i parked my car on the driveway, got out and went inside to find the house upside down..... i call out for kedi and masibiya walked in the lounge***

Me: what's all this.....where is my wife

Masibiya: cleaning upstairs

Me: shes supposed to be resting ma

Masibiya: i know but i walked back in the house after you left and i found her busy moving the couches in here....she even washed the Windows and all the dirty clothes in the house whenever i try to help she'll tell me to relax shes ok

Me: kedi doesn't listen i specifically told her to rest and not strain herself nx

i walked upstairs

Masibiya: son

i stopped walking and turned to look at her

Masibiya: its time.... anytime from now she'll give birth that's why shes doing all this remember im a mother to four girl so i know what I'm talking about

then she walked away and i rushed upstairs and i heard things moving in our bedroom and i got in and found my heart pushing the drawer back to where it was....she was sweating and dusty

Me: makhumalo

she turned to look towards the door and smiled widely

Kedi: my king

Me: and now

Kedi: I'm doing spring cleaning haw

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 18:14] Nor: INSERT.....80

.

.

.

***JASE'S POV ***

***it's been four days now since that episode of finding the house upside down i had to cancel my meetings that day i couldn't leave her like that i watched her clean the entire house as if she was on steroids or something the only thing i did was to move things for her and put them back while she cleaned....the following day she woke up around 11h00 am and she was walking like a penguin with her legs slightly opened i was worried about her and i still am ...since yesterday shes been complaining about her back that its hot and a bit painful i had to call muzi to come and check her thinking that maybe she strained it by pushing couches and drawers but muzi said she'll be fine and that i

should keep a close eye on her cause shes close to the finishing line, i guess masibiya was righti even cancelled my meetings to late next week and important and urgent ones jay will take care of them.....now she's resting upstairs and I'm in the lounge with the guys***

Me: mamba about Marcus

Snakes: i wiped out the little cents he had in his bank account

Muzi: I'm sure he has multiple accounts

Snakes: yeah i know I'm not in a hurry to fuck him up my IT boys are monitoring his other accounts

Jay: how much were his cents

Snakes: R600 000

Me: damn he must be going crazy

Snakes: yeah you know him he likes acting like a bitch and plus i found out he's been asking around about ntombi

Me: nx that bastard doesn't learn

Snakes: leave him to me I'll teach him a lesson

Jay: heeh I've been meaning to ask you about natasha...about how the experiments carried on her are going muzi

Me: I've also been meaning to ask you bafo

Muzi: mxm that one her body was weak the acid already ate her up she was just useless nje

Jay: eeeeh ok

Muzi: what about nomhle jay have you found out anything tangible concerning her engagement

Jay: well i asked her out for lunch as friends of course and i found out that shes actually betrothed to the guy

Me: does she love the guy

Jay: i doubt it cause when i asked her that question she quickly changed the topic

Snakes: jay why are so hung up on this girl be honest

jay sighed

Jay: i think shes the one

Muzi: whooooh like the chosen one

Jay: yeah bafo i tried to forget her or even push her to the back of my head but i fail dismally and the worse part is its not about sex

Me: damn now how are you going tackle this thing of her being betrothed to some guy

Jay: i don't know bafo

Snakes: how sure are you that she's the chosen one bafo

Jay: shes what i think about before going to sleep and when i wake up she also occupies my mind eish shes messing me up big time and she doesn't even know it

Muzi: damn

Jay: y'all know me I've never fallen in love before let alone chase after a woman before so the fact that I'm this dead serious about nomhle should show you that shes the one for me

Me: this is messed up bafo

Snakes: what is the name of the guy shes betrothed to

Jay: senzo mkwa something

Me: aaah come on bafo

Jay: wait let me think

after a few seconds he spoke

Jay: senzo mkhwebane

***snakes started typing on his laptop ***

Me: how's noma muzi

Muzi: shes good bafo but eish she found out about her ex being burned along with his house

Jay: and

Muzi: i told her the truth

Us: WHAT?

Muzi: she always thought i was a gangster since we met so i told her i burned him to death

Jay: and she was cool with that

Muzi: nah she gave me the silent treatment for a couple of hours.....since i couldn't take it anymore with her not talking to me i fucked her back to her senses....i gave her 4 intense rounds non stop that knocked her out and when she woke up she forgot that she was even mad at me and now we good

Me: fuck lucky you with my heart she'll give me the silent treatment then i'll think that i'm fucking her back to her senses but yeses it will be like i didn't do anything she'll wake up and intensify the silent treatment to a point that i'll think of attempting to commit suicide just to get her attention

they laughed their asses off

Me: I'm serious bafu its bad so i decided to be honest with her with everything from now on cause i can't function properly without her attention

Snakes: FUCK NOOOO

Us: what?

Snakes: senzo is Abdul's grandson

Me: who the fuck is Abdul

Snakes: Abdul the ghost

Jay: wait a minute Abdul the one who controls half of Port Elizabeth's territory and a bit of joburg

Snakes: yah

Muzi : shit

Me: is it that grandson of his that is a lawyer

Snakes: yah

Jay: they don't shake me I'm just worried about the conflict or the war that's gonna start between our families so get this, nomhle will be my wife and a mother to my children so whoever stands in my way had better be prepared to die along with his family and friends,cats,dogs even his rats I'll fucken leave no stone unturned for her so y'all prepare yourselves for the coming war cause no one but me will marry her

with that said he stood up and walked out of the lounge

Me: shit

Snakes: y'all know how heartless with no conscious spilo is we need to let baba know about this....about Abdul y'all know how much they hate each other

Me: the worst thing is i think that engagement shit is way deeper that we think

jay walked back in

Muzi: mamba you need to dig deeper

Jay: what baffles me is that nomhle is shit scared of her father and brother as if they are Hitler and son i remember her brother called her that day we were out for lunch she was shaking when she saw who was calling her it was as if she was about to have a panic attack

Me: shit...do you think she was abused

Jay: i don't know about physically but sexually no cause shes still pure

Me: and how do you know that

Jay: i asked her and she told me

Snakes: you just came out and asked nje just like that

Jay: i tried to kiss her on the lunch date and she stopped me and pushed me away not like "i don't want to cheat on my fiance push" but a "i'm uncomfortable cause i don't know what to do push" so i asked if shes still a virgin and she

said yes

Muzi: wow kuzonyiwa la

Me: you can say that again

Jay: its not about her being pure for me its way deeper than that

Me: we can see that bafo but we don't know about that senzo bastard you know the are men out there who prefer to marry a virgin

Snakes: you know sometimes this arranged marriage and betrothed shit happen because the girl is some business transaction between two families or because of her virginity

Jay: then I'll make sure i break her virginity with her permission of course and see if he'll still be interested

Muzi: yha neh

Jay: I'm dead serious nomhle will be my wife and I'm willing and ready to spill blood for that to happen

***i looked at jay and i knew he meant each and every word he was saying....i thought i was dangerously in love with my heart but now i see that jay's love for nomhle is worse anyway we continued to talk until they left and masibiya finished cooking and i took our food upstairs to our bedroom and found my heart watching tv while laying down on the bed.....i put the food down and i bend down and kissed her lips and forehead ***

Me: hi

i said that smiling and looking deep in to her eyes

Kedi: hi

Me: how are you feeling now

Kedi: better

Me: I'm glad now sit up and eat my heart

***she did and i perked her lips ***

Me: i love you my heart

Kedi: i love you too khumalo

then i sat next to her and we ate while holding a light conversation

Kedi: you know i still can't believe ma said she dreamed of me giving birth to twins

Me: i know her dreams always mean something and most of the time they come true but i dont think this time they'll come true maybe her dream mean something else

Kedi: maybe ntombi or noma or both of them are pregnant maybe that's why she dreamt of twins

Me: yeah maybe cause i mean muzi would have told us

Kedi: well I've been watching a program on tv called i didn't know i was pregnant on dstv TLC channel and i must say miracles do happen khumalo

Me: so you believe ma's dream

Kedi: no i mean muzi would have told us if I'm carrying twins right

***i kissed her cheek ***

Me: yeah

we finished eating and i took the plates to the kitchen and i rinsed them and i locked the doors since masibiya has already left for her bedroom and i went upstairs and we went to have an innocent shower and dried ourselves and i lotioned kedi and myself then we wore our pyjamas and we cuddled in bed

Me: i want four more after mnqobi

Kedi: no ways khumaloone more and im done

Me: mmmmmh we shall see Mrs me.....we shall see

Kedi: whats that supposed to mean khumalo

Me: exactly that my heart

Kedi: mmmmm

Me: you know i cant wait to hold him in my arms

Kedi: me too.... after everything we've been through holding him in my arms will make all of that seem like nothing like it was all a stupid prank

i kissed her neck

Kedi: I'm nervous though

Me: I'll be there with you every step of the way my heart

Kedi: i love you khumalo

Me: i love you too makhumalo

after some time we both fell asleep i woke up when i felt her get out of bed

Me: where are you going

Kedi: to pee

Me: hurry back

she walked a bit then she stopped and held her back

Me: my heart what's wrong

Kedi: i....i think my water just broke.....he
he's coming jase

i froze looking at her and i quickly snapped out of it when she screamed out loud....i quickly got out of the bed and rushed to her

Me: tell me what to do

Kedi: change my pyjamas and take the the baby's bag and take me to the hosp....

***she didn't finish that she screamed again and did a breath in and out God i became shit scared instantlyi changed her pyjamas and i also quickly changed and i took the already packed bag and i picked her up bridal style and i rushed downstairs and i went to the garage through the kitchen door and i unlocked the car and i put her in with her screaming in pain and

also got in and i opened the garage door and the electric gate and drove out in speed calling muzi***

Muzi: bafo

Me: the baby is coming

***i said that breathing heavily with kedi screaming next to me ***

Muzi: im closer to the hospital you'll find me there

***then i ended the call ***

Me: we almost there my heart just breath in and out

Kedi: aaaaaaaahhhhhhhh

*** she screamed again and i just did a breath in and out and i increased the speed damn i was even sweating and her screams cut right through my heart.....DAMN IM ABOUT TO BE A FATHER ***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 18:14] Nor: INSERT.....81

.

.

.

***NARRATED ***

***they finally arrived at the hospital and she was quickly put on a wheelchair and rushed inside....muzi and jase walked in the single ward kedi was in with a female indian doctor and they found kedi screaming on top of the bed

she was naked only covered with a hospital sheet, the hospital gown she was supposed to wear was on the floor ***

Kedi: muzi please take him out please

***she pleaded with muzi as for jase his heart was aching seeing kedi in that pain he wished he could take away that pain kedi was feeling...his face was pink with worry ***

Muzi: look kedi this is doctor Sharma shes a gynecologist and she'll be the one that will help you through the whole birth process I'll just monitor the whole process

Kedi: I DON'T CARE WHO SHE IS SHE SHOULD JUST TAKE HIM OUT NOW I CAN'T ANYMORE

Sharma: ok open your legs and lets see how far along he is

Muzi: bafo lets talk outside

Kedi: YOU TWO HAVE BETTER NOT LEAVE ME ALONE I SWEAR TO GOD I'LL FUCKEN KILL THE

TWO IF YOU DO

jase's eyes popped out looking at kedi as for muzi he was unfazed cause he knew all this and more happen when women are in labour

Jase: my heart I'll be just outside the door talking to muzi about your condition

Kedi:CONDITION JASON... YOU'RE DEAD YOU HEAR ME YOU'RE FUCKEN DEAD I'M SURE EVEN MA WOULD THANK ME FOR SHOOTING YOU'RE ASS

yho jase was shocked to hear kedi say that to him and muzi quickly pulled him out of the room with kedi shouting for muzi to comeback and take out mnqobi*

Jase: fuck

he said scratching his head

Muzi:relax she doesn't mean anything she said and about to say

Jase: do you trust this doctor sharma

Muzi: yeah shes the only doctor i trust in this hospital but don't worry I'll still keep an eye on her

Jase: fuck shes in pain bafo

Muzi: she'll be ok all that pain will be worth it once she holds the lil ninja in her arms

Jase: i just don't get it why you asked for her help

Muzi: there's no where in hell I'm standing next to my brother's wife's exposed vagina in the name of helping her give birth....doctor or not bafo its not happening unless i don't have a choice but now i do

jase chuckled shaking his head

Jase: you're fucken sick dude

Muzi: I'm just stating the truth haw

then the door opened and doctor sharma walked out

Sharma: its not yet time I'll come after an hour

jase huffed at the thought of his heart being in that excruciating pain for another hour

Muzi:ok thanks doctor

Sharma: sir good luck shes spitting fire in there

***she said that smiling at jase and she walked away then muzi's phone rang ***

Muzi: its noma bafo let me take this

he answered walking away then jase walked in the ward and found kedi laying on the cold floor naked on her back with her leg wide opened he went to her and knelt next to her

Jase: tell me what to do my heart

Kedi: take him out jase i can't anymore

Jase: my heart you know i can't do that

Kedi: THEN WHY ARE YOU FUCKEN HERE...
JUST TAKE HIM OUT MAN HE'S YOU'RE
FUCKEN SON

jase took a deep breath and kedi screamed again shutting her eyes tight then she did a breath in and out... jase closed his eyes and opened them again

Kedi: my king please

jase sighed and helped kedi up and she lay on the bed and jase covered her with the sheet.....time went by and its been 8 hours since kedi was in labour and the lil ninja was still taking his time to come out as for jase his face now was pink and his eyes blood shot red he felt helpless he even asked muzi to perform a c-section but he couldn't since the lil ninja was on his way.... now hes sitting on the couch that is in the room with his head bowed and his hands on his head and his elbows on his thighsnow kedi was standing next to the wall busy hitting it with her open hand, whenever the contractions would hit her she would just clench her teeth until they stop and she would do a breath in and out

Kedi: where is your gun khumalo

jase raised his head and looked at her

Kedi: I KNOW YOU OWN A GUN YOU'RE PART OF THE FRICKEN MAFIA SO WHERE'S YOUR GUN

jase: kedi

Kedi: go and take it and bring it to me... i need to shoot you for doing this to me,i hate you for getting me pregnant jason i fucken hate you infact i want a divorce

***jase sighed deeply looking at his wife then she started crying ***

Kedi: my king i can't take it anymore please talk to him please he need to come out

jase sighed and stood up and went to her and helped her back to bed and rubbed his hands together and brushed her belly gently

Jase: mntungwa,

Mbulaz'omnyama,
Wena wakaBheje'eseNgome,
Wena owadl'umuntu umyenga
ngendaba,

Wena owadl'izinf'ezimbili ikhambi la
phuma lilinye,

Lobengula kaMzilikazi,

Mzilikazi kaMashobane.....

*** he continued with the clan name praises...
an hour later kedi was ready to push mnqobi
out***

Sharma: now push

***she said slapping her thigh and jase gave her
a death stare and kedi held on to jase' s hand
squeezing it tight and she held her breath and
pushed after a while she stopped....she was
breathing heavily ***

Sharma: good now give me another strong push

*** she squeezed jase' s hand again and held her breath again clenching her teeth and she pushed hard....she did that a couple of times until doctor sharma said she can see the head and requested kedi give her two long hard pushes.... by this time kedi was exhausted ***

Kedi: i can't anymore

Jase: you can my heart remember focus on the goal that is mnqobi....just keep on holding on to my hand and give your two hardest pushes my heart

***kedi nodded and doctor sharma counted to three and slapped kedi's thigh again and she gave her hardest push, when she did the second time she felt some relief then she heard a deep loud cry then the doctor said its a boythe doctor told jase to cut the umbilical cord and he did then they saw kedi pushing again.... she suddenly had the urge to push again and she did,the doctor quickly gave the baby to

muzi and encouraged kedi to push hard....as for jase his eyes popped out with shock that there might be another baby on the way..... now back to kedi, even though she had no more strength to push hard she used the little that she had left and gave the longest push ever after some time she felt some relief then the doctor said it's a girl but there was no cry.....kedi was beyond exhausted so she passed out immediately as for jase he stood there frozen feeling like his heart was about to stop beating when he didn't hear a cry...the doctor held the baby upside down with its leg and spanked her butt three times before a low cry occurred and muzi cut the umbilical cord quickly and took her from the doctor and got busy with her while the nurse cleaned mnqobi up***

*** jase was now in the male bathroom sobbing..... his heart was heavy seeing kedi like that and the fact that his little princess's life might be in danger for being born premature,

she was tiny and pink in colour and the worst part is no one knew she was also in there.....he stayed in there for a couple of minutes praying silently for God to save his innocent children and wife....he wiped his tears and left the bathroom going to the waiting room and jay,snakes,noma and ntombi were there they quickly stood up when they saw jase approaching***

Jay: what's wrong jase

he didn't say anything he just sat down and he looked down.... everyone could see he's been crying his face was pink where else his eyes and nose were red

Snakes: bafo how is kedi and the baby

Jase: she....she gave birth to twins a boy and a girl

Them: WHAT?

Jay: how...i mean she miscarried one remember

Jase: i guess she was carrying triplets

Snakes: whoooh

Ntombi: is kedi and the babies ok

jase sniffed and everyone panicked thinking the worst

Jase: kedi is just exhausted the nurse said she'll be fine as for my baby girl she didn't cry when she was born until seconds later when they spanked her but still she gave a low cry

Jay: shit no

Noma: the fact that she cried even though it was low gives hope that she'll be ok

Ntombi: shes a fighter just like her mom and dad

jase just kept quiet with his head bowed many thoughts running in his mind then jay squeezed his shoulder and stood up to make some calls so did snakes

it was now around 11 in the morning and muzi still hadn't come to update them jay stood up when he saw him approaching he looked exhausted too...he reached them and went to sit next to jase who looked like hell and he squeezed his shoulder

Muzi: the little princess will be ok bafo

everyone sighed with relief and jase's tears fell and he wiped them with the back of his hand

Muzi: yes shes premature and tiny but shes a fighter

Jay: what about the lil ninja

Muzi: hes healthy as a horse

Noma:but the boy should also be premature and tiny why is he healthy as a horse

***muzi's eyes ran from snakes to jay and he cleared his throat ***

Muzi: she....she didn't get enough nutrients

when she was still in the womb cause she was hiding so i didnt monitor her growth

Noma: ooh ok

***muzi couldn't tell her the real truth ***

Muzi: so i ran some tests on the little princess and i'll get the results later on today and i'll take it from there but no need to worry she'll be fine

Jase: thanks bafo....can i see my wife

Muzi: sure but shes still out of it

he stood up and kissed noma and walked to kedi's ward with jase and he stood by the door

Muzi: lets me go and check on the little princess

Jase: nqobile

Muzi: huh

Jase: her name is nqobile and my boy is mnqobi

Muzi: nice names mnqobi and nqobile khumalo

Jase: yeah they are please take care of them
bafo

Muzi: you know i will even if push comes to
shove I'll go all mafia on them bab'muzi
won't let anything happen to his nephew and
niece

***jase chuckled and they bro hugged and muzi
walked away and jase entered the single ward
kedi was in and he walked to her bed and bend
down and kissed her forehead with tears
running down his cheekshe couldn't believe
that kedi was that brave and strong, the love
and obsession and possessiveness he has
towards her has now grown stronger than
before.... he pulled a chair and sat down next to
the bed and held his heart's hand and watched
her sleep***

***kedi opened her eyes and closed them again
her eyelids were heavy but she managed to

open them again and she scanned the room
and she found jase looking at her***

Jase: Mrs me

Kedi: hey

***she said with a low voice that was
scratchy...jase stood up and bend down and
kissed her slightly dry lips and forehead ***

Jase: thank you my heart for making me a
father

Kedi: how are they

Jase: well our little beast is ok and our princess
is ok too shes just tiny and pink but muzi said
she'll be ok

Kedi: jase i didn't hear her cry please don't lie to
me even i can tell you've been crying

***she said that with a breaking voice ***

Jase: well she cried after she was spanked 3
times even though i didn't like the spanking

part but it made her cry and I've been crying because....

***he stopped talking cause he could feel a lump forming in his throat ***

Jase: because i was scared and i felt helpless when she didn't cry and you passed out

tears started rolling down his cheeks as he became emotional and kedi's tears also came out

Jase: you made me a man amongst men kedi....you were brave and strong my heart and I love you soo much makhumalo...you were made just for me kedi and even though me and the man upstairs have a shaky relationship I'll forever be grateful to him for creating you just for me...ngiyak'thanda makhumalo wam omuhle and ngiyabonga for those precious gifts you just gave me(i love you my beautiful makhumalo and thank you for those precious gifts you just gave me)

***he wiped his tears with the back of his hand
and wiped kedi's too and smashed his lips on
hers***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 18:14] Nor: INSERT.....82

.

.

.

***KEDI'S POV ***

Me: shes soo tiny khumalo

Jase: yeah our tiny little princess

Me: yeah our tiny little nqobile....and they had to inherit your late grandfather's blue eyes

***yep they have blue eyes apparently jase's grandfather from her mothers side had blue eyes mxm these two munchkins don't even look like me they look like their dad and jay ***

Jase: well the genes of my mother's side of the family are strong i mean look at our senior princess

Me: yeah you right

***we kept quiet and continued to look at nqobile ***

Jase: thank you my heart for these two precious and rare jewels

***he's been thanking me for the past four days now ***

Me: thank you for seeing me worthy to carry them

Jase: i love you my heart

Me:i love you too my king

***he kissed the top of my head as for mnqobi he's sleeping peacefully and safely in his arms...God i love this man thank you for seeing me worthy enough to take care of his heart and his seeds...i thought to myself.....its been four days since i gave birth and i must say even today my body is still exhausted but it was all worth it, ooh and jase has been sleeping here they even brought him a bed and my two munchkins stay with me in my single ward even though nqobile is still in an incubator with wires attached to her shes a fighter this one...muzi said shes doing well so yah i guess God is in control, ooh and there's also two bodyguards at the door which i think is a bit extreme but at the same time being in the mafia is dangerous so safety first....ma came to see the little munchkins the following day after i gave birth and yho she was happy shem she even cried....she said she will comeback every Friday

with princess to help me with the twins while masibiya will be there for me during the week until i settled in well in this motherhood thing so yah im grateful to have her and masibiya in my life....even baba and bab'dlamini came to see the twins and bab'dlamini said nqobile will be fine and as for pops he said he's held up overseas but as soon as hes done with everything he will take the next available flight

Jase: mmmmmh Raphael mnqobi khumalo and Raquel nqobile khumalo

Me: nice names neh

Jase: yeah they are fit for a princess and prince

Me: yeah

***i smiled ***

Jase:i can't wait to hold her in my arms

Me: i have a feeling it's gonna be sooner than we think

Jase: and how do you know that Mrs me

Me: its a mother's instinct khumalo

Jase: mmmmh

he smiled showing his dimples then he bend down a bit and i met him half way and we kissed then muzi walked in smiling from ear to ear

Jase: and now

Muzi: what

Me: that smile

Muzi: i have great news

Me: is it what i think it is

Jase: and what is that

Muzi:the tests came back and everything seems fine so we gonna take off all this wires from our princess

Me: for real muzi

he nodded and i just hugged him then we broke off the hug then he went to nqobile and he took off the wires and he took her out of the incubator and jase gave me mnqobi and he took her from muzi and he looked at her while smiling then he kissed her tiny hands and forehead like he did with mnqobi i could see he was getting emotional.....i gave muzi mnqobi and jase gave me nqobile and as tiny as she was, holding her in my arms was just magical just like it was with my little beast i couldn't believe i was a mother now to twins nogal..... that im now responsible for two other lives besides my own....i kissed her forehead and her tiny fists then muzi's phone rang and he gave jase mnqobi and he walked out answering it.... i went back to the bed and i sat on it so did jase with mnqobi in his arms

Jase: im glad i bumped into you the first time we met and im also glad that you called me an arrogant jerk and my grandfather the founder of

boko haram

i just giggled thinking about that fruitful day then the door opened and jay walked in but he stopped half way with his eyes pooped out

Jay: she...shes out of that thing

i nodded and i could see he was getting emotional then he walked to jay and kissed mnqobi's forehead and he smiled looking at him then he turned to me

Jay: may i

Me: of course...go to you other daddy my little munchkin

i said that to nqobile and i gave her to jay and he looked at her smiling then he kissed her forehead and continued to smile looking at her and he went closer to jase

Jay: they look like me

Jase: no they look like haw

Voice: im damn sure they look like me

***we turned to look at the door and it was my father in law....he was held up overseas and he couldn't fly back home when he heard he's a grandfather but now he's here....he walked to me and he kissed my forehead ***

Pops: thandeka or should i say mommy

***i giggled while blushing ***

Me: dad

Pops: how are you

Me: im ok now that shes out of that thing

Pops: i told you she'll be ok

Me: yeah you did

*** then he went to the twins and i saw this as an opportunity to take a quick shower so i took my toiletry bag and i went to the bathroom leaving the khumalo men busy bonding with the new addition to the family***

JASE'S POV

***its been a month since my twins were born and they were discharged three weeks ago and i must say im enjoying my fatherhood yes they cry a lot especially at night but that moment i hold either one of them when they are having their crying episodes and they stop crying is just priceless....and kedi is also doing well, having ma on the weekend and masibiya during the week as help has really helped her adjust nicely to motherhood and shes doing pretty good unless they start crying like they are seeing a witch or boogeyman in the room then she just becomes emotional and I'll find her crying with them...well a lot has happened in those three weeks we found out her aunt the one that was in hospital died(ooh well baba happened so yah) and that her uncle Thomas

was shot dead by her uncle thabo for that "stolen " lobola money and he was arrested....and kedi's step sister's moved out of that house saying its haunted apparently they see a shadow in the house and in the yard and they hear things moving around in the house at night so its just chaos back there anyway im sitting here in the lounge with the guys and my heart and the twins are napping upstairs***

Jay: bafo when are the twins waking up its been 15 minutes and they are not awake

Snakes: yeah come on bafo go and wake them up

Me: you two are out of your fucken minds...do you know how long it took for them to sleep and you want me to wake them

Muzi: you two want to die young i see you're lucky kedi is not here

Jay:mxm is there food in this house

Me: yeah my heart cooked

***jay attempted to stand up until snakes said he should sit cause he has something to tell him ***

Snakes: i did some more digging on nomhle and her engagement and i found something disturbing

Jay: what

Snakes: i hacked into nomhle's phone and i went through her call log and there's been one phone number that pops out more often and you won't believe who it belongs to

Me: who

Snakes:Abdul's son

Muzi: Abdul's son as in Gerald

Snakes: yeah Gerald as in senzo's father

Me: ok what's wrong with her soon to be father in law calling her

Snakes: did pops or baba call kedi almost everyday including at night when she was still your fiance ...ummmmm no

Jay: bafo what's going on and what are you trying to say

Snakes: the apartment she stays in is also owned by Gerald and he used to deposit money in her account until he stopped months back....gerald is the one that's doing all this instead of senzobafo that man calls nomhle more that any of her family members including her father and elder brother does

Me: i don't like where this is going

Snakes: that senzo bastard is engaged to be married to some white girl in cape town and the white chick is pregnant

Me: wooh what?

Muzi: but i thought Gerald had only two sons and two daughters and the other son we know

is married and lives in the UK

Me: now which senzo is nomhle engaged to....unless no no no

Jay: they are using senzo as a front to nomhle where else she might be engaged to.....

i interrupted him

Me: don't even say it cause that's just fucken sick i mean Gerald is married his wife is still alive and hes old enough to be her father

Snakes: remember i once told y'all that this arranged marriage and betrothed bullshit is sometimes used as a business transaction or because of the girl's virginity

Muzi: this is messed up big time what kind of a father would sell his daughter to an old man for money

***this means trouble... big trouble cause im sitting here looking at jay and what im seeing on his face is something i can't even explain in

words ***

Me: spilo go to the in-house gym now and punch off all that rage visible on your face before you do something crazy and give me your gun

***he stood up and put his gun on top of the table and walked away toward the passage that led to gym without uttering a word ***

Muzi: I've known jay since i was 8 and I've never seen his face like that

Me: shit

Snakes: and i have a feeling this is just a tip of the iceberg there's still more buried deep inside

Me: i also have the same feeling bafo

then i heard my prince and princess crying upstairs

Snakes: its about damn time bring them downstairs bafo

Me: y'all are spoiling those two.... when y'all go home to your women me and my wife suffer cause they cry like they are seeing a boogeyman when we put them down

Muzi: stop complaining and bring our little ninja and princess tuu

Me: mxm

i went upstairs and i found my heart breastfeeding them and i just took out my phone and took pictures adding to the 100+ i already have of them in my phone

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 18:14] Nor: INSERT.....83

.

.

.

***KEDI'S POV ***

*** its been 10 months since my babies were born and i must say God is great shem...my munchkins are growing especially nqobile now you can tell that her and mnqobi are twins shes no longer that tiny little princess but a naughty princess and her and mnqobi are spoiled by everyone in the family even senior princess aka mbalenhle spoils them... shes here every second weekend and during school holidays and i cant believe in two months time which is April 15th its their 1 year birthday i guess time flies when you are happy anyway jase and i set our wedding date and we opted for a summer wedding so September the 30th it is...its February now so i have 7 months left to plan my dream wedding , well jase and i are happy

infact more than happy but yho it wasn't all
rosy***

***SIX MONTHS AGO i found an unsealed and empty condom wrapper, a sealed one and a woman's thong in the pocket of jase's jacket and things just went down hill for us i spend weeks without speaking to him and not letting him touch me.... to say i was hurt was an understatement shem i couldn't understand what i lacked for him to cheat again but he kept on saying he doesn't know anything about those things and he used the " you dont trust me " card on me and also said some hurtful things to me (well i guess kray took over which was another promise broken by him) but i told myself that i won't let the devil win instead of asking for divorce or separation or even breaking down i decided to go to the gym and loose all the baby fat cause i thought maybe he cheated because of my weight..... and plus you

know what they say (when you look good you also feel good)***

***well i did that after 3 days of complete self pity and crying but after talking to ma i decided to take control and teach jase a lesson he'll never forget and i can confidently say even today he still haven't forgotten that lesson.....well i decided to join a gym and i opted for private lessons and well the gym instructor was some hot white guy named carl and lord it drove jase mad when he found out i was getting private lessons at the gym worse part with a hot guy, he threatened me saying if i value that guy's life i'll cancel the private lessons but i warned him that if anything happens to carl or he even have the "talk " with him without my knowledge i'll divorce him....yho things became intense in the house i mean he even stopped going to work and worked from home and he would also show up

unannounced at the gym when i was having my private lessons....well we weren't on speaking terms and i could see it was killing him slowly just the fact that another man's hands were touching me, whether it was innocent or not was enough to kill him slowly and the final nail to the coffin was the fact that even if carl disappeared he knew i would suspect him and i would leave him....yho he even aged a bit and i could see he was depressed.... he even left his beard uncut and not trimmed Jesus he looked bad and as for me i wasn't cheating or anything i even told the guy my main reason for trying to loose weight and he assured me that after he's done with me jase won't even attempt to look at another woman but my main aim was to make him aware that i still got it and that other men out there can still see me***

*** after a month of some intense training i could see it was paying off shem....one fateful

morning jase got home from wherever he went to and told me to come with him ,God he had changed he was just an angry walking zombie nje.... the only thing that i think kept him going were the twins even the brothers tried to talk to me but i was having none of it even noma and ntombi tried talking "some sense" to me but i told them not to get involved....i was hurt by what i found in his jacket so i used his obsession and possessiveness and the love he has for me to my advantage to make sure that he never looks at another woman again***

***anyway he forced me to go with him and we got to some warehouse and he pulled me to some room and there was that white woman i once saw leaving his office when i was still pregnant(the one that expected a goodbye hug from jase but instead he shook her hand....yep that one) she was tied on both her hands which were held up with a chain that was coming from

the roof(the was no ceiling) while she was standing on her toes with blood all over her body....Gosh I'll never forget that day the scene was horrifying then jase poured water on the woman and she woke up, i could see she was weak and in pain but jase didn't care his face was just blank nje yho i was shit scared bathong....then he said***

Jase: tell my wife what you did

***the woman kept on apologising and saying shes learned her lesson that he should forgive her.....then he would slap her with the back of his hand and shout that the woman should tell me what she did... then he pulled his gun out and shot her on her leg and she screamed while i also did then she said she will tell me.... then she told me shes the one that planted the condoms and a thong in his jacket...she said

shes been crushing on him for over a year and he was just not interested so her friend gave her an idea to cause friction between us and that while hes stressed she would make her move and he would eventually take comfort with her or in heryho i was just shocked and angry at that bitch but then jase said to her that no one in this planet would ever come between him and his wife and lives to tell the tale then he spat on her face and Jesus of Nazareth he shot her on the head and i just screamed covering my ears then the next thing it was lights out for me ***

***well i woke up in our bedroom and found jase looking at me intensely...he asked me if im fine and i nodded the next thing he started taking off his clothes and he got to me and started taking off mine...the next thing he got between my legs and he slammed into me hard and gosh i was dry....i screamed out in pain but

he seemed unfazed shem then he started fucking me hard and rough after four intense non stop rounds he pulled out then he took the towel and cleaned me and then he made me look at him....gosh he had a scary look on his face and he said***

Jase: if you ever let another man touch what's mine being your whole body from head to toe,i don't care if its innocent or not I'll fucken do worse that what i just did then ill fucken kill you then I'll kill myself too do i make myself clear

***i nodded quickly cause i could see he meant every word then he kissed my lips,nose and forehead then he wiped my tears and told me to rest then he walked to the bathroom....well the following day my lower body was paralyzed i couldn't walk and the rest of the week i was limping well he also taught me a valuable

lesson despite me teaching him a lesson which worked cause now hes too clingy and his possessiveness and obsession shot to another level i mean he even works from home now, gosh he behaves like someone who's really scared to loose me cause even if i go out or to the mall he would drop me off and also come pick me up so yah....now we are sitting in the lounge watching tv and the twins are playing on the floor with their toys***

Jase: how are the preparations going Mrs me
he's talking about the twins birthday party....they are turning 1 in two months time

Me: well ntombi and noma hijacked them they just keep me updated or ask for my input when they are stranded

Jase: mxm those two are driven mad by their crazy hormones

Me: don't let them hear you say that khumalo

Jase: yeses noma's hormones are driving muzi insane especially when she wakes him up in the middle of the night to cook for her what shes craving

***we both laughed ***

Me: atleast my hormones weren't that bad when i was pregnant

Jay: my heart don't even go there please yours were violent and damn you cried because of anything and everything

Me: mxm

Jase: but i loved you though and i still am madly in love with you and your sexy self

***i blushed then he pulled my face close to his and we kissed

yep they are both pregnant noma is 7 months pregnant while ntombi is 4 months pregnant

Me: we've been through a lot khumalo i just cant believe we made it out of all those crazy....crazy things alive

Jase: we love each other deeply and you are my chosen one my heart of course we had to make it out alive

Me: thank you for not giving up on me jase

Jase: and thank you for not giving up on me too my heart

Me: i love you jase

Jase: i love you too my heart

then we kissed again and we were disturbed by nqobile crying while raising her hands to jase and we laughed then he picked her up while i picked mnqobi up too.....then jase whispered in my ear

Jase: fuck im horny as hell and craving you right now

i looked at him then we both laughed

Me: that ain't gonna happen look at how your princess is clinging on to you

Jase: damn its like she can tell daddy wanna do naughty things to mommy

***then we laughed again as for my prince he was concentrating on his toy....as for that white woman jase killed we never spoke about it and i was scared to even start talking about it i mean jase is part of the mafia and then there's kray and the beast so its high time i accepted jase for he is so i can have a peace of mind ***

.

.

.

#hit-like-please and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 18:14] Nor: ☆☆FINALE PART 1 ☆☆

INSERT.....84

.

.

.

KEDI'S POV

***today is Thursday the 28th of September two days before my wedding and i must say im nervous and anxious as hell...well we opted for a braai instead of a bachelor's party and a bachelorette party anyway right now we are sitting at jays house having a mini braai just the 8 of us, im saying 8 because jay invited nomhlethat nurse jase said jay is interested in and i must say shes a dark beauty... shem shes gorgeous yho the way her perfect dark skin is so smooth and glowing she could be a model and shes sweet and kind and yho jay is so

clingy to her..... ohh my god I've never seen jay like this people, its a pity shes engaged but the way things are i doubt jay will let her get married to anyone but himself..... concerning the wedding preparations i hired a wedding planner and everything is ready.....ohh and Ntombi is my maid of honor and noma and princess are my bridesmaids and Jay is jase's best man while muzi and nhlaka are the groomsmen.....ohh and muzi and nhlaka paid lobola for noma and ntombi so everything is good and im happy anyway noma gave birth five months ago to a beautiful baby girl and they named her gugulethu and ntombi gave birth three weeks ago to a baby boy and they named him lwandle..... gosh these four men are tamed and made soft by these four spoiled brats im telling you they spoil them rotten including the handsome new edition in the family lwandlenow we are in the kitchen we just finished making salads for the braai ***

Ntombi: so nomhle are you and jay dating or you're still getting to know each other

Nomhle: nope we're just friends...ummmm im engage to someone else

***noma cleared her throat ***

Noma:for real

nomhle: yeah

Ntombi: mmmmmh

Noma: ok ummm nomhle please help me with taking this bowls outside im sure those tigers outside are hungry

we laughed and they took the bowls outside

Ntombi: mxm engaged my ass....jay is gonna wife her fine ass soon

i just laughed mxm ntombi is crazy shem

Ntombi:did you see how jay is around her he's like a love sick puppy

we laughed and took the plates outside

***NARRATED ***

WEDDING DAY

***kedi was waiting for her make up artist in the bedroom she was using at the lodge they were going to get married at....she was sitting on the edge of the bed thinking about her life...where shes coming from to where she is and where she's going....she wished her parents where still alive to see her today and she also wished for her father to walk her down the isle...she blinked away the tears cause today was all about tears of joy and not of hurt then there was a knock on the door and she shouted for the person to enter and baba did....yho she stood up quickly then she looked down,baba sat on

the edge of the bed and told her to sit down too and she next to him still looking down***

Baba: you look beautiful just like your mother

kedi raised her head and looked at baba asking herself how baba knew she looked like her mother

Kedi: how....how do you know that i look like my mother baba

he sighed

Baba: i knew your father infact let me put it this way he was my close friend...we did everything together

kedi's eyes pooped out she couldn't believe that

Baba: its a long story but we lost contact years ago

***he sighed again ***

Baba: i didn't know he passed away along with

your mother until that day Nkosi introduced you to me....im sorry you went through what you went through...im sorry i wasn't there to protect you

a tear escaped her eye and she quickly wiped it off thinking about what she went through and her parents death then baba wrapped an arm around her pulling her towards him and kedi rested her head on his shoulder and a sob escaped her lips.... today she missed her parents like never before and it hurt her like crazy that they weren't here to see her in a white dress getting married....after some time she calmed down

Kedi: i wish they were here today baba i mean i never thought I'll one day I'll get married or even be happy and now that it's happening i wish they were here to witness it

she sniffed

Baba: its ok ntombiyam just know they are here

with you in spirit and they are watching and rejoicing and dancing and you might not see him but just know that your father will be walking right besides you down the aisle with a huge smile on his face and your mother will be sitting on the front row with a tissue on her hand busy wiping those tears of joy that will be running down her cheeks...she was a cry baby that one

kedi laughed

Me: i guess i inherited that from her

***he smiled then his face went serious and kedi looked down immediately then baba stood up and went to stand in front of the window and he looked outside with his hands in his pockets

Baba: nkosi told me what he did in front of you to that woman

kedi took a deep breath

Baba: im sorry you had to witness that.... he called me panicking saying he's scared you'll wake up the following day and decide to leave him,what made you overlook that whole thing

***she sighed ***

Kedi: is it wrong or heartless of me baba to really not be bothered about what i witnessed

Baba: no

Kedi: that woman almost destroyed my marriage by planting those things....i doubted my husband and made him go through hell on earth for nothing....i even belittled myself and even thought of divorce

***she took a deep breath ***

Kedi: yes i was scared infact terrified but what i witnessed doesn't make me see jase differently or love him any less....it actually made me realize that, that man would do anything for me and us including kill..... well I'm not happy with

it but i just have accept him the way he is since he accepted me with my damaged self

Baba: first of all don't ever in this life or the next call yourself damaged do i make myself clear and secondly continue to stand by your husband and you'll never lack happiness and love in your life.... that crazy boy will bend over backwards for you

then he turned and looked at kedi

Baba: remember you,ntombi and noma are not just daughters in law but daughters as well always have each others backs and never let anyone tear this family apart or even come between the brothers ok

Kedi: yebo baba

Baba: goodnow let me leave you to get ready

then he walked to the door and then he stopped and turned to look at kedi

Baba: you know all this is all a show off right.....net for control to the men and women out there that you two are taken and that they should back off

kedi looked down smiling

Baba: you are already our daughter in law i mean even the khumalo ancestors know you and have accepted you

***he shook his head side smiling ***

Baba: you two should have just donated all that money you spend to prepare all this to my beautiful wife's NGO instead of feeding all this useless and ungrateful people roaming around in this lodge pretending to look important were else they are not nc nc nc ai young people of today

***then he walked out smiling closing the door on his way out then kedi busted out in laughter....she didn't know baba had this side of him which was hilarious then the door opened

and her bridesmaids and her make up artist
walked in ***

***jase stood there waiting for his heart to walk
down the isle straight to him....him and his
brothers looked extremely lit in their custom
made tuxedos and the bridesmaids looked hot
as hell including princess....then ringo ringo
madlingozi's kum na kum started playing and
Brandon(Jase's half brother) started walking in
with the twins they were throwing flowers to
the floor....nooo infact brandon was throwing
the flowers to the floor where else the twins we
just throwing them everywhere.....it took them
forever to reach to where jase was and as soon
as nqobile and mnqobi saw their dad they
raised their hands to him and he picked them
up and nqobile rested her head on her father's
shoulder while mnqobi started playing with her
father's bow tie and Brandon went to sit next to
Ma.... then jay took the twins from jase and

went to give them to pops and baba who were standing at the back while everyone was sitted and jase fixed himself then.... just then ringo madlingozi's sondela started playing....as soon as that guitar started playing everyone stood up and turned to look to the entrance and jase's heart stood by the entrance looking elegantly beautiful in her lace mermaid dress....jase got emotional and his brothers started comforting him and tapping his shoulders telling him he's the man as for kedi she blinked away her tears and started walking towards jase with ringo in the background playing with his lyrics busy saying:

Eyami ndendwa eyami

Ohhh ndiyayithanda lentombi

●●chorus●●

Sondela sthandwa sondela
Na'uthando lwam lugqine lonke
Thathuthando lwam umqimb'uqalanye
Ehh yami ndendwa ehh yami
Ohh ndiyayithanda lentombi
Amehlo ayo ayandibulala
Ohh ndiyayithanda lentombi
Sondela.....

***she walked down the isle with everyone commenting about how beautiful she looked....she finally arrived to where jase was and she gave her bouquet to ntombi and her and jase held hands while looking into each others eyes then jase whispered to kedi that she looks beautiful and hot then he bit his lower lip making kedi blush,then she also said he

looks handsome.... then the priest spoke***

Priest : who's giving away the bride to the groom

then a deep voice spoke at the back making everyone to turn their heads and looked towards the doorit was baba

Baba: i do

Priest : ok then we may begin.....dearly beloved we are gathered here today to unite these two in holy matrimony,their decision to marry has not been entered into lightly and today they publicly declare their private devotion to each other. The essence of this commitment is the acceptance of each other in entirety as lovers,companions and friends.....a good and balanced relationship is one in which neither person is overpowered nor absorbed by the other,one in which both give their love freely and without jealousy..... marriage ideally is a sharing of responsibilities,hopes and dreams

remember it takes a special effort to grow together, survive hard times and be loving and unselfish

***he continued ***

- do you both pledge to share your lives openly with one another and to speak the truth in love?
- do you promise to honor and tenderly care for one another, cherish and encourage each other and stand together through sorrows and joys, hardships and triumphs for all the days of your lives?***

Jase&kedi: we do

***the priest then asked for the rings and jay

gave him***

Priest: may these rings be blessed as a symbol of your union,as often as either of you look upon these rings ,may you not only be reminded of this moment but also of the vows you have made and the strength of your commitment to each other...i believe the bride and groom would like to say their own vows

***kedi and jase nodded and the priest gave the Mic to kedi.....she smiled looking at jase then she cleared her throat and then she sang Amanda black's kahle just two lines in the chorus ***

Kedi: ●undibona ndityebile undiphethe kahl'udali

●undibona ndincumile undiphethe kahle...

people started to ululate and others whistled and jase laughed while blushing

☆☆ TO BE CONTINUED ☆☆

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone

[08/06, 18:14] Nor: ***CONTINUATION***

☆☆ FINALE PART 2 ☆☆☆

.

.

.

NARRATED

Kedi: aow sweet lam lomkhuhlane

***everyone laughed again so did jase then she became serious ***

Kedi: my king,my hero,my superman....i love you khumalo and I'll forever be grateful to God for seeing me worthy to be with someone like you....you literally brought me back to life you gave me hope and you introduced me to true love....my life is complete with you in it now i know that everything i went through since childhood was a journey i had to walk to reach here and as painful as it was,i wouldn't mind going through it again so that i can end up her with you....

***she got emotional and tears started coming out and jase squeezed her hands also getting emotional ***

Kedi: thank you for not giving up on me jase...thank you for loving me unconditionally.....thank you for always protecting me and for putting me first

always....thank you for loving me as broken as i was and for also seeing me worthy to carry your seeds....im glad that i'll continue to walk this journey with you by my side cause i know you'll never ever let me fall...you are my pillar of strength khumalo....my ying yang...my ride or die and my happily ever and after

then she giggled

Kedi: you know i need to throw your late mom and Ma a baby shower

everyone laughed

Kedi: with Ma is for giving birth to your dad and for your late mom is for giving birth to you cause Jesus Christ of Nazarethim in love people...i love this man with every being in me...with every bone in my body and from the depth of my soul and i ain't ashamed to say it in front of everyone infact to the whole world

Ntombi: amen to that sistaz

Kedi: so khumalo i take you as my husband,bestfriend,brother,sister,father,mother so on and so forth to love and to hold tight...in sickness and in health in good times and bad times...for richer and for poorer and even death will never ever do us apart...i love you...

then she gave the Mic to the priest and jase stepped forward and wiped her falling tears and kedi wiped his it was just an amazing scene to watch...people kept on saying ncoooh...then jase took the Mic from the priest and then he cleared his throat and looked at kedi

Jase: my heart

***noma and ntombi shouted "YES HIS HEART" and people laughed ***

Jase: i love you kedi...i live for you...i breath for you infact you are my oxygen...we've been through hell and back together and yet we're still here standing strong as ever....you made me a man amongst men and you blessed me

with the most two precious and rare jewels being my wonderful twins mnqobi and nqobile....you complete me in ways that i cant even explain in words....you've brought complete joy and happiness in my life and I'll forever be grateful to you for seeing me worthy to take care of your heart....you are perfect for me my queen every time i look into your beautiful eyes i see the rest of my future...i love you from the depth of my soul kedi

then he kept quiet cause he was now getting emotional and he looked at kedi who was crying

Jase: you made me pray for the first time in many years since my mother died... you made me get down on my knees and talk to God my heart something i never saw myself doing but i did it because of you

***his voice was breaking and there were sniffs everywhere everyone was touched ***

Jase: you've made me a father....a better brother,a better son and a better grandson....ngiyak'thanda makhumalo always know that you own my heart and thank you for never giving up on me and for accepting me the way i am with all my flawsand for seeing it worthy to forgive me every time i messed up even though i got a hefty punishment before you forgave me but thank you my heart....we gonna grow old together my heart cause im never letting you go and I'll never let anyone or anything come between us even death will not separate us cause i own your heart as much as you own mine....

he smiled widely looking at his heart

Jase: you were made for me kedi...when God created you he thought of me and im grateful for that and i also think i should throw your late mother a baby shower too

***everyone laughed ***

Jase: this is it my heart our happily ever and after....from here onwards its happiness to the fullest so my heart i take you as my wife, bestfriend, lover, companion, pillar of strength,my heart,my queen entlek as my yonkinto to love and to hold very tight...in sickness and in health...in good times and bad times....for better or for worse....for richer and for poorer and i also say death will never do us part... you are my ride or die my heart... i love you

then he gave the Mic to the priest and wiped his tears and smiled looking at kedi

Priest: true love people....this is true love.... now is there anyone in here who is a hater of true love and total happiness who think these two shouldn't get married... speak now or forever hold your piece

no one moved

Priest: good now there's nothing else to say

than to say to you mfowethu to kiss your bride
cause i can tell you've been waiting for this part
since you woke up in the morning if you even
slept

***everyone laughed including jase and kedi
then jase took the Mic from the priest***

Jase: well i suggest all the kids in here to close
their eyes

***everyone one laughed again and jase got
closer to kedi and he cupped her face with one
of hand and the other one held her waist tight
pulling her closer to his body while he was
bitting his lower lip then he smashed his lips on
hers and immediately deepened the
kiss....people cheered while clapping their
hands...the kiss went on and on with them
losing themselves in that kiss then jase's hand
left kedi's waist and he grabbed her ass tight
and pulled her closer and they both moaned***

Ma: HAI NKOSI LEAVE SOME FOR THE

HONEYMOON HAOW

***everyone laughed and both kedi and jase pulled out of the kiss catching their breath...then jase perked her lips,nose and forehead then he stared into her eyes deeply

Jase: i love Kedibone Tarmasha Khumalo

Kedi: i love you too Jason Nkosi Khumalo

*** they went to take pictures after they were done kedi changed to her second dress and they were in the reception hall they just finished eating and everyone just finished giving their speeches and damn pops and the guys roasted jase leaving everyone in stitches then all of a sudden baba stood up and took the Mic and the whole hall went quiet it was as if the hall was empty the way it was quiet....he stood there with the Mic in one hand and the other hand was holding mnqobi while ngobile was with

pops then he spoke with his deep scary voice

Baba: nkosi

Jase: baba

Baba: im proud of you son ...you and your brothers have made me a proud old man but remember you break her heart and I'll break your bones piece by piece and that goes for you too muzikayise and nhlakanipho break nomathemba and ntombikayise's hearts and I'll break your bones im sure your pops will also help methandeka

Kedi: baba

Baba: you remember that talk we had earlier on

Kedi: yebo baba

Baba: good now live on those words and you'll never go wrong ok

kedi nodded and jase frowned looking at kedi wondering what talk she had with baba

Baba: nkosi remember...make her happy and love her like everyday is your last day on earth and you'll live like a king for the rest of your life

***then he put the Mic down and walked to where Ma was sitting and he kissed her forehead and walked out still carrying mnqobi in his arm ***

Jase: my heart what did baba speak to you about

Kedi: his friendship with my dad and he also made me laugh can you believe he said we should have donated the money we spent on this wedding to Ma's NGOs instead of feeding all this useless and ungrateful people roaming around here pretending to be important while they are not cause im already a khumalo

jase laughed his ass off then he pulled kedi close to him and kissed her lips

Jase: and his friendship with my father in law

Kedi: i was shocked but im glad they were friends

Jase: i love you my heart

Kedi: i love you more my king

then they kissed again

.

.

.

☆☆☆ THE END ☆☆☆

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#thechozenone